

# **Divine Principle**

ALSO BY JON QUINN

*Practical Plan for World Peace:  
10 Core Values for Success*

*12 Before 40:*

*The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement*

VIDEOS

[https://rumble.com/user/jonquinnjonquinn?e9s=src\\_v1\\_cbl](https://rumble.com/user/jonquinnjonquinn?e9s=src_v1_cbl)

You can read the entire text of these books at my website:

[www.DivinePrinciple.com](http://www.DivinePrinciple.com)

**Divine Principle:  
The Basic Theology of  
Sun Myung Moon**

---

**by Jon Quinn**

Divine Principle: The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon

Copyright ©2025 by Jon Quinn

ISBN-13 979-8-9928923-0-7

Published by: Principled Publications

Printed September 2, 2025

[www.DivinePrinciple.com](http://www.DivinePrinciple.com)  
See website for e-mail address

You can read the entire text of this book at my website:

[www.DivinePrinciple.com](http://www.DivinePrinciple.com)

## **ASSOCIATION to FAMILY FEDERATION to SANCTUARY**

In 1954 Sun Myung Moon founded an association named Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity that others called Unification Church. In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father Moon reveals, “‘Unification Church’ became our commonly known name later, but it was given by others.” Forty years later, in 1994, he renamed his movement the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification.

At the end of his life Rev. Moon crowned his youngest son, Hyung Jin Sean Moon (Pastor Sean) as his heir and successor. After Father Moon passed Hyung Jin Nim states: Family Federation became “so pathetically antithesis to everything Father stood for. He stood against feminism. They stand for feminism” (King’s Report 11-1-19). Hyung Jin Nim’s mother Hak Ja Han usurped her son’s position. She and her followers at Family Federation are heretics and destroyers.

Pastor Sean founded a true Unification Movement called World Peace and Unification Sanctuary or Sanctuary for short. It is the orthodox church,

Pastor Sean has made it clear that all words, pictures, and videos of his Father are free to everyone. They are all in the public domain.

For further study watch the many hours of video of the Original Substance of the Divine Principle (OSDP) by Rev. Yu and Tim Elder. Go to [www.SanctuaryUSA.org](http://www.SanctuaryUSA.org). Click on Education and then click on Educational Resources.

## **Vision of Sun Myung Moon**

We need a new ideology. ... This new ideology will also be capable of unifying all the existing religions and ideologies of the world. Therefore, it has come in the form of a new religious or spiritual movement. The Unification movement has been created by God to fulfill that mission. This spiritual movement must first succeed here in America in order to spread throughout the world. The new ideology which the Unification Movement brings is Godism, an absolutely God-centered ideology. It has the power to awaken America, and it has the power to raise the model of the ideal nation of God upon this land.

With that done, the rest of the world will follow America's example and will build the Kingdom of God upon their respective lands. Then we shall all truly become brothers and sisters under one Father, God. This will be a world of love, a world of happiness. Our planet will be one home, and mankind will be one family. God's will, His long-cherished desire from the beginning of time will finally be fulfilled. This will be the eternal, ideal world of God. Indeed, it will be the Kingdom of God on earth. We will build it with our hands.

This is our supreme mission. It is truly our God-given, sacred mission. God is crying out to the world, and we are His instruments. The world must respond to His call. Listen to God's commandment. Initiate a courageous march towards the Kingdom of God on earth. Whatever the difficulty, let it not stop us. Our march is God's, and it will go on to the end. — "God's Hope for America", June 1, 1976, Yankee Stadium, New York

# CONTENTS

Introduction	1
Chapter 1 — Principle of Creation	2
Chapter 2 — The Fall of Man	73
Chapter 3 — History of Restoration	114
Chapter 4 — Jesus of Nazareth	178
Chapter 5 — Christian History	309

## APPENDICES

1. The New Future of Christianity –  
September 18, 1974 p. 478
2. The Future of Christianity — October  
28, 1973 p. 520
3. How Mother Eliminated God's  
Lineage and the Three Generation  
Kingships by Hyun Shil Kang p. 554
4. The Constitution of the United States  
of Cheon Il Guk p. 560

**You can read the entire text of this book at my website:**

**[www.DivinePrinciple.com](http://www.DivinePrinciple.com)**



# Introduction

The *Divine Principle* is the fundamental theology of Sun Myung Moon. When he was 15 years old he was praying on a hillside in Korea on Easter morning, April 17, 1935, Jesus Christ appeared and told him he had been chosen to fulfill Jesus' mission of teaching the truth from God that would unite the world into one peaceful and happy family.

For years he received revelations from God and saints in the spirit world. In 1945 when he was 25 years old he began his public ministry and started teaching. He was persecuted and finally sent to a communist concentration camp in North Korea. For three years he was tortured. When the Korean War broke out in 1950, he was freed and went to South Korea. In a hut made of mud, straw and discarded cardboard boxes, he began to preach.

Sun Myung Moon says, "The words I speak do not come from theological research or from any books. I speak rather of fundamental principles that I have learned through experience, as I overcame all manner of difficulties and communed directly with God and spirit world." He visited America for the first time in 1965. In a question and answer session he said, "I have talked with many, many masters, including Jesus, on questions of life and the universe and creation and God's dispensation, and many other things. They have subjected themselves to me in terms of wisdom. After winning the victory, they surrendered." (*40 Years in America*).

Sun Myung Moon is often referred to as Reverend Moon but the best title to describe him is Father Moon or Father for short.

Father Moon says, "The primary function of the Unification Church members is ultimately to educate people." (7-12-1984) Many people have been inspired by this theology, a vision of a world utopia and teachings that answer the fundamental questions of life.

# *Chapter 1*

## *The Principle of Creation*

“Our minds are possessed by three mysteries, where we came from, where we are going, and since we are not alone, but members of a countless family, how we should live with one another.” (Edwin Muir *An Autobiography*) Many people wonder where we came from, why we’re here and where we’re going. The past, present and future are a mystery that religion and philosophy have tried to explain.

### **EXISTENCE OF GOD**

The noted writer Will Durant has written, “... the oldest problem in philosophy is the existence and nature of God.” Is it logical and rational to believe in the existence of God? Is it scientific to believe that the universe has a creator? Many people have asked, “Where did God come from?” “Who created God?” One answer is that God created time, space and matter. God is greater than time.

Sun Myung Moon gives these thoughts about the existence of God:

Look at the eye. Before it was formed, the eye must have been designed by someone who realized that it would be functioning in an atmosphere of dust and wind. It was designed in such a way to adjust to such conditions. Do you think the eye knew ahead of time what conditions it would face? If it did not, there must be Someone who knew, and who created the eye with the means to protect it. There must be some Intelligence, operating behind the scenes, which had cosmic knowledge. It knew that the earth’s heat would cause moisture to evaporate from the surface of the eye, so it made tear ducts to lubricate it. There is Reason within the design of nature. Look at the

eyelids, designed to prevent the serious problem of dust entering the eye. Look at the eyebrows; they were designed to block sweat from running down into the eye. Did the eyebrows appear knowing that they would have this function? Or did the eyes put on eyebrows because they knew this of themselves?

No. There is an Intelligence that knew in advance the environment in which the eye would be functioning and designed the eye precisely for it. (February 1, 1982)

### **BLUEPRINT EXISTED**

You have two eyes that work together to achieve one focus. There is only one focus; you don't see two images. Why does the eye focus automatically? Before each eye ever existed, a concept or a design blueprint existed. The ability to focus didn't come to exist after the eye was created; it was part of the original plan for the eye. The eye was designed in a certain way to fulfill its purpose of proper focus. (March 17, 1957)

We have eyes, eyebrows, nose and mouth. Before that eye came into being do you think the eye itself knew that there was an object for it to see? Do you think that eye knew that there would be air, sunlight, and dust? The eye itself did not know these things. Why did the eye come into being? Eyes came into being in order to see things. Even though the material eye is unaware, the creator behind that eye knows. Is that true? Did the somebody who knew come first or did the eye, not knowing, come first? Somebody knew that there would be dust and air and so the eyelashes were created, like a fine screen. Somebody knew that dust would exist. Also the eye is constantly bathed in liquid. Therefore, somebody knew that there would be heat that would dry the eye and that it would need constant bathing in its own liquid. The eye did not know this.

Now we come to the solution of this age-old question: did the chicken come before the egg or vice versa? Which came first, the entity or the concept? Concept came first. We also have eyebrows to prevent sweat rolling into our eyes. Therefore it seems reasonable to conclude that somebody knew that there might be sweat on the face. Don't take everything for granted; every day when we wash our face let us give thanks to God. All the wondrous design of the human body God created. Remind yourself daily that God made everything with us and our comfort in mind. (12-4-94)

There is no question but that love is the origin and the initiator. We can even answer the age-old question of which came first, the chicken or the egg? The egg came first! (2-1-83)

When such mystery and beauty exists, how can atheists accept the idea that mankind came into being by accident or chance? Mystery exists not only in human life but everywhere. Sophisticated, intricate beauty can be found in the world of birds, fish, and throughout the creation. When you look at a newborn baby it is almost spontaneous to think, "How perfect is this little baby! God did not forget anything—hair, eyes, ears, ten little fingers. How wonderful!" (6-20-82)

My teaching has always been that there is an origin of the entire universe, and that is God. God exists and God causes everything to exist; from Him, everything started to happen. There is a certain orderliness built in to our existence; all things exist in an orderly and purposeful fashion.

If the universe were nothing more than matter in random motion, then how could we expect any real order within this universe? It is impossible.

Everything revolves. Atoms and even elementary particles rotate. Electrons revolve around protons. The solar system revolves around the sun, and the Milky Way rotates around its galactic core. They are revolving

around something that remains still. This universe, with all its varied phenomena, is a huge complex of myriads of these relationships. Therefore, we can think that this universe also revolves around a single core: God, the origin of all creation. (February 14, 1988)

### **GOD IS THE MASTER SCIENTIST**

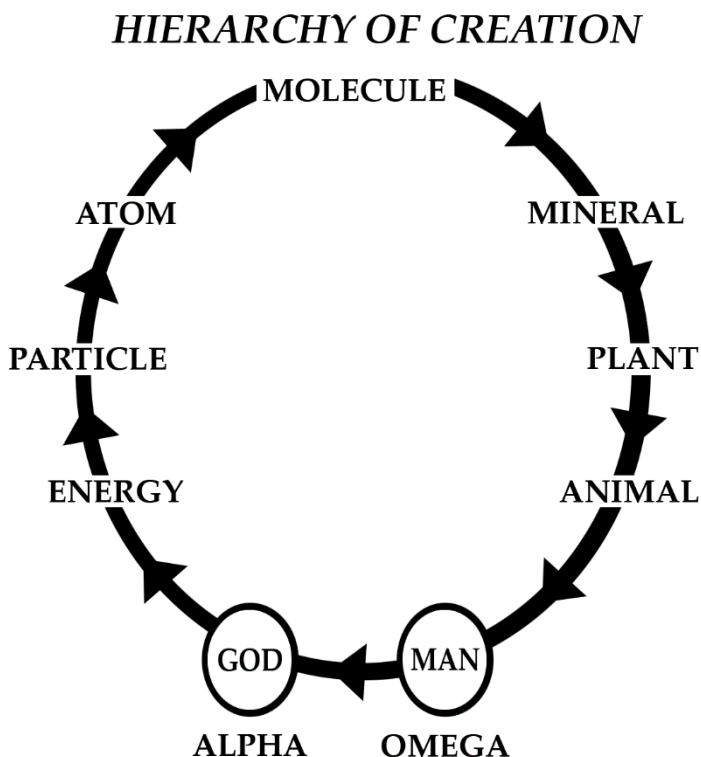
What if God had placed our eyes on our feet, or our mouth on the back of the head? God gave much thought to the human body's design. The mouth is where it is on the face so the two eyes can watch what we put into it and the hands can best function to feed it. Suppose your eyes were in the back of your head; your mouth might bite your finger and they wouldn't see it happening, and you would lose a finger! You have to admit that God is truly the master scientist! Everyone has little valleys on either side of their mouths, so that when they perspire the sweat doesn't run into their mouths. If the mouth were set deeper into the face then you would constantly have to blow away your sweat, but you don't have to because God prepared better contours for your face. What a mess it would be on a rainy day if your nose were set upside down! Think about it: everything about you is well made, from the hair inside your nose to your teeth. Everything has its role in the order of the body... Is God's thinking random or confused? No, the universe follows His order and logic. (May 6, 1979)

### **CREATION, NOT EVOLUTION**

Countless people have asked and speculated on how God created the world. Many people believe in the theory of evolution that says that life began as two simple cells uniting and forming more cells. Somehow, random mutations took place. These mutant cells united and formed more complex organisms that in turn had mutants that united, and they formed even more complex organisms. In this way the world evolved from simple bacteria and algae or amoebas to plants and animals and finally man from ape-like creatures.

## **HIERARCHY OF CREATION**

This is not how the earth was created. God created the world in an evolutionary manner by creating in a normal progression of simple to complex. From God's energy, particles were formed. From particles, atoms were formed which in turn formed molecules. Molecules form minerals, and minerals serve plants, plants serve animals, and animals serve mankind.



“In every multiplication, love is involved. Love moves toward one ultimate destination: the love of God. Without this loving action, no

creature can be brought upon the earth. The purpose of creation is for the lower creatures to come closer to God through the higher creatures. Therefore, when man eats an animal, that animal becomes part of his body. Since man is the closest creature to God, that animal would rejoice to be eaten, because he is getting closer to the love of God. This is absolutely the law of love. Similarly, we should be willing to sacrifice ourselves to be close to God's love which is the highest level we can attain." (3-27-90)

### **DIVINE GUIDANCE**

We have to include divine guidance to the theory of evolution. God created the world by plan, not blind chance. God created each organism specially. He created the first amoeba, the first fish, the first deer, the first ape, and the first man.

### **DARWIN'S *THE ORIGIN OF SPECIES***

Charles Darwin wrote one of the most influential books in history in the 19th century called *The Origin of Species*. It was a best seller that shook the foundation of many people's faith. Unfortunately, most scientists today believe Darwin was basically correct and reject the idea that the universe was planned by a creator and that He has guided the history of the world. One encyclopedia says, "Darwin's theory states that all species evolved from a few common ancestors by means of natural selection." Natural selection is also called "survival of the fittest." It also says, "human beings, chimpanzees, and gorillas evolved from a common ancestor that lived between 4 million and 10 million years ago." This is false. Man is not descended from an ape-like creature. But Evolutionists are correct in that there have been changes within species. Examples of this are the many varieties of dogs and flowers. Human beings have different skin colors. Father Moon explains, "There is no way a lower life form, such as an amoeba, by random action or whim, can become a more advanced animal. The division of species is an absolute boundary that God created and has protected with clarity. Therefore, the theory of evolution is really a satanic theory." (3-27-90)

Those who oppose Darwin's theory are called Creationists who correctly "believe that each species has remained relatively

unchanged since the Creation and that no species has evolved from another.”

### **TRIAL OF THE CENTURY — SCOPES MONKEY TRIAL**

In 1925 the Tennessee State legislature enacted a law that barred any public school teacher from teaching the theory of evolution. A high school teacher, John Scopes, was arrested for teaching evolution in a biology class. The most famous trial lawyer in America, Clarence Darrow, defended him. He wrote essays with such titles as “The Myth of the Soul” and “Why I am an Agnostic.” On the other side was William Jennings Bryan, a legend in American politics and became “the most fervent voice in the nation against Darwin’s theories. He saw ‘apeism,’ as he termed evolution theory, as an unparalleled threat to the sanctity of the human condition.”

During that intensely hot summer in the small town of Dayton, one of the greatest trials in history took place. Many books have been written about this debate between a Darwinian evolutionist and a fundamental Christian Creationist. A famous play, *Inherit the Wind*, is often performed and has been made into several movies. Bryan is portrayed as a pathetic and stupid figure because he takes the *Bible* literally, but the truth is that he is more on the side of truth because he sees the universe as being created by design with man being specially made. During the trial he correctly said, “There is no more reason to believe that man descended from some inferior animal than there is to believe that a stately mansion has descended from a small cottage.”

### **MISSING LINKS**

If the theory of evolution were scientific fact then there would have to be “intermediates or transitional forms to bridge the enormous gaps which separate existing species” (*Evolution: A Theory In Crisis* p. 58). Scientists have never found even one of these so-called “missing links” and they never will. Our minds did not come from animals. Our minds came from our parent God. God created a first man and a first woman. We call them Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve were not born the son and daughter of an amoeba or ape; they were the son and daughter of God.



## **ADAM & EVE ARE REAL PEOPLE**

We all have parents—a father and a mother. Our parents had parents. If we continue back in time we find the original parents of mankind were two people. “There are hundreds of people here, including 10 or 20 nationalities, but only two kinds of people, really: man and woman. From whence does this polarity derive? It derives from our physical parents, who are two human beings. From how many people did each of your parents come? Two. If we trace our ancestry back, there is no exception: every time it is two. Each one of us comes from two. Therefore the original ancestors must have been two. And where did they come from? From an invisible or visible creator? Our ancestors must have come from that invisible God. Therefore, when we look at the creation, we conclude that God Himself must have original masculinity and original femininity. Then as human beings we inherit these plus and minus characteristics from God.” (12-26-1999)

Adam and Eve are real people. They are not fictitious or fairy tale creations. We are not descended from various sets of ancestors. If we were, then the various races might be of different quality or even be different species with different value. We all have one common origin—a first man and a first woman. God always works from a central point. And by having the same original parents each of us is a brother and sister to each other living as one family on earth.

## **CREATIONISTS**

The *Bible*, if read literally, says Adam and Eve lived only a few thousand years ago. There are two views of when the earth was formed. Evolutionists say it was billions of years ago. Fundamentalist Creationists read the *Bible* literally and believe the earth was formed just a few thousand years ago. These Creationists are wrong. God created man many thousands of years ago. The Creationists are right in that God was involved at every step of creation. Seven thousand years ago mankind had finally progressed to the point of creating the written word. Since then mankind has progressively grown intellectually.

## **6,000 YEARS**

In the seventeenth century a prominent Anglican Archbishop and theologian, James Ussher, compiled a chronology of events in the

*Bible* which became famous because they were widely printed in the margin of the King James Version of the *Bible* for nearly three centuries. Archbishop Ussher placed the creation of the world at 4004 B.C. These 4000 years are comprised of the 2000 years from Adam to Jacob and the 2000 years from Jacob to Jesus. Of course, there have been 2000 years since Jesus till today. So, if we take the *Bible* literally, God created Adam and Eve 6000 years ago. The *Divine Principle* explains that we should read these numbers symbolically, not literally. The first man and woman lived longer than 6000 years ago.

The *Principle* explains that when the *Bible* begins by saying the universe was created in six days, we should read these numbers symbolically. The universe was not created in six literal 24-hour days. Scientists are correct in determining that the earth is millions of years old. There is no conflict between God and science; God is the greatest scientist. The six days in Genesis are symbolic of six gradual periods of time. Second Peter 3:8 says that, "...with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day." God always works through a growth period. The six days represent the six geological periods known as the Azoic, Archeozoic, Proterozoic, Paleozoic, Mesozoic and Cenozoic eras.

In 1997, Jonathan Wells, author of *Icons of Evolution: Science or Myth?*, presented a paper at the Twenty-first International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences, which met in Washington, D.C., in November 1997. He says that many biologists today, "Darwin's modern followers," do not see the hand of God in creation: "In 1967 paleontologist George Gaylord Simpson wrote: 'Man is the result of a purposeless and natural process that did not have him in mind' (*The Meaning of Evolution*, revised edition). In 1970, molecular biologist and Nobel laureate Jacques Monod announced that 'the mechanism of Darwinism is at last securely founded,' and thus 'man has to understand that he is a mere accident' (quoted in H.F. Judson's *The Eighth Day of Creation*, 1979). And in 1986, zoologist Richard Dawkins wrote a best-selling book titled *The Blind Watchmaker: Why the Evidence of Evolution Reveals a Universe without Design.*"

## **DARWIN IS WRONG**

But Dawkins can't show any "evidence" even though he confidently writes in the book's opening chapter, "Darwin made it possible to be an intellectually fulfilled atheist." Jonathan Wells goes on to explain that Darwinism is wrong: "Evidence has been accumulating for decades, however, that Darwin's mechanism fails to account for major features of evolution. The fossil record (especially where it is most complete) lacks the innumerable transitional forms that Darwin's theory predicts; ... According to molecular biologist Michael Denton (*Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, 1986), not 'one single empirical discovery or scientific advance since 1859' has validated Darwin's theory that large-scale evolution is caused by natural selection acting on random variations."

## **THE SOURCE OF OUR HAPPINESS**

Then what about the earth? We say that the earth is our mother. Everything we need comes from it. Then how old is the earth? Scientists say it is about 4.5 billion years old. And how old are Adam and Eve? We are directly connected to God, the universe, the earth and the first man and woman, so we should know their age as well, don't you think? Scientists have worked hard to find out when man came into existence. Of course there is no accurate record, but most scientists assume that a being similar to man existed about 2 million years ago and that modern man first came into existence about 30 thousand years ago. So Adam and Eve are about 30 thousand years old.

Can you imagine how much time passed before modern man was created? It took an incredibly long time. The first man and woman are at most 30 thousand years old and the universe is 12 billion years old. Thirty thousand years is like a fraction of a second compared to 12 billion. After many long years of preparation God finally created mankind. You won't find this in the *Bible*, but this is what science reveals. Now we can truly understand how hard God worked to prepare for man. His constant desire was to create man; to accomplish His desire

He had to work for almost 12 billion years. He had to work so hard and wait such a long time for the coming of the first man and woman. Maybe now you can understand how precious mankind must be to God.

If something only took you an hour to make, you might not value it so much. But if you worked on it your whole life long, investing everything into it, you would want to keep it forever, wouldn't you? Then what about God? He worked for 12 billion years to create the cosmos, the earth and mankind. Would He have done this for a temporary purpose or for eternity? What do you think? For eternity. Yes, God would want His creation to last eternally. He invested so much time and effort that He cannot throw it away easily. Everything was created to exist for eternity. (*Guidance for Heavenly Tradition*, Young Whi Kim)

All of our human traits originate in God. We recognize that there is some human tendency for selfishness. This is natural because at one time God Himself was self-centered. This fact may surprise you, but you must understand that before God created man and the universe, He was all alone, with no one to care for except Himself. However the very instant that God initiated creation, His full concept of life emerged. God now lives for His counterpart, not for Himself.

What is creation? Creation means nothing more than the Creator, God, projecting Himself into a substantial form. He made Himself incarnate symbolically in the universe, and He made Himself incarnate directly in man. When the spirit takes form, this is creation. God invested Himself in the creation. God's investment of energy is the creation.

The Bible in the book of Genesis makes creation sound simple and easy. Genesis gives us the impression that God's creation is accomplished

through the magic of His words. God simply says, “Let there be a world” and presto! — the world comes into being. Then He says, “Let there be man” and poof! — Adam and Eve come into being.

But now it has been revealed that it was not this easy at all. God invested all of Himself in His creation. He did not reserve even one ounce of energy. Creation was His total labor, His total effort of giving all of Himself. When God put His entire heart and soul into the creation of His object, He was investing 100 percent of Himself. Only in this way could He create His second self, the visible God.

Therefore, after His creation, God was no longer existing just for Himself. God began existing for His son and daughter, Adam and Eve. He exists to love, He exists to give. God is the totally unselfish existence. God cannot exist alone. “Love” and “ideal” only take on meaning when partners are in complementary relationship. God initiated creation and made an investment He cannot lose. When God poured all of His love, life, and ideal into His second self, He had to, in a sense, realize a profit. God knew that when He invested all He had — 100 percent — His object would mature and return to Him many, many times over the fruits of love, life, and His ideal. His object, man, is everything to God. The life of the object attracts God. God wants to go and dwell with His object, man.

Let us look at an illustration. Suppose there is a great artist. If he works at random without feeling, he cannot create anything worthwhile. To create the masterpiece of his lifetime, the artist must put all of his heart and soul into his creation. That is the only way for him to come up with a great work of art. If an artist works in this way, his art becomes his life.

God is the greatest of all artists. When He created His masterpiece, man, He poured His heart into the process. He poured His soul into it. He poured all of His wisdom and all of His energy into it. God wished only to exist for Adam and Eve and all mankind. He saved not a single ounce of energy when He created them. Thus, man has become the life of God. (“God’s Hope for Man” 1973)

How old is the planet Earth in this solar system? It has been revolving for billions of years, and yet has it ever been off-course by the merest trifle? It is right on course day after day. (original *Cheon Seong Gyeong* 1994.7.23)

Why should creation stop at the level of man? Why haven’t sudden total changes in species occurred recently? More and more complex animals appeared throughout the ages, but no creature has appeared which is more highly developed than man. Creation seems to have stopped with man. Do you think that happened because man shouted out, “We are perfectly happy, God. You can stop right here”? Since creation developed up to the level of man and then stopped, then we must conclude that there is a universal will and consciousness which preexisted man and which had already planned the entire creation to conclude at the level of man. (5-29-77)

According to Charles Darwin’s theory of evolution and the survival of the fittest, only the strong survive. The weak will be demolished and only strong species will continue. Purely from an external point of view, evolution describes this upward movement of life we were talking about. Thus there is nothing really wrong with the theory of evolution on the external level. But where does the theory of evolution come to a deadlock? Darwin didn’t consider the aspect of love. If his theory were completely true, then man should have continued evolving to a higher being; the process should be continuing. The original mind

should be improving and becoming something greater, but is the original mind changing like that? (1-11-87)

People today talk about evolution as a fact; they believe that everything in existence has evolved. But we must ask whether that process of evolution just happened spontaneously, or whether there was some cause or motivation behind it that allowed it to happen. What about the movement of evolution—was it along a straight line or in a circle? That is the kind of question we should ask. Evolution must be moving according to a certain order or discipline and that discipline could be along a straight line or a circular line. But then, could evolution itself determine whether to move straight or in a circle? How about going up and down? There must be a certain will which determines that.

If some life form moved up from a lower level, there had to be something that caused it to develop into a higher form of life. Who determined that it should move up to a higher level? We might ask this question of Charles Darwin, the author of the evolutionary theory: “How could certain forms of life develop into more sophisticated forms? Why didn’t they go in the other direction toward a more primitive form? Mr. Darwin, did you order that those life forms should go higher? Are you God?”

Small beings always unite and become absorbed by larger beings. Why do they do that? Why should they bring themselves together into harmony? Why should one atom move together and unite with other atoms, forming more complex elements? Why don’t atoms go the other way and become smaller and smaller, getting shattered into pieces? That doesn’t happen. The logical person cannot deny that some concept or purpose pre-existed all these phenomena. (9-7-86)

Man is born and he goes in a certain direction, following what may seem to be a labyrinth; but there

is actually an overall direction to his growth. You are constantly being guided by a certain power to move in a certain way. What do you think—do we continually move toward improving ourselves or worsening ourselves? Why are men and women always trying to move toward something better, something improved? Why do we not seek to move toward bad things, such as accidents and disasters? There is some built in mechanism—we might call it a homing device—which guides us toward betterment and improvement. There must be some guiding will which is outside of us. (March 17, 1957)

### **PLAN IN MIND**

Every result begins from a motive or cause. Every existence begins from a motive and unfolds through a process before it materializes as a result. This is the case with all natural phenomena. Human beings did not make it so; rather, this is a basic principle and heavenly law, God's law. For this reason, there is no such thing as the evolution of new species by random mutation. All things exist in order. The world was created by design, in which every existence, as an object-partner of God, arose through a principled process out of that motive [in the mind of God]. Consider successful people: could they succeed without a firm determination in their minds? Starting with a motive and plan in their mind, they prepare the ground and steadfastly push forward to reach their objective. Since this is necessary for an individual to succeed, would it not also be necessary for God, the Creator of this great universe, to attain His objectives? It is the same principle. (May 29, 1960)

The fundamental problem with the theory of evolution is that there is no love in its worldview: "The theory of evolution doesn't refer to love at all." (8-4-96)

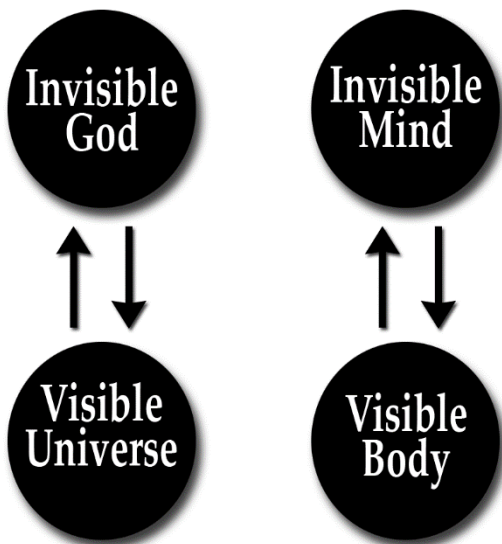


Some have speculated that there are other intelligent life forms in the universe. There are no other human beings—no other children of God on other planets in the universe. In the *Master Speaks* (1965) Sun Myung Moon was asked, “Do you have any opinion about flying saucers? Are flying saucers real?” He answered, “They appear as a sign of the Last Days. They look real but they are not. It is a spiritual manifestation. The people in them are spirit beings, not physical.” Father said, “Some say that there are people in other parts of the universe. But that simply is not so. The entire universe was created for us.” (Cheong Seong Gyeong 206-209, 1990.10.7)

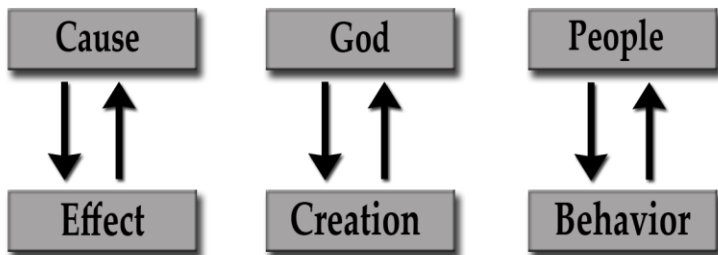
### **GOD IS INVISIBLE**

God is invisible. We cannot see God. There are many things in this world which we cannot see yet we know they exist. Radio waves, x-rays and the air we breathe cannot be seen. We know of their existence by studying their effects.

Our mind or our thoughts are also invisible. We express our thoughts and ideas with our bodies. God is invisible and expresses Himself in the universe.



Romans 1:20 states that God is invisible: “Ever since the creation of the world His invisible nature, namely, His eternal power and deity, has been clearly perceived in the things that have been made.” By studying the effect, we can know the cause. By looking at creation, we can tell something about our creator, God.



To know a person, we study his or her behavior and achievements. By looking at what a person creates we can tell something about the

creator. Likewise, to know God we study His creation. Psalm 19:1 says, “The heavens declare the glory of God; the skies proclaim the work of His hands.”

**DUALITY OF INTERNAL CHARACTER AND EXTERNAL FORM**

Let’s look at the world to see God’s characteristics. The world can be divided essentially into six categories: human beings, animals, plants, molecules, atoms and particles. Each has a duality of internal character and external form. The internal character of human beings is our minds, and the external form is our physical bodies. Animals have instinct and a body. Plants have an invisible directive nature and a body. Molecules have an invisible force that combines atoms. Atoms are made of particles united by this force. And particles are made of invisible energy. Electricity flows between positive and negative charges. God’s internal character is His emotion, intellect and will, and His external form is energy. God made the visible universe from His invisible energy.

	<b>Internal Character</b>	<b>External Form</b>	
1. Mankind	Mind	Body	<b>EFFECT</b>
2. Animals	Instinct	Body	
3. Plants	Invisible Directive Nature	Body	
4. Molecules	Invisible Force	Atoms	
5. Atoms	Invisible Force	Particles	
6. Particles	Invisible Force	Energy	
<b>God:</b>	Emotion Intellect Will	Energy	<b>CAUSE</b>

## **INVISIBLE ENERGY**

The idea that invisible energy is the substance of all visible things was mathematically introduced by Einstein in his formula  $E = mc^2$ . E stands for energy, m stand for mass or matter and c stands for the speed of light. This is scientific proof of a give and receive relationship of invisible energy and visible matter. Invisible energy can change into visible matter and matter can change into energy.

$$E = mc^2$$

Invisible = Visible

“You cannot see God even in the spirit world. Can you see energy? God is the original source of energy. Therefore, even in the spirit world He cannot be seen.” (10-21-1979)

## **EVERYTHING IS ROOTED IN LOVE**

Father Moon teaches that God is the source of all the energy in the universe which he calls Universal Prime Energy or Universal Prime Force. This is His external form. God’s internal character — His emotion, intellect and will is manifested in True Love. The essence of God is love and therefore “Everything is rooted in love.” (5-1-1998) God’s love is absolute, unchanging and eternal and His “Universal Prime Force never changes.” (5-1-1998)

## **ENERGY**

The fundamental source of all energy is the expression of the Heavenly Father's prime energy, as explained in the *Divine Principle*.

The fundamental force for the changing of the seasons is not formed by human beings. The originating force of all energy used in the created world stems from only one force, given by God. We cannot truly explicate the energy for the existence of the eternal God. That is the energy of God, my Father, who is the sole creator of humankind. (8-4-97)

The center of love is like pure gold, which has 100 percent conductivity. Electrical current always flows towards something it can consume, generating explosions and sparks when it reaches the core. Electromagnetic current operates throughout the universe, controlling the function of the heavenly bodies. The truth of electricity is also the truth of the universe. Electrical current flows in a circuit; gravity draws everything towards the center. Why? Something comparable to pure gold is at the center of the universe. Universal prime force directs all motion towards the center, maintaining order in the universe.

Without gravity, the universe would fall apart. Likewise, in the world of heart, pure-gold love pulls everything to the center. The pure gold of God's love is the magnetic force, the center of gravity in the world of love. It affects any moving object. People's lives take various courses, but they always return to that pulling power. When you make contact with the golden core of God's love, will He cry out in pain, or laugh with joy and happiness? God is like us; He feels joy when touched by external stimulation. (5-29-1983)

God exists and He is our Parent. He lives and carries out His work within each person's life. He exists without form. If you think of Him as large, He is infinitely large, but if you think of Him as small, He is also infinitely small. Every human being possesses a mind, but can anyone locate the mind with confidence and certainty?

Energy clearly exists and sustains life, but energy is invisible. In the same way, God absolutely exists with attributes of eternity, changelessness and uniqueness, but He cannot be seen with the human eye, which is one part of the human physical body. Because God is the original body of energy, we will not be able to see Him even in spirit world.

This is why we say that God is omniscient,

omnipotent and omnipresent. Because He has no form, there is nothing to keep Him from going anywhere. He could pass right through your body without you feeling anything. He could step on you as He passes by while you doze off, and you would not know it. Think how convenient that is. What would you do if God were to appear and involve Himself in every little thing you do? If you had to live with God visible to your eyes, what would you do? Probably you would not last a day before having a nervous breakdown. You cannot see the incredible amount of air that is passing through your body even as you sit here. So how could you possibly know how God, who exists without form, passes through you as He carries on His work? Rather than foolishly saying, "Show me God and I'll believe," you should be grateful that God is invisible to our eyes.

The universe in which we live is wrapped in mystery. The size of the vast universe is as great as 21 billion light years across. If a light year is the distance light travels in a year at a speed so fast that it can go around the Earth seven and a half times in a second, then try to imagine what God, who created the universe and manages it, must be like. How large would He have to be, and how heavy? God is the great king of wisdom, so He made it so that He would exist without form, enabling Him to go anywhere in the universe instantaneously or enter even into the eye of a needle. When we search within for the best place to receive God, our greatest treasure, the natural conclusion is, "The heart is the only appropriate place." No place can be safer or more comfortable for Him. The heart is able to stand in the position of God's object partner and exist for eternity by engaging in spherical motion, and this is the reason that human beings can have eternal life.

We truly know God only when we feel Him in our heart and understand the reality of His existence in the course of daily life. We know God's existence only through experience.

When we understand the reality of God's existence directly through experience in our daily life, we will be able to sense God's will from moment to moment naturally. We will be able to act in accordance with His will without being told. We will become people who cannot sin even if we try. It was intended that the formless God would take on substantial form as human beings and exercise dominion with the character and appearance of an owner, not only over all of creation in this world, a world of form, but even over the spirit world. This is why our highest priority in life is to know God with certainty. (5-1-2004)

### **DUALITY OF MASCULINE AND FEMININE**

One of the most basic characteristics we see in the world is the duality or polarity of masculinity and femininity. "So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them" (Genesis 1:27). First Corinthians 11:7 states that man "is the image and glory of God." Human beings are divided into men and women; animals into male and female; plants into stamen and pistil; molecules, atoms and particles into positive and negative charges. God projected His dual characteristics of positivity and negativity into all things.

	Masculine	Feminine	
Human Beings:	Men	Women	<b>EFFECT</b>
Animals:	Male	Female	
Plants:	Stamen	Pistil	
Molecules:	Positive	Negative	
Atoms:	Positive	Negative	
Particles:	Positive	Negative	
<b>God:</b>	<b>Positivity</b>	<b>Negativity</b>	<b>CAUSE</b>

### **CENTRAL TRUTH — GOD IS OUR PARENT**

A fundamental question of mankind is: What is our relationship to God? God is our true parent, and we are His children. “Love is the true ancestor of creation and the force behind generation. During my years of searching for the truth, the first question I asked God was about the essential nature of the universe. The answer was rather simple—the beginning point of the universe is love and the end result is the parent and child relationship. God created mankind and the universe in order to create a world of love through which He could dwell in that Parent/child relationship. This is the central truth and essence of the universe” (6-20-82).

### **SUBJECT/OBJECT — LEADER/FOLLOWER**

An essential part of being a parent is being a leader. God is a true parent and gives true leadership. His desire is for us to be true children who accept and trust His leadership, commands and desires as true and good. Father often uses the terms “subject” and “object” to explain our relationship to God.



# The Relationship Between God and Mankind

---



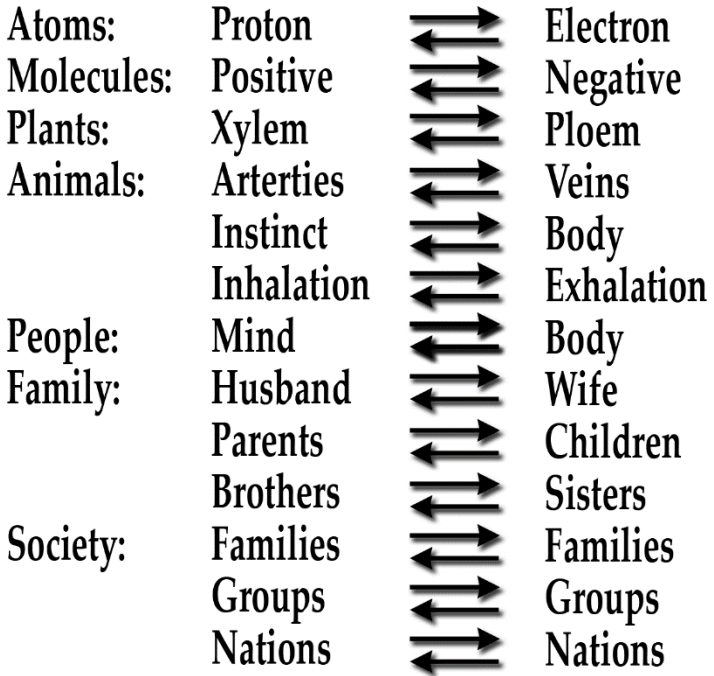
We are created to be good objects to God. This does not mean that God is a dictator and we are to be robots. True leadership does not mean pushing someone down but lifting them up with parental discipline, nurturing and love. Although God is to be the leader, He also needs our ideas, love and creativity. Between people there is often a leader and follower relationship. We see this between husband and wife, parents and children, teachers and students, employer and employees, a conductor and an orchestra.

## **GIVE AND RECEIVE**

To find real happiness, people must master the art of being a good follower to their leaders and being a good leader to those who follow them. The action between leader and follower is called Give and Receive Action. For example, atoms exist and act because of the give and receive action between the protons and electrons. Plants exist because of the give and receive of xylem and phloem. Plants give oxygen to animals, and animals return carbon dioxide to plants. Each person can exist and act because of the give and receive between the arteries and veins, inhalation and exhalation. We need give and receive between our mind and body.

On a human relationship level people need give and receive in the family between husband and wife, parents and children, brothers and sisters. Society can function well only if there is harmonious

give and receive and cooperation for common goals between people, families, groups and nations.

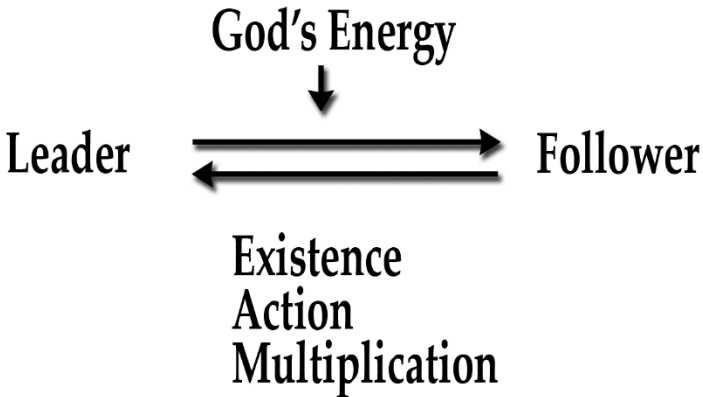


**PAIRS**

God created everything in the universe in a relationship of pairs that exist, act and multiply through give and receive action, i.e., through interdependent and harmoniously reciprocal relationships. God's eternal, unchanging, absolute vertical energy allows for all horizontal existence, action and multiplication.

# **GIVE AND TAKE ACTION**

---



If parents have many children they know and love each of them intimately. Even though there are billions of people God loves and knows each person intimately too. And just as parents want give and receive with their children, God wants give and receive with each of us.

God created all things, but in all His creation man occupies the supreme and central position. It is therefore very important for us to have a clear understanding of the relationship between God and man.

We are mirrors reflecting the characteristics of God. God is just like you and me. God is the origin. Therefore, our love comes from the love of God. Our life comes from the life of God, and our ideals come from the ideals of God. We feel these are the most precious things because God first felt these things were most precious. God is the subject of love, the subject of life, and the subject of ideals. We are the objects of love, the objects of life, and the objects of

ideals. Therefore, if God is absolute, we are to be absolute. If God is unchanging, we are to be unchanging. If God is unique, we are to be unique. If God is everlasting, we are to be everlasting. Our eternal life is not just a fantasy. It is reality. Since God is eternal, His object, man, must be created for eternity. Otherwise, we cannot reflect the nature of our eternal God.

### **MAN IS INCARNATE GOD**

If there is a God of love, life, and ideals, and that God does not manifest all these qualities in man, His object, then God has defeated His very purpose of creating. God either projected the full value of Himself in His object, or He created nothing at all. God is the subject to man, and we are the objects to God. An object is the full reflection of the subject. So man is the visible form of God, and God is the invisible form of man. Subject and object are one in essence. God and man are one. Man is incarnate God. Otherwise, we would not be able to reflect God's full image. God could not realize His joy, the purpose of His creation. When we as objects are not as perfect as God Himself is perfect, we cannot reflect the full love, life, and ideal of God. So man, the object of God, is as important in value as God Himself. If I made vigorous gestures and shouted to an empty auditorium, I am sure that anyone who saw me would wonder, "Is that man crazy?" But if I have someone to have give and receive with, some object out there to respond to me—even one small child in front of me—and I pour out my heart and soul to him, then I am considered normal. The sole difference is the presence of someone as object.

What I am trying to illustrate is the value of an object. As we are the objects to God, He has placed us in a position equal to Himself. Thus, man shares the same value as God and is just as important as God. Even though God is most high and noble and mighty, He too must have His object. Otherwise He

feels no joy. Joy comes when you receive stimulation from the object. Not even God can be joyful alone. You must realize that God created man and the universe for joy. But God's joy remains dormant until He can have give and receive with His object.

So far in Christianity, we placed God so high up in heaven, and pushed man so low in hell, that there has been an uncrossable gap between them. A wide and raging river has separated man from God. Men do not dare to reach out to God as a living reality. Man has been unable to realize that God is so close, so real, so approachable, that we can even dwell with Him. We are supposed to be the living temples of God. Yet conventional Christianity has been unable to make that a reality.

God's ultimate purpose in His creation of man is to give to him all His love, all His life, and all His ideal. You are to occupy the entire love of God, to the depth of His heart. By becoming His true sons and daughters, your desire will be fulfilled. That is your ultimate destiny. Then you will be saturated with the love of God. You will be filled with joy and feel overwhelmed by a total satisfaction in life.

There is no limit to joy. Happiness has no end. When you are standing in the love of God, every cell in your body jumps for joy. You breathe in and out with the entire universe. In this state your life is fulfilled. This is how God means us to live, intoxicated in love and joy. And through our joy God receives His joy. The joy of man is the joy of God; the joy of God is the joy of man.

Early in my life God called me for a mission as His instrument. I was called to reveal His truth for Him, as His prophet. I committed myself unyieldingly in pursuit of truth, searching the hills and valleys of the spiritual world. The time suddenly came to me when heaven opened up, and I was privileged to communicate with Jesus Christ and the living God directly. Since then I have received many astonishing revelations. God Himself told me that the

most basic and central truth of the universe is that God is the Father and we are His children. We are all created as children of God. And He said there is nothing closer, nothing deeper, nothing more ultimate than when father and son are one: One in love, one in life, and one in ideal. (*God's Hope for Man*)

God, as the subject partner of true love, did establish humankind as the object partner of true love. Accordingly, God can fulfill the ideal of true love only through humankind. The fulfillment of God's purpose of creation is the ideal world where God and humankind are united through absolute love. Human beings were created as the greatest object partners of God's love. They alone in all creation potentially embody the full nature of God and they are born the visible bodies of the invisible God. If a person matures, they become a perfect temple of God—a visible, substantial body in which God can freely and peacefully dwell.

God's overall ideal of absolute true love is realized and perfected through humankind in a vertical parent-child relationship. God created Adam first; he was to be the son of God and, at the same time, the substantial body of God. Later, God created Eve as the object partner of Adam so that Adam and Eve could fulfill the ideal of horizontal love in conjugal love. Eve was to be the daughter of God and also as a bride she was to realize substantially the ideal of the horizontal love of God. (4-16-1996)

“Adam, created as God's body, would become the true ancestor of humankind. Adam, in other words, would be God incarnate. For the incorporeal God to have dominion over the world of physical beings, to be able to see and hear in that tangible world, He needs a tangible body. The one created to be God incarnate was Adam. Then who is Eve? Eve was Adam's wife, a wife with physical form. If Adam were God incarnate, Eve would be God's wife incarnate. Saying that the holy God would take a wife may sound shocking,

but Adam was created as God's body and he was to take Eve as his wife. Eve, then, would have been God's wife incarnate." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong* pp. 57-58) and "It is not Adam and Eve's bodies that God likes but their love for each other." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong* p. 336)

### **PAIR SYSTEM IS FOR LOVE**

The *Divine Principle* is a short overview of Sun Myung Moon's teachings. He has written books and given thousands of speeches over a span of sixty years that give amazing revelations about God and the universe. The following are excerpts from a few speeches where he teaches about the pair system. I hope these quotes inspire you to read his words of wisdom and truth in depth:

When we observe our universe, we recognize that every being exists through the union of paired elements. This is true on all levels, beginning even with the mineral realm. Molecules are made from the union of a positive ion and a negative ion. On the level of plants, existence and reproduction requires the union of stamen and pistil, representing the male and female aspects.

The pair system is even more obvious on the level of animals. Fish, birds, mammals and all animals exist as male and female. Finally, the supreme creations of God, human beings, are either men or women. The first man, Adam, and the first woman, Eve, were the original ancestors of mankind. What is the purpose of the pair system? Why did God create in this way?

The Creator divided all things in male and female so that they might unite through their give and receive of love. Through the action of love, each species multiplies and extends its lineage.

Human ambition is limitless and infinite. Then, what is the true goal of this infinite desire of man? For man, it is woman. For woman, it is man. Man and woman can find true love only through each other.

In history, differing views of life, the universe and God have presented unresolved problems. The

solution to these problems is to be found when true man and true woman unite with God in true love, creating absolute oneness. This is the source of absolute value.

Man exists for the sake of woman. Woman exists for the sake of man. Each is to be the object of love of the other.

God is a being of absolute love. He wanted to create objects of love, human beings, upon which He can pour out His love. In doing so, He would naturally look forward to the return of that love from men and women.

The pattern of true love is not that of being served; it is to serve others. When God Himself initially created His object of love, He invested every ounce of His energy—100 percent of His being. This established the pattern of true love. In other words, the tradition of true love as total investment was established by God. At that point, true love became the corner of the universe. And even almighty God chooses to be obedient to it. (4-10-90)

When you observe the things of nature, you can see that the pair system is always in evidence. This system is at work on all levels, whether it is the mineral kingdom, the plant kingdom, or the animal kingdom. Everything exists within the plus and minus, yin and yang system.

The most important thing to understand is the Principle of Creation. First of all, creation began from the atmosphere or surroundings. The basic surroundings for human beings were created first, and that is the universe. In it we see plus and minus, the pair system, male and female. Why do we see that everywhere? For the purpose of achieving True Love. The universe is created for that purpose: the unity of mind and body, male and female, men and women. Why? Because they are looking forward to uniting with their corresponding partner. (4-25-93)



Everything has life, love and lineage. In order to bear fruit the pair system is needed. That is the absolute formula, there is no deviation. Without a pair system there is no multiplication. It is impossible for one alone to create fruit. One alone cannot become a recipient of original love, life and lineage.

Animals eat plants and human beings eat animals as food. Many people think that is ungodly, pitiful, and so forth. Yet it is not so. That is the purpose of creation. By being eaten by a higher creature, the lower creature becomes part of the higher body and closer to the love of God. If an animal is eaten by man, man is the highest and closest to God, so the animal would rejoice. Through that man's body, that animal is getting closer to the love of God. Do you follow? (Yes.) This is absolutely the law of love. Even animals are sacrificing themselves for the love of, for the sake of men. Our higher love is whose love? God's love! For the sake of the love of God, we should be willing and ready to sacrifice ourselves. Then we are following God's law. Is that true? Praise God for making the pair system! (Yes.) (3-27-1990)

All beings of the universe, from the most minute creations to the supreme creation of human beings, exist in a pair system. That means there is a subject/object relationship on every level. The whole creation is made to participate in the love of God. They want to unite with that love and have it continue throughout posterity. (4-6-89)

God's act of creation was necessary and we cannot imagine creation without a purpose. There was only one reason God needed the creation: to realize the ideal of true love. God developed life in pairs, from the simplest and lowest levels up to the human level, subject and object and positive and negative, to form reciprocal relationships under the ideal of love. The creation's ideal of love and God's ideal of ultimate love are not separate or different. The Principle of Creation is at work to complete the absolute love of

God through the realization of true love between men and women in the human world. This is the reason why, in the beginning, God created one man and one woman, Adam and Eve. (4-16-1996)

This is the reason why all things are in pairs: it is for love. (5-1-93)

**GOD IS CALLED “HEAVENLY FATHER” OR “FATHER”**

Father Moon explains why we call God “Heavenly Father” or “Father” even though He has dual characteristics of masculine and feminine:

Why did God create the universe? The reason is that God wants to realize the relationship of Father and children centering on love. So we can come to the conclusion that the foundation of the universe is the relationship of Father and children. (6-20-82)

Is God masculine or feminine? (Both.) God has both dual characteristics, but how does He appear, as a masculine God or a feminine God? Masculine is in the subject position and the giving place. Feminine is the object and the receiving place. Do you understand? That is why God is portrayed as masculine, the absolute Subject. (2-5-95)

Although we know through the *Divine Principle* that God contains within Himself the dual essentialities of masculine and feminine, we also know that God is the universal subject and as such has a primarily positive nature. (1-30-83)

We know that God exists in both masculine and feminine essentialities, positive and negative characteristics. However since God is the universal Subject, we know through the *Divine Principle* that this is characterized as a masculine aspect. (1-2-83)

The person who can connect with the vertical lineage of children is not a woman but only a man. It is because a man resembles God. God looks like (or is) the harmony of internal nature and external form, but His shape itself is that of a man. A man is the shape of God and has the seed of His child. (8-2-96)

Within Him, God has both masculinity and femininity, but to exist as Father, His being is that of a male subject. (8-1-96)

In the Garden of Eden how many men were there? (One.) what about the archangel? (He is not a man.) But suppose you had to include the angel figures? (Four.) Including God it makes five male figures. (11-23-94)

There were five masculine figures in the Garden of Eden. First, there was God, who is the subject partner of the entire created world. Then there was Adam and the three angels, Lucifer, Gabriel and Michael. Eve was the only feminine figure. (50 state tour 2001)

God is our Friend, our greatest Friend. God is our Father, Elder Brother, King, and Creator. How proud we should be to have such a God! (May 26, 1998)

Why did God create the universe? The reason is that God wants to engage in the loving relationship of a father with His children. The relationship of father and children is, in fact, the foundation of the universe. (June 20, 1982)

We should call God, "Father." God is the Father who originally created you. Due to the Human Fall we also need rebirth, but God engendered your first

birth. Your physical father was only the bridge over which you came into this world. When you go to dwell in the spirit world, you will not call Him “father” but rather “older brother.” You will also not call your physical mother “mother.”

People of firmly rooted faith in the spirit realms all call God “Father,” just as Christians do on earth. In any given family, the grandfather calls God “Father,” the father calls God “Father,” the grandchild calls God “Father”— every member of the family calls God “Father.” Since God is the Father of all people, all people are brothers and sisters to one another. (November 24, 1968)

How old is God? For billions of years He has been growing old, waiting. If God had a beard, I am sure it would have grown all the way down to His feet, and if God grew taller every year, there’s no telling how tall He would have grown. By what power has He been able to endure and wait for so long? It is nothing else but love. (January 25, 1981)

### **GOD’S INTERNAL CHARACTER**

What more can we learn of God’s internal character by looking at the world around us? The first thing we see is that all races, nations and cultures treasure the love in the family unit. It is a universal and fundamental truth that every person needs and desires a united and loving family because it is in the family that we experience the highest joy and happiness in life. Where does this love originate? From our cause God. God is a God of true love.

“The family is the building block of the Kingdom of Heaven. ...The basic unit of happiness is not the nation or world, but the family. ...The base for the Kingdom of Heaven is the family. The base for the true ideal is the family. The base for the true love and happiness is the family.” (3-28-1979)

“The family is the fundamental unit for building peaceful nations and ultimately a peaceful world. (10-20-01).

## **BEAUTY**

When we look at the world around us we see that each person seeks beauty. People love art, music, dance, paintings, literature and poetry. It is human nature to seek beautiful homes, food, cars, clothes, hair styles, cosmetics and jewelry.

The most beautiful artwork is by God. What is more interesting and gorgeous and exciting than human beings? Every person is unique and manifests God’s vast love. Every stage of life from babies to elderly is beautiful. We also see God’s beauty in nature. It is awe inspiring to see mountains. It is amazing to see the variety of animals and fish. Each one is a masterpiece. God is the ultimate artist. We marvel at the sensitivity and perfection of beauty in the shades of colors in flowers. God is the ultimate painter. Every person’s desire for beauty is an effect of God. God is a God of beauty.

## **TRUTH**

Men and women seek truth. This is why people read, express themselves by writing and go to libraries and bookstores. There is a deep desire in mankind to see children receive an education. We are all born with an innate need to learn, explore and grow through knowledge and wisdom. People study science and the humanities to master the environment and human relationships. God is a God of truth.

## **GOODNESS, JUSTICE AND FREEDOM**

Mankind has a conscience that desires to do good works. This is evidenced in charities, volunteer work and the many social and professional organizations that champion high ethical standards. People have through religion and philosophy sought guiding principles of goodness. Our conscience makes us feel remorse when we do wrong, and we feel indignation when we see wrongdoing. Because our creator is sensitive and idealistic, people are sensitive and idealistic too. One of mankind’s greatest ideals is freedom. We

honor those heroes who fight against tyranny. God is a God of goodness, justice and freedom.

### **ORDER AND HARMONY**

We see order, law and principle throughout the universe. Incredible order and harmony permeates creation. Kant said, "... the glorious order, beauty, and providential care, everywhere displayed in nature, give rise to the belief in a wise and great Author of the Universe." Kepler said, "The universe was stamped with the adornment of harmonic proportions.... illustrating the glory of the fabric of the world, and of God the Architect." Cicero said, "The celestial order and the beauty of the universe compel me to admit that there is some excellent and eternal Being, who deserves the respect and homage of me." God is a master scientist—a God of law, order and principle.

### **CREATIVITY**

Every person has a deep need to create and to build. We admire and treasure the creations of man, and we stand in awe of the creations of God. We see infinite uniqueness in the universe. Snowflakes have six sides, yet no two snowflakes are the same. How many snowflakes have fallen in history? Every person has two eyes, a nose and a mouth, but no two faces are identical. Even identical twins are not identical. Every human being has a unique personality and a deep need to express that special individuality by creative work. This deep motivation to be creative and to strive for excellence comes from our creator God. God is a God of creativity.

### **ABSOLUTE VALUES**

Mankind seeks eternal, unchanging, and absolute values. A marriage ceremony is when a man and a woman publicly pledge eternal, absolute and unchanging love. We desire to make commitments for life. Many songs are about love that lasts forever. For example, one popular song says:

It's very clear  
Our love is here to stay  
Not for a year  
But forever and a day

In time, the Rockies may crumble  
Gibraltar may tumble  
They're only made of clay  
But our love is here to stay

## **ETERNAL**

People want eternal unity with their families, relatives and friends. We also have the wish for an eternal afterlife because we do not have enough time on earth to express all our love and creativity. Kant said, "... it is plain that the hope of a future life arises from the feeling, which exists in the breast of every man, that the temporal is inadequate to meet and satisfy the demands of his nature." The desire for eternal life and eternal, unchanging and absolute values comes from God. God is eternal, unchanging and absolute.

The universe is in perpetual motion. It not only never runs down, God's love and energy constantly increases forever.

## **THE PURPOSE OF LIFE**

A fundamental question asked by countless people is: What is the purpose of life? God's motivation for creating the world and especially us as His children was love. Simply love. He wanted and needed to share His love. Joy is the true purpose of life. God wanted His sons and daughters to be happy and joyful. To give them the highest happiness, we read in the *Bible* in Genesis 1:28 that He gave Three Blessings: "And God blessed them, and God said to them, 'Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.'"

"The First Blessing of God to human beings, 'be fruitful', called God's children to become ... true persons." For the Second Blessing, 'multiply', he says that men and women are supposed to become a "True Husband and Wife." Then they are to become "True Parents to their children, inheriting and passing on true love, true life and true lineage from God. ... Then they would have become the Lords of true love. ... This was God's Third Blessing. This is the Blessing to create a living environment in which we can experience joy and happiness, having dominion over the creation. This includes the

care and preservation of the world’s ecological balance as true masters of the creation....” (10-20-2001)

## **UNIVERSAL PRINCIPLES**

He ended his speech saying that we “must ground ourselves spiritually and morally upon God’s ideal” and live “according to universal principles” and center our lives on “God and the laws of Heaven.”

## **FIRST BLESSING**

The First Blessing is for men and women to be fruitful. When a tree becomes fruitful we mean it has reached maturity and can bear fruit. It has reached its full potential and perfection. This is figurative language meaning we too must reach our full potential and perfection. The *Bible* says, “You must be perfect as your Heavenly Father is perfect” (Matt. 5:48).

## **GROWTH PERIOD**

To reach maturity God created everything to go through a growth period of three stages: Formation, Growth and Completion.

# **Growth Period**

## **Perfection**

<b>3. Completion Stage</b>	<b>Adult</b>	<b>Horse</b>	<b>Tree</b>
<hr/>			
<b>2. Growth Stage</b>	<b>Child</b>	<b>Yearling</b>	<b>Sapling</b>
<hr/>			
<b>1. Formation Stage</b>	<b>Infant</b>	<b>Colt</b>	<b>Seedling</b>
<hr/>			



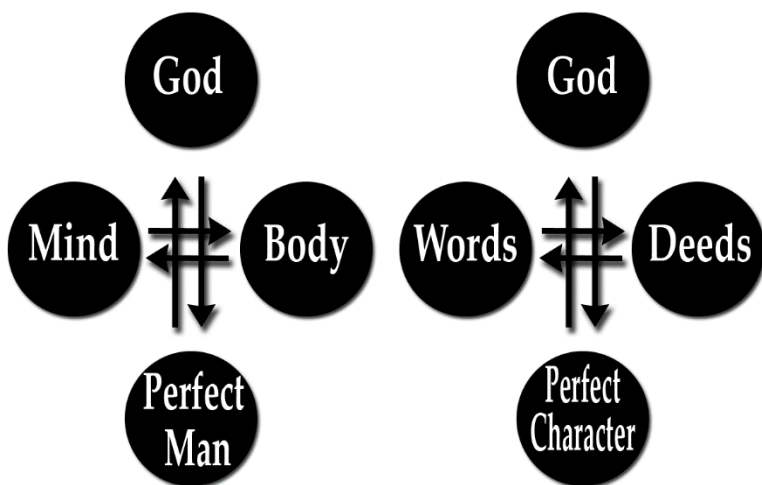
For example, a tree is first a seedling, then a sapling, then a tree. Animals go through three stages such as foal, yearling, and horse. People are first an infant, then a child, then an adult. “Physicians commonly divide pregnancy into three, three-month parts called trimesters” and “Labor has three stages.” (*World Book Encyclopedia*)

God is perfect and for men and women to become one with God they must become perfect also. During this growth period all creation including our physical body grows to maturity automatically. Our spirit does not grow automatically. It takes conscious, creative effort to develop spiritually.

One of God’s primary characteristics is creativity. Man must inherit creatorship from God in order to become mature sons and daughters. Every person must fulfill a special condition. God gives us the responsibility to become co-creators. Together with God we create ourselves.

We can only be truly happy when we are spiritually mature. There is an innate gyroscope or nature that drives us to seek perfection.

When the *Bible* speaks of human perfection, it means perfection of heart. Men and women were to have their minds (or words) and their bodies (or deeds) centered on God. When men and women would say good and do good they would have perfect character. Men and women would have the value of God. Every person would be a temple of God: “You are God’s temple and God’s spirit dwells in you” (I Cor. 3:16).



### **RULES OF GOD**

Sun Myung Moon teaches that “we need to live according to universal principles and rules of God.” In Father’s teachings we learn that we are called by God to follow the rules that God has revealed to him. For example, in one of his speeches he teaches:

Tell your hand not to touch anything except godly things. Your original, pure mind says your hand should not touch a woman’s hand until you are married. Your eyes should look only in the right direction, your nose should smell only the right things, your mouth should eat only the right things, your hands touch only the right things and so on. (12-1-82)

Father Moon teaches the importance of living a moral life in tune with our conscience so we can find “genuine happiness”:

## **ORIGNAL MIND**

Every person has a God-given original mind that longs to live in a universe, nation, neighborhood and family wrapped in the loving embrace of parents and siblings.

## **GENUINE HAPPINESS**

What kind of person does the world call happy? What is the basis of happiness? Does power and authority bring happiness? Does having tremendous wealth bring happiness? Does happiness come from possessing a unique talent? Does happiness come by becoming a world-renowned scholar or gaining a coveted position? None of these guarantee happiness.

Nothing external can be the basis of eternal happiness. Sooner or later the happiness it brings will fade, stimulating anew the search for happiness. In the end, a person finds genuine happiness in a family that has loving parents, a couple in true love, and children who are devoted and faithful to their parents. ...Unity between mind and body means to live in absolute obedience to the voice of the conscience. (America tour speech 2004)

## **BUILD A HEALTHY SOCIETY**

Father Moon encourages every person to care about others, to live for the sake of others rather than being selfish and self-centered: "I would like to see all Unification Church members reacting to their surroundings with a strong conscience not being apathetic at all. You must be people who care and who will work to build a healthy society." (12-27-81)

## **A LIFE OF TRUE LOVE**

To resemble God, the original Being of true love, we should become the owners of true love. We should embody true love and practice it in order to develop our character. This is the way each of us can become true parents.

Then, what is a life of true love? True love is the spirit of public service. It brings the peace that is at

the root of happiness. Selfish love is a mask for the desire to have one's partner exist for one's own sake; true love is free of that corruption. Rather, its essence is to give, to live for the sake of others and for the sake of the whole. True love gives, forgets that it has given, and continues to give without ceasing. True love gives joyfully. We find it in the joyful and loving heart of a mother who cradles her baby in her arms and nurses it at her breast. True love is sacrificial love, as with a filial son who gains his greatest satisfaction in helping his parents. God created the universe out of just such love: absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, investing everything without any expectation or condition of receiving something in return.

### **ROOT OF GOD IS TRUE LOVE**

True love is the wellspring of the universe. Once a person possesses it, true love makes him or her the center and the owner of the universe. True love is the root of God and a symbol of His will and power. When we are bound together in true love, we can be together forever, continually increasing in the joy of each other's company. The attraction of true love brings all things in the universe to our feet; even God will come to dwell with us. Nothing can compare to the value of true love. It has the power to dissipate the barriers fallen human beings created, including national boundaries and the barriers of race and even religion.

The main attributes of true love are that it is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, so whoever practices God's true love will live with God, share His happiness and enjoy the right to participate as an equal in His work. Therefore, a life lived for the sake of others, a life of true love, is the absolute prerequisite for entering the Kingdom of Heaven. (50 state speaking tour in America in 2001)

“Is there anything higher or more precious than to be a son or daughter of God? If anything were higher, then surely human desire would aspire to attain it. But there is nothing higher.” (50 state speaking tour in America in 2001)

## **SECOND BLESSING**

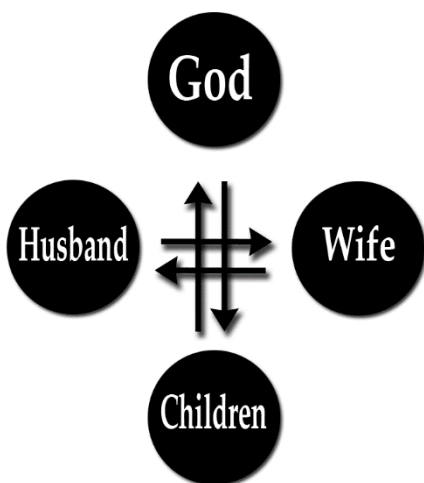
The Second Blessing of God was for people to multiply. After reaching perfection, God wants men and women to marry and have a family. When men and women love God, God would return that love. Husbands and wives would love each other with all their hearts and love their children completely. Physically, parents would give their children a good home, clothes and food. Spiritually, the parents would teach them by word and example of God’s love and truth. One of God’s deepest desires is that boys and girls grow up in a safe environment.

## **FOUR POSITION FOUNDATION — IDEAL FAMILY**

We experience the greatest love in the family. God made the family to be four positions consisting of God, husband, wife, and children. And when there is perfect give and receive between all four parts then this would be the basic unit of joy, life, and of society. God’s number one goal is for every person to experience true love in an ideal family.

## FOUR POSITION FOUNDATION

# Family Unit



Marriage is not a light matter, but should be taken very seriously. Marriage is more serious than your own life, than heaven and earth, than your entire hope and ideal. When you find happiness in this serious area, you will find ultimate happiness. (4-17-1977)

Why, then, do we have to get married? It is because God exists in dual essentialities and men and women must reflect those essentialities. Therefore, men and women must come together and unite in total resemblance of God's image. That is why marriage is one essential factor in your total growth.

Marriage is for the purpose of blending men and women into God-like figures, to put people into the

image of God so that when they are elevated into spirit world they can enjoy a relationship with God together. We come to the clear conclusion that God created all things and human beings for the purpose of consummating His love. Where can that love be consummated? It can be done while we are here on earth, in the relationship between husband and wife, in the family. Therefore, marriage is the most important event of human life. (1-2-83)

Do you know what is most precious to a man? It is woman. Likewise, what is most precious to a woman is a man. The purpose of life, into which we all are born, for a man is woman, and for a woman is man. Man and woman are born to live for each other. The harmony of their body shapes and of their organs of love are simply made so. (11-28-86)

God made man to have a woman. Man alone is only half a human being. Woman herself is only half a human being. But through marriage they can form a whole human being. (1-1-96)

Is a woman supposed to live for the sake of another woman? A woman's original purpose of creation is for the sake of man. And a man exists for the sake of a woman. Therefore, men and women need each other; they have to meet.

Why do people get married? A nose functions properly when it has two nostrils. By the same token, a single man or woman is not complete. All your organs should function for the sake of truth. (12-1-82)

### **IDEAL FAMILIES**

What do you think is God's ultimate purpose for creating human beings? Simply put, it is to experience joy through relating with ideal families filled with true love. (9-12-05)

## **TRUE FAMILIES**

God is Father, the Creator, and human beings are created as His children who are to become one body with Him in true love. True human beings are originally made to live joyously as mind and body unite with God's love, and become intoxicated by it. God created human beings so that He Himself can experience infinite joy watching true families live in happiness. Through His true love He can live together with them. God desired to achieve harmonious oneness with human beings through true love.

God's dream is to realize true love together with human beings. God desires to feel the joy and happiness of true love eternally in the world of heart together with human beings, who are His children, as well as being the highest and the most precious beings of all creation. (6-11-98)

As a husband and wife it is only when we gain the victory with our children, together as a family, that we can say for the first time that we are a family that has realized the ideal and purpose of creation. It is only after the father and mother have become one and then the children and parents have become one that a perfect Four Position Foundation is formed. (5-23-07)

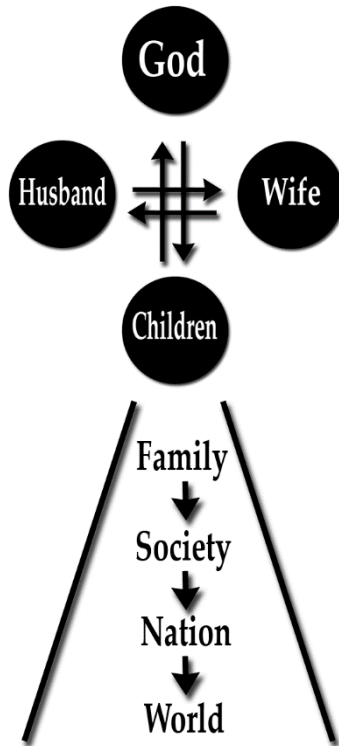
Husband and wife, united with hearts of love, must establish their family beyond any levels of the past, dedicated toward the goal for the future. Otherwise you cannot enter the eternal Kingdom of Heaven where God dwells. That is the ultimate goal and God's purpose of creation. It sounds like a dream, but it is attainable. Therefore, you must promise me that you will go toward that goal of the ideal family. Those of you who want to become like that, raise both your hands and pledge. (10-13-1970)

## **ONE WORLD FAMILY**

God's plan is for ideal families to form ideal societies that would

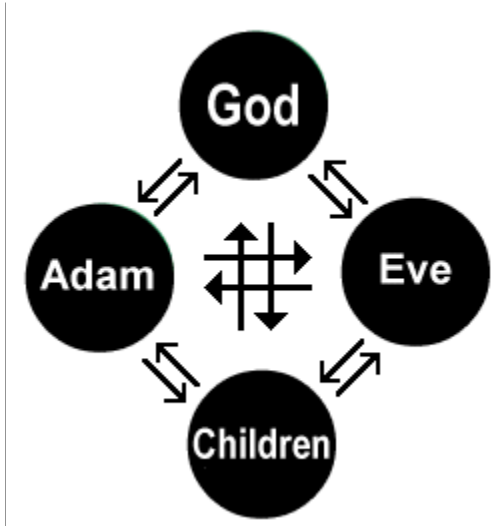


form ideal nations and an ideal world living as one huge, harmonious family.



### **THREE OBJECT PURPOSE**

In the family there are four positions of God, man, woman and child. Each can be in the subject position and have the other three as its object in giving love. For example, God can be the subject of love to the man, woman and child. The child can be the subject of love to God, to his or her father and to the mother. There are 12 directions of love.



We have to have a definite idea about God and His grandchildren. God has a triple objective purpose, of three purposes and three objects. The four positions are necessary as a foundation for action and maneuver. God is the almighty subject, but He is not happy alone, so in order to move He had to have objects. This is why He created man and woman.

But those three are not complete either. Since God wanted to move in spherical motion, He needed the fourth position, to form a south pole to His north pole. Subject and object were divided in order to take after God's own image. If plus and minus have give and receive, another being of plus and minus is bound to come into being. For these purposes God needed grandchildren. Without having the fourth position, man could only have two objects. If he did not have three objects like God did, then he could not be elevated to the same level as God, or become His perfect object. (June 22, 1980)

The triple objective purpose. Everyone together creates the four position foundation, as the nucleus. This is where all the love relationships are focused—parental love, children’s love, conjugal love.

Every form of love is found within the family. Within the triple objective purpose, which encompasses the love between the four elements of the family, the number 12 is the result. (January 8, 1984)

The Triple Objective Purpose deals with the family. It does not apply to all the subject/object, to all the leader/follower relationships in the universe. Proper subject/object, leader/follower relationships bring order to the world. In love every member of the Four Position Foundation can interchange or switch positions of subject and object in love. Let’s call this fluid, horizontal relationships. Father Moon also teaches that every member has roles and responsibilities in different positions of authority that do not interchange or switch. Let’s call this static, vertical relationships of leadership. God is the Subject partner and the universe is the Object partner. God is the leader of the man and the man submits and obeys Heavenly Father’s commands. The wife submits and obeys her husband’s commands. And the children submit and obey their parent’s commands. The circular motion is that of the Object revolving, circulating, orbiting around the stable Subject. The Triple Objective Purpose in family relationships is about love, not authority.

### **NO SWITCHING OF AUTHORITY**

Father’s youngest son and heir, Hyung Jin Sean Moon, gave a powerful sermon (The Might of Heaven, March 1st, 2015, part 1) explaining how subject and object do not “switch” in authority. He teaches that subjects and objects such as husbands and wives never interchange in authority. He says that in the home of his father, Sun Myung Moon:

there is an absolute order. There’s a subject and an object. In our house Father makes the decision and we obey because we’re objects of his love. A

grandchild can go up to him and yank on his beard but that's only because it's in love. The Three Objective Purpose can only be done in love. It's not talking about switching of authority. It's talking about love. There is an order in the kingdom.

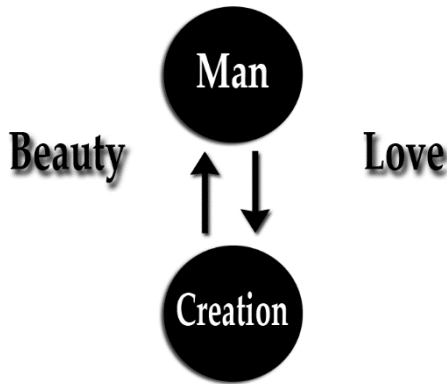
Father has a clear order. I can only go to him in love as his object. I can approach him. Sometimes I could be the subject of love. In that situation I'm a little baby and I'm just loving him so much that he's overwhelmed by that and he just says. "Wow! This baby is amazing." In that situation, yes, that baby can be the subject. That doesn't mean the baby is his king! It doesn't mean they can switch around. It's in love. And Mother is equal to Father in love and in value, but in authority there is a clear order.

### **LOVE & RESPECT**

In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father says, "A true family is a place where a husband and wife each love each other and live for the sake of the other, as if the spouse were his or her mother, father, or sibling. It is a place where the husband loves his wife as he loves God, and the wife respects her husband as she respects God."

### **THIRD BLESSING**

The Third Blessing is to have dominion over the earth. Dominion means a dominion of love. Centered on God, men and women would love creation. What does creation return? When we love and care for our home and car they return beauty.



When we love our dog or cat, they return beauty too. And, of course, when we love our family and friends, they radiate. God is the Lord of mankind, and God created men and women to be Lords of Creation. We reflect God directly, and creation is in the image of people and indirectly or symbolically reflects God.

### **CREATION REFLECTS MANKIND**

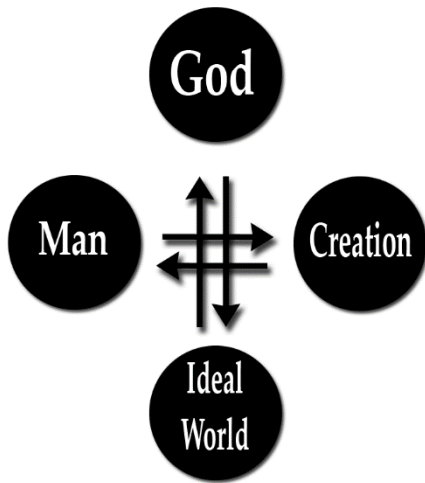
The creation reflects people in many ways. The earth resembles the human body: The earth's surface covered with plants compares with man's skin covered with hair; the earth's underground waterways compares with man's blood vessels, and the earth's molten core compares with the marrow within man's bones. Human beings and animals have similar body structures. People can imitate all animal sounds. Mankind and plants are similar too. Plant's leaves function like our lungs; xylem and phloem are like arteries and veins. Our bodies are made of minerals such as calcium and iron. Calcium is the fifth most common of the chemical elements in the earth's surface. The human skeleton is made of calcium which is one-fifth of our total body composition. The earth's surface is two-thirds water and our bodies are approximately two-thirds water. We feel joy when we see our reflection in a mirror or a photograph. Because creation reflects us, we receive joy in seeing nature.

### **IDEAL WORLD**

God wants mankind to live in perfect harmony with nature. In God's

ideal world there will be perfect ecology with our environment. Billions of people are supposed to use the resources of the earth to build a highly advanced technological civilization in which every person will have all their physical needs fulfilled. Sun Myung Moon says that we should “advocate bringing together material wealth and spiritual values; we value and emphasize both, not abandoning one for the other” (4-1-89).

God’s Third Blessing was for mankind to take dominion by building a beautiful paradise on earth—a world utopia—an ideal world.



“We are called to this sacred mission—the building of world peace. Our noble march shall begin today toward that glorious future. Let us build a true world of peace together with God” (*Textbook for World Peace*). God and mankind’s dream of world peace can finally come true because we have the ideology of the *Divine Principle* which will unite mankind into one loving family.

## **UTOPIA**

If there is a religion that God wants to see, it must have the clear purpose of fulfilling God's and humanity's desire. That religion alone will become the historically highest religion. We talk about a utopia or the ideal world, but what is it really? ... I want you to clearly understand the definition of the ideal world: it is the world in which people are intoxicated with true love and live in everlasting joy.

The Unification Movement has the clear goal of utopia centered upon God. The utopian religion is the Unification religion.

Don't ever think that utopia is something unreal or fantastic. Instead, we must convert the everyday things of life into the utopian way; you can only do that through love.

The Unification Movement is truly a historical religion and we are going to live the highest, most honorable career. That is the creation of the true utopian way of life. (11-1-1983)

## **KINGDOM OF GOD ON EARTH**

At Yankee Stadium in New York City on June 1, 1976 Sun Myung Moon proclaimed that God's dream is an "ideal world" and someday: "We shall all truly become brothers and sisters under one Father, God. This will be a world of love, a world of happiness. Our planet will be one home, and mankind will be one family. God's will, His long-cherished desire from the beginning of time will finally be fulfilled. This will be the eternal, ideal world of God. Indeed, it will be the Kingdom of God on earth."

What do we mean by the essence of love? The essence of love is not for just an individual but it is for the sake of the whole. For that reason, that essence is enjoyed and appreciated by everybody.

## **FIRST CAUSE IS GOD**

Who is the center of that essence of love? Human beings cannot be the center because we are created,

or resultant, beings. Therefore, there must be a causal existence and this being must be the cause of the universe, the cause of the entire creation, including humanity. That first cause is indeed God.

It is important to realize that when people speak of God, they often think of an entity which has nothing to do with themselves or their lives, but that is not the case, God is someone who is already entwined within you and you are within Him. Let's consider magnetism. The two poles of north and south are automatically related. We could say that they are entwined; they cannot be separated.

Human nature is such that we always desire a fuller relationship of love; we always want to go deeper and deeper into love. It is important to know how we can be harmonized with the essence of love in the universe. First of all, we must think of God as our subject. Each person is always in the position of object to God. What is the subject/object relationship centered upon? It is centered on love. Thus the essential relationship between God and man is that of the subject and object of love. The Parent/child relationship is the essential, universal relationship.

You enjoy saying, "God is my Father," because it sounds good. But I want to know, is God really your Father? A father touches and embraces his child when it is growing up. ...Actually, God is the closest being to you. He is the center and the essence of love and you are the fruit of that love, so there is an intimate closeness between you and God.

### **MIND MASTER OF BODY**

When you embrace the universe, you embrace yourself. What kind of self? The true self. When a person achieves that, his mind and his body are entirely harmonious and united. In that case, you will never put the desires of your body before the desires of your mind. Your mind will be the master of your body. When your mind is filled with true love, your body will be obedient to your mind. That was God's original ideal. The original God-given mind has the



tendency to embrace the universe, not to just search after selfish gain.

First you must become the kind of man or woman whose mind and body are united, centered upon God, and then you can embrace a person of the opposite sex with the same qualifications.

We are speaking of the textbook of love. What is a textbook? A textbook is a guide; anybody who follows the same guide or formula will achieve the same results. With the textbook of love, you will first of all embrace your family. What are the components of your family? First there are the grandparents and then the parents. Then there are the children, which is your position, and then the grandchildren.

### **FAMILY — CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE**

The question to ask is, do these four levels of couples belong to God? Are they God-centered or not? The family is the center of the universe; it is the building block and when you duplicate the building block, you build the world.

The family is the microcosm of the universe and the textbook of love for universal relationships. (2-5-84)

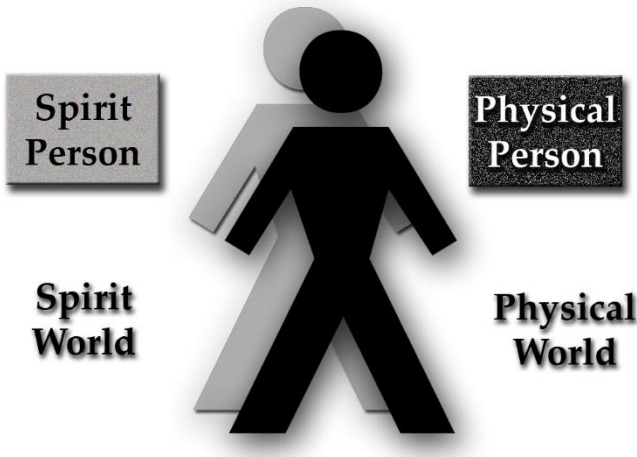
### **SPIRIT WORLD**

One of the deepest questions mankind has asked is: What happens to us after we die? Is there life after death? And if so, what is it like? The *Divine Principle* clearly reveals the answers to these questions. God's goal is for each person to live a perfect life of love and beauty, not only for eighty, ninety or a hundred years on this earth, but for eternity. After people die on earth God has prepared a spirit world for us to live in. Spirit world looks like this world with the only difference being that its environment with its trees, streams and mountains are even more beautiful than our physical world.

### **PHYSICAL BODY — SPIRIT BODY**

God created our physical bodies to die and become one with the earth. This is natural. Then how are we to get into the spirit world? We go there in our spirit body. Each person has two bodies—a

physical body and a spirit body. The *Bible* says, “And the dust returns to the earth as it was, and the spirit returns to God who gave it” (Ecclesiastes 12:7). And “It is sown a physical body, it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a physical body, there is also a spiritual body.” (I Corinthians 15:44)



### **LIFE BEGINS AT CONCEPTION**

Father Moon’s son, Hyung Jin Nim, says that he asked Father when life began. For many years those in his movement believed it was when a baby took a breath. Hyung Jin Nim says he asked Father about this and he said that was wrong. Life begins at conception. A person gains a spirit body then. So if a woman has a miscarriage she has created a person who lives in spirit world. He or she will be taken care of there and grow to adulthood in spirit world. Abortion is murder.

The author Raymond Moody has researched thousands of cases of people who had near death experiences and wrote a best-seller called *Life after Life*. On a talk show he told of an experience in a hospital of a woman who had been in an accident and taken to an emergency room. Doctors and nurses worked frantically to save her and finally brought her back from near death. When she awoke she explained how she had an out-of-the-body experience.

She said she saw them working to make her breathe again. Then she flew up to the roof of the hospital and saw a single red shoe. Then she came back and reentered her body. A surgeon happened to be in the room when she told this story. He was intrigued and had a maintenance man take him up to the roof. He went to the exact place she said the shoe was and sure enough there was the one, red shoe. This woman had traveled with her spirit body.

## **NEAR DEATH EXPERIENCES**

A pediatrician, Melvin Morse, studied many near death experiences of children. He did not believe in an after life when he began his studies. Now he believes. Critics of those who write of people who have had out-of-the-body experiences say that they are simply being fooled by chemicals in the brain, hallucinations from lack of oxygen or the effects of drugs given patients. Morse writes how he found in his research that this is not true. He has written several best sellers such as *Closer to the Light* and *Transformed by the Light*.

The moment we die our spirit bodies immediately enter spirit world. It is far greater than this world. There is no concept of space and time. There are no clocks. Travel is instantaneous. And we do not need to sleep. There is no concern for food and shelter as we have on earth. There is no death. There are no boundaries. No limit of movement. We can fly like a bird.

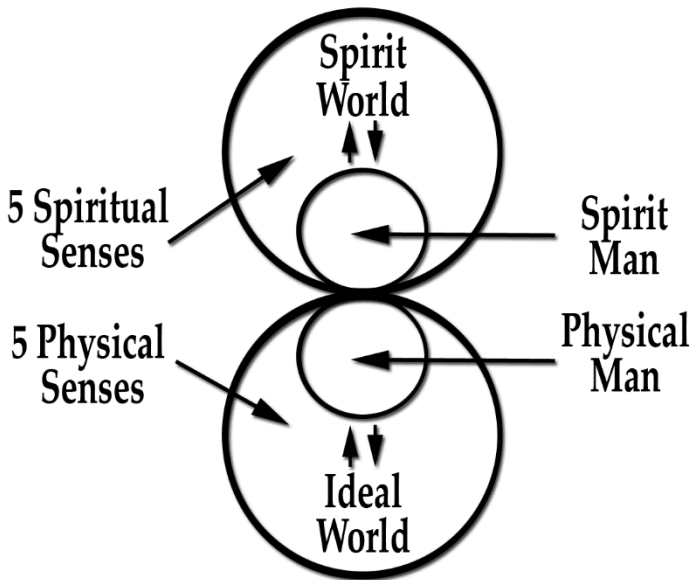
What do we do in spirit world? We spend time giving and receiving love from our spouse, our children, our families, our friends and from God. For eternity we grow in knowledge and our lives increase in excitement. Heaven is not a boring place. For eternity we are on an exciting journey. Spirit world is infinite, and we have eternity to explore it.

If it is so beautiful in spirit world then what is the purpose of living on earth? Although our life on earth is only a flicker of a second in length compared to our eternal life in the spirit world, how we live our life on earth is extremely important. Just as the womb of our mother was where we formed our physical body, this world is the womb for our spirit body that will live forever in spirit world. We

grow our spirit body by living in accordance with God's universal and absolute values.

### TEN SENSES

God has given every person five physical senses and five spiritual senses which makes a total of ten senses.



God created us with the ability while we are on earth to see, hear, taste, smell and touch not only this world but spirit world as well. Perfect people on earth would be the mediator between the two worlds. Their spiritual senses would function like that of a radio or television set. They could freely perceive the spirit world whenever they wanted just as a radio or television set can receive radio or television waves.

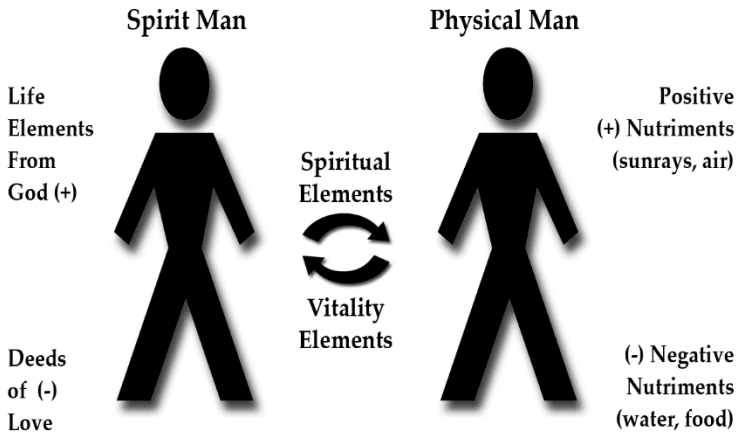
Because we have a spirit body when we are on earth, we could have a relationship with a person who has died and is living in the spirit world. A person on earth could shake hands with someone in the

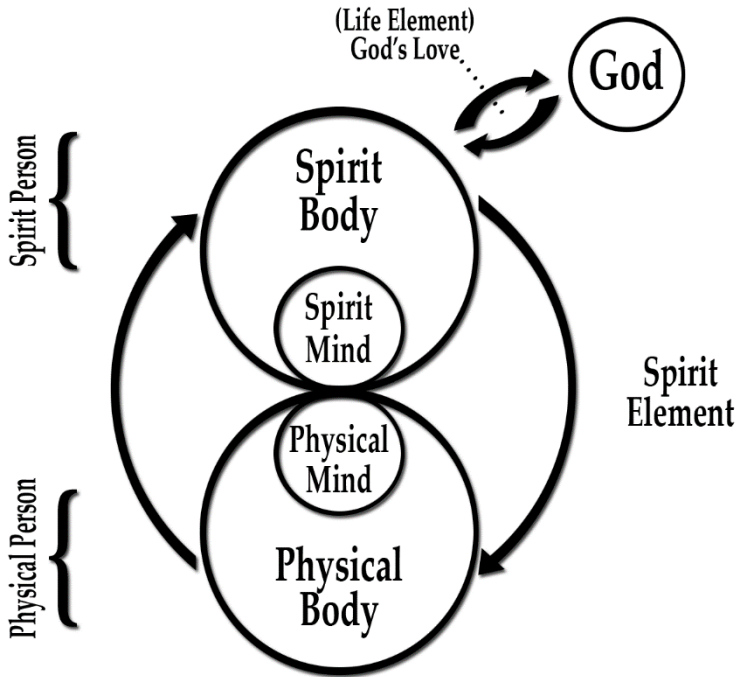
spirit world, and it would be just as real as shaking hands with anyone on earth. There would never be separation between people. For example, in God’s ideal world let’s say a married couple lived to old age and the husband died. He could still live with his wife on earth. He would stay with her and be just as real as when he had his physical body. They could still embrace—even sexually.

Father Moon reveals that people can only procreate on earth, “Here on earth you can multiply. Multiplication in the spirit world is not possible. Since there is no multiplication in spirit world, God wanted to see His people multiply here on earth. Each person would grow up and live in heaven on earth and then in spirit world.” (3-27-90)

**SPIRITUAL GROWTH**

Our physical bodies grow by receiving proper nutriments of air, light, water and food. Likewise, we grow spiritually by receiving spiritual nutriments of truth and love. When our physical bodies do deeds of true love then our spirit body receives vitality elements and grows. As our spirit grows, it gives spiritual elements to our physical body which is felt as spiritual joy or renewed energy.





God's plan is for each person to live his or her life on earth receiving love and truth from God and living a life of service. By the time each person physically died, he or she would enter spirit world having grown to moral perfection.

### THREE STAGES OF LIFE

There are three stages in our life: the nine months in the womb, our life on earth and our eternal life in the spirit world.

## *Three Stages of Life*

---

**Embryonic  
stage**

**(Liquid)**

**Terrestrial  
stage**

**(Air)**

**Spiritual  
stage**

**(Love)**

The first stage, the embryonic stage, is our first world where we live in a compact universe of liquid. In these nine months our lungs are prepared to breathe air, but we don't use the lungs until we leave the womb and enter life on earth. The second stage is the terrestrial stage. We breathe air and are to spend our time growing our love lungs to breathe in the spirit world that has no air. We breathe love there. The third stage is the spiritual stage in which we are spirit like God. It is the third and final stage. The first stage, in the womb, is a world of total darkness; the second stage, earth, is a world of half darkness and half light; the third stage, spirit world, is total light.

“In this physical world, we pass through three stages, the era of water, land and light, the world of sun. Centering on the sun's position, the galaxies are always there, but we cannot see them. We have night and day on earth, but the spirit world is always bright, there is no night. We have the eras of water, of air, of love. Love never stops, like sunlight. Love should flow constantly, day and night, pole to pole. That's spirit world. We travel from the world of water to the world of land, and eventually to the world of spirit. This final stage is the era of the sun. The mouth represents the era of water and the nose the era of land. You drink water with your mouth and inhale air with the nostrils. Your eyes deal with light from the sun.” (12-19-1999)

“Human life can be divided into three periods: life in the womb of about ten months, a physical life of about a hundred years, and life in the spirit world that lasts tens of thousands of years into eternity.” ... “If we look at our own faces, we also see three stages: the mouth, the nose and the eyes. These reflect the three periods of our lives. The mouth symbolizes the period in the womb, which is a world of material. The nose symbolizes the period on earth, which is the world of humanity. The eyes symbolize the period in heaven, which is the spirit world. ... To die means to move from a world of land, where we crawl and walk, to a world where we fly freely. We pass through death in order to become qualified travelers who, with love, can enjoy the entire universe. That is why death is, in reality, a new birth.” (member of Family Federation “The Path of Life For All Mankind” 1999):

What is the purpose of dying? We die in order to fulfill our craving to experience all the love of God, which is limited here on earth. In a way, physical death is the discarding of our clumsy physical bodies, these “vehicles” we have used on earth. God enjoys total freedom in the universe; so when He sees His children suffering from so many things here on the earth, He can hardly be happy about it. In God’s scheme of creation, “death” is another birth for man. We can achieve liberation from the shackles of our physical bodies and enjoy the kind of freedom God enjoys; so death is really a second birth.

The day the children were born was a day of joy and should be remembered by the parents. Why shouldn’t their day of second birth, which we call “death” now, be remembered with joy, as well, since they should be going on to the greatest freedom of all? Some of you might think my subject tonight is very deep and profound and even “weird”; you may wonder why I choose to talk about death on New Year’s Day. But I have a good reason to do so; to become men and women of true happiness here on earth, we shall be the people who have conquered the fear of death. ...

Once we are given total freedom, we can exercise dominion over the entire universe without any



restrictions. Does that interest you? Everybody is interested in total freedom, total joy, total love; but in order to achieve those things, we must do something before we die. Just simply death would not bring us freedom and joy. We've got to obey God's commandments while we are here on earth. Are you ready to obey God and His commandments to the letter, every iota?

The first law of God has to do with the dual nature of man—one of spirit and one of flesh: mind and body. Mind is subject and body is object. The body must obey the mind; that is a law, the principle. Are you interested in doing that?

Mankind is designed, according to God's creation, to live three distinct lives. The first life is the vegetation period within the mother's womb. When you are conceived, you begin to live a life within water. When you were in your mother's womb, did you desire to leave, or did you want to stay inside? It is natural for the baby to want to stay inside. The door for leaving the womb is very small; so when God tells the baby he has to leave through that door, he would probably say, "Oh, no, no! I can't do it!" In order to leave the mother's womb, an incredible amount of disorder, pressure, and even pain has to happen to the baby. If he recognized that, the baby would not want to go through with it. Until the very moment when the mother gives birth to him, no baby willingly comes out. When the mother gives the final push, reluctantly the baby comes out into the world and starts to cry.

In a way, the process of birth is equivalent to the process of death. It's fearful and unknown. When the baby is expelled from the womb, he has an umbilical cord still attached, through which he has been receiving nourishment. Of course, that cord has to be cut. This seems to be destructive, from the baby's point of view. Until then, he was receiving his breakfast, lunch, and dinner from that supply line. He might think, "Everything is miserable. Even my supply line has been cut off!" When God looks down at the crying baby,

would God feel sorry and cry with him, or wouldn't He smile very broadly?

It is the exact sort of transition from this world to the next world. We think that this is the only life there is; we cling to our little planet. But after a certain time, God knows that we are ready to go into the next world. As a natural consummation of our life, all men and women are supposed to be elevated to the same level of freedom which our Father in heaven can enjoy. That is, the freedom of having a spirit body.

The creation is designed so that parents and children can enjoy life together. The baby comes out of his mother's womb so that he can someday talk and play with his daddy and mommy and they can become a family. By the same token, we are given another birth where we can join with our eternal Father, God, and live with Him forever in the same realm. This has been the plan from the very beginning of creation.

Our life here is like being inside the womb. We need proper nutrition, we need to be healthy, and we need to live according to certain principles and rules of God. Consider the insect: first it is an egg, then a caterpillar, then a butterfly. Haven't you ever wondered why you can't fly, since even tiny insects can? Even the seeds of the dandelion have a little parachute that enables them to fly all over the place. Plants, birds, and insects can fly; what about us? We are supposed to be the supreme creatures of God, but we can't fly! Each of you must have felt like protesting to God, "Why do I always have to walk everywhere? Why didn't you make me capable of flying?" God's answer to you is very simple: "You will fly. All you have to do is wait a little while and you will fly better than any other creature. But while you are on the earth, you must use your time wisely. You are in the workshop of life, where you have to practice my rules."

Each of you wants to know what God's rules are, right? Someone might complain and ask if he can take his body with him to spirit world. That is like asking, "Can I drive my old, clumsy Volkswagen into spirit world?"

There is an insect called a cicada that makes a noise during the summer. For a while, it is encased inside a certain shell and surrounded by liquid. As long as the cicada refuses to break out of this cocoon, he is simply rejecting his wonderful future of flying around from tree to tree. We are encased inside a shell of flesh here on this earth, destined for a wonderful future. Before now, 1982, we have lived with a certain fear of death. But from now on, we can be free of that fear and understand what death really is. (1-1-82)

What kind of world is the spirit world? It is the eternal world. It has no air like ours on earth but its atmosphere is love. There people breathe the air of love. All human beings are meant to experience this. ... We start life in the watery atmosphere of our mother's womb where we receive oxygen and nourishment through the umbilical cord. However, even inside the mother's womb, lungs are developing for breathing air, which is the atmosphere of the next life. Do you follow? The unborn baby has a nose, but since the umbilical cord provides oxygen the nose doesn't function until birth. However, along with the lungs, the nose perfects its capacity to function within the mother's womb.

When the time of birth arrives, the baby experiences a revolutionary shakeup! The previous system for receiving oxygen and food—the umbilical cord—is cut and tied. Since the former existence is severed, as far as the baby is concerned it suffers a kind of death! The end of the world has come! All its previous environment—the placenta, the umbilical cord—is broken, and the fluid that surrounded the baby drains away.

But birth means entering a new womb — that of the universe. We are all living now in the universal mother's womb. In the previous life, we lived in a liquid atmosphere; here we breathe air. While surrounded by amniotic fluid, we were preparing for this present atmosphere. By the same token, while living in this universal mother's womb, we are breathing air but also we are developing our capacity for love. We are

preparing for one final stage.

Before birth, many of the baby's capabilities are latent; the nose and the lungs had developed, but they remained dormant. By the same token, the capacity to live in love, which we must nurture while we are on earth, remains dormant until we experience another birth. This new birth is a revolution like our first birth; it involves some destruction as well.

In the spirit world we don't need a physical body, a physical atmosphere, or physical clothes. There, we take off our shackles and see new horizons as our latent capacities begin to function. We put our ability to breathe love into action. In the sight of God, what people call death is actually a new birth and our entry into eternal life.

### **LOVE LUNGS**

To be able to live in that atmosphere of eternal love, we have to prepare our "love lungs" here. Thus in our short time here on earth, we must nurture our capacity to love and our sensitivity to it. Eventually, we will leave this universal physical womb and be born into the divine womb — the spirit world, the universe centered upon God. God exists at the core of love, so when we awaken into the new world, we too, can exist at the core of love. We can become the center of love.

When we are elevated to the sphere of God's divine love, we have total freedom. We can have a body if we like; or if we don't want a body, we don't have it — we can be like God and function exactly like Him. Love is an absolute prerequisite for this; without love we would choke to death there. Once we are the center of the universe, we can go to the realm of perfect resemblance to God. Ultimately, every person is entitled to be exactly like God; when we move into the divine realm, God is in us and we are in God; we are inseparable. ...

### **SACRIFICIAL LIFE**

Why must we be sacrificial? It's not an easy thing. There is no better way to develop our capacity to breathe the

atmosphere of love in the next world than by leading a sacrificial life. Sacrifice is the most dramatic and intensive way to complete the love lungs we need in the next world. (12-1-82)

“In our physical body, we are unable to follow God wherever He goes. It is only natural that we would aspire to resemble God. On His part, God also would want His sons and daughters to resemble Him. We must conclude, then, that God designed us to be born again into a body that enables us to resemble Him. God and human beings long for that eternal day when we can soar through the heavens together. The day we are born as beings who can take wing with God, the day we are born into that body, that is the day of our physical death. On that day we cast off the physical body like an old coat. Then, should we welcome death or fear death? The answer, of course, is that we should welcome death.

“For what purpose, then, should we die? We should die for the sake of God’s true love. That is the love whereby we seek to sacrifice ourselves for the benefit of others. We can conclude that the reason we cast off our physical body is so that we can participate in the realm of God’s work of love. We die for the sake of the world of God’s love.

“So, should we welcome death or fear death? The answer is, of course, that we shouldn’t fear death. For what purpose, then, should we die? We must die for the true love of God. This is the love we seek to sacrifice for the benefit of others. We can conclude that the reason we give up our physical bodies is so that we can participate in the sphere of God’s work of love. We die because of the world of God’s love.” (12-18-1998)

## **ETERNAL LOVE MAKING**

In God’s plan every person will eventually find their soul mate, their other half, and be married for eternity. In spirit world we can enjoy having sexual relations with our spouse forever. Father Moon teaches, “According to the ideal of love, all love relationships in the animal and plant kingdoms are for reproduction only. Human beings are the sole exception. Humankind enjoys freedom in the conjugal relationship of love. This is humanity’s special privilege

as the lord of all creation. God gave the blessing and infinite joy of love to His sons and daughters.” (4-16-96)

### **FAMILY IS THE SCHOOL OF LOVE**

We prepare our love lungs by giving and receiving love in the family that is our school of love. The four loves in the family are parental love—the love of parents for children; conjugal love—the love between husband and wife; filial love—the love of children for parents; and sibling love—the love between brothers and sisters.

**Parental  
Love**

**Parents**  $\longrightarrow$  **Children**  
The Love of Parents for Children

---

**Conjugal  
Love**

**Husband**  $\longleftrightarrow$  **Wife**  
The Love Between Husband and Wife

---

**Filial  
Love**

**Children**  $\longrightarrow$  **Parents**  
The Love of Children for Their Parents

---

**Sibling  
Love**

**Children**  $\longleftrightarrow$  **Children**  
The Love Between Brothers and Sisters

---

In Genesis we learn that God created us to be male and female. Every person is to have a soul mate and the two become one flesh. God said, “It is not good that the man should be alone” (Genesis 2:18). God’s plan is that marriages are eternal and every person will have an exciting time exploring love and the universe with their wife or husband. In the spirit world we will be like angels in the sense that we will not die. In Luke 20:36 we read, “We will be like the angels, for we will never die.”

## **OUR ULTIMATE GOAL**

Sun Myung Moon has traveled the Spirit World with his spirit body and teaches what it is like there. Here are some of his insights:

Mankind also grows through three stages. When you reach the spirit world you will realize why you had to live this way on earth. Our ultimate goal is to become like God — to become perfect like Him and become friends with Him. The fear of death can be eliminated because there is no more death. In the truest sense, death is a new birth! Those who try to deny the existence of spirit world are pitiful people.

Think of the launching of the Apollo and Columbia spacecraft. Once in orbit, they reach a zero gravity stage. They need no additional fuel to maintain their orbit because they meet no resistance at all. By the same token, once we are elevated into the spiritual plane of life, we will find no resistance. We will be able to travel throughout the entire universe in a moment, at the speed of thought.

If there is a star made out of diamonds, wouldn't you want to go see it? Perhaps there is a planet made out of gold and silver. These celestial bodies may be billions of light years away, so even by traveling at the speed of light you would not be able to reach them. But in the spiritual realm, you can go there on the spur of a moment by thinking you can be there instantly. So would you rather live here in this clumsy world for eternity, or upstairs?

I am eager to explore every corner of the cosmos. Given the physical distances of this universe, it might take many billions of light years, but in the spirit world everything is right in front of you. If you want to see something, it appears before you; you don't even have to wait! (12-1-82)

Do you think you have to worry in spirit world about three meals a day? Or perhaps you have to acquire lots of clothing and comfortable surroundings? How about housing? It's all there. You don't need to work on those things. In spirit world, you can surround yourself with lots of flowers if you wish. As long as you enjoy them and want them around, they will be there. But the moment you say, "I'm tired of flowers now," they will disappear because you don't want them anymore. Then if you feel like enjoying a great meal, all you

have to do is think about it and it will appear before you. How convenient that is!

When you live in that world, you don't have to worry at all about what to eat, what to wear and so forth, but you have to live there for eternity. That's a long time. How would you spend all that time? You've got to do something. In that world, the effort of everyone is concentrated on one thing: how to come closer to the love of God. The occupation every day, all day long is getting closer to God and receiving more of His love. How can you do that? You have to learn how to love the world and humanity here on earth. You must live with that kind of spirit so that you are already eligible to be the recipient of the love of God. Then His love will reach out for you. (1-11-87)

I talk about true love almost every chance I get. You don't know what the spirit world is like, so I am trying to teach and train you so you will be able to fit in there perfectly. In the spirit world, the atmosphere is that of love. If we don't know how to love, we suffocate; we go into hell. In the spirit world God is right at the center, and everyone is competing to get closer to Him. On earth we compete with each other and try very hard to accomplish things — but for what? What motivates people? Getting nearer to God is all we care about and strive for in the spirit world. (8-30-87)

We have learned in this first chapter of the *Divine Principle* that God's plan was for mankind to be a lovingly united, harmonious family living in peace and prosperity—a utopia, an ideal world. In the next chapter you will discover why we are not living in an ideal world.



## *Chapter 2*

# *The Fall of Man*

“God invested His entire heart in creating the universe, dreaming of this great and hopeful undertaking. However, when all the conditions for His great work, His life and ideas were destroyed at once, heaven and earth became totally dark.” (Sun Myung Moon – original *Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

The Divine Principle reveals how God’s dream of an ideal world was destroyed.

### **GENESIS**

The *Bible* begins by saying that God created Adam and Eve, the original parents of mankind. We learn in the first book of the *Bible*, Genesis, that they tragically fell away from God into ignorance. Many painters and writers such as John Milton in his classic *Paradise Lost* have moved us with their interpretation of what happened in the biblical story of the Garden of Eden.

### **THE FALL OF MAN**

All cultures provide some conception of the origin of evil, many of which are remarkably similar. Ancient Egyptian stories tell of a golden age which was lost by the “ancestress of woman” and of a serpent. In ancient Greek literature Pandora’s curiosity led her to release evil into the world.

The story of Adam and Eve in the *Bible* gives us the most information. What happened to Adam and Eve? In Genesis we read that after every time God created He said it was “good,” but when He created Adam and Eve it was “very good.” This is an understatement. God was delirious with excitement on the sixth day to see his precious children. Then we read that God placed “the tree

of life...in the midst of the garden and also the tree of knowledge of good and evil.” And then we read, “... the Lord God commanded the man, saying, ‘You may freely eat of every tree of the garden; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall die.’” Everything was good and pure. Adam and Eve “were both naked, and were not ashamed.”

Then tragedy strikes. A “subtle” serpent lies to Eve saying that she will not die if she eats the fruit. She sees “the tree was to be desired” and eats the fruit. She then gives the fruit to Adam who eats. They both then “knew they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons.” Then we read they then “hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden. But the Lord God called to the man, and said to him, ‘Where are you?’ And he said, ‘I heard the sound of thee in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.’”

God then says that the serpent who “beguiled” Eve was “cursed; upon your belly you shall go, and dust you shall eat all the days of your life.” And Adam and Eve were told their life would be a hard one now. God then drove them out of the garden and we read “at the east of the Garden of Eden He placed the cherubim (angel), and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life” (Gen. 3:24).

### **TREE OF LIFE — SYMBOLIC**

Much of this story is symbolic. The “Garden of Eden” is symbolic for the kingdom of heaven on earth. For a brief time only goodness existed on earth but since the Fall of Adam and Eve the Tree of Life has been barred from mankind. The Israelites in the Old Testament wrote of their desire for the Tree of Life. It is the ultimate hope of mankind. In the Book of Proverbs we read, “Hope deferred makes the heart sick, but a desire fulfilled is a tree of life” (Prov. 13:12). And in Revelation we read, “Blessed are those who wash their robes, that they may have the right to the tree of life and that they may enter the city by the gates” (Revelation 22:14). What is the Tree of Life? What are we missing that makes our “heart sick”? What is this “hope” that is being “deferred”? The *Bible* shows that attaining the Tree of Life will bring happiness. What is the essence of happiness? What Adam failed to achieve in the Garden of Eden was

perfection of character—the fulfillment of the First Blessing. The Tree of Life symbolized Adam who was to be the first person to achieve moral perfection.

What Adam and all people since him have sought is to grow out of their immaturity and become true adults. All adults since Adam fell have become adults only physically but remained spiritually, mentally, emotionally children. No one has ever grown up spiritually. Every person's innermost hope is to become a Tree of Life. We all have an original nature within us that desires to become a true man or a true woman.

Next to the Tree of Life stood the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Next to Adam stood Eve. Eve is the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. The fruit of the tree has often been interpreted as a literal fruit even though the *Bible* does not specify what kind of fruit. Michelangelo painted a tree depicting the Tree of Knowledge on the ceiling of the Sistine Chapel. He shows Eve eating what many think to be an apple and handing one to Adam.

### **NOT A LITERAL FRUIT**

But the fruit couldn't be a literal fruit such as an apple because God is our parent of love who would never put poisonous fruit in front of His children and simply tell them not to eat it. Sin does not come from eating food. The *Bible* says, "Not that which goes into the mouth defiles a man, but that which comes out of the mouth, his defiles a man" (Matt. 15:11). Some believe the "human fall was caused by the ingestion of a literal fruit, but that is ridiculous, because the original sin entails a problem of lineage." (8-9-98)

Fruit trees multiply through the seed contained in the fruit. Likewise, mankind was to multiply through Eve producing children. Eve was the fruit or seed of mankind. "The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil represents Eve's reproductive organ, and God gave the commandment to protect her chastity. When He created us, God invested His entire heart and soul in our reproductive organs. He created them as the palace of true love, the palace of true life, and the palace of true lineage. The story places the fruit in the context of good and evil in order to tell us that if Eve

were to have a relationship with a king, she would give birth to a prince, and if she were to have a relationship with a Mafioso, she would give birth to a villain. The quality of the harvest depends upon the seed that is planted. It was called the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil because it could manifest good or evil ... The commandment given in Genesis 2:17, 'You must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die,' was a strong warning about Eve's love. Eve had to protect her sexual purity until she achieved maturity with a God-centered character and entered into a blessed marriage with God's permission. Had she succeeded, she would have multiplied God's eternal love, life and lineage." (50 State tour America 2001)

"There are those who believe that God made the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and commanded Adam and Eve not to eat it in order to test their obedience to Him. We may ask: would the God of love test humans so mercilessly by a means that could cause their death? Adam and Eve knew they would die the moment they ate the fruit, for God had told them so. Yet still they ate it. Adam and Eve did not lack for food. They would not have risked their lives and disobeyed God only to obtain some delicacy. Therefore, we can surmise that the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil could not have been an ordinary fruit. Rather, it must have been something so extraordinarily stimulating that even the fear of death did not deter them from grasping it." (*Exposition of the Divine Principle*)

From the word "knowledge" in the phrase "Knowledge of good and evil" there is the word "knew" that is given a sexual meaning in the Bible such as in Genesis 4:1: "Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore Cain, saying, I have gotten a man with the help of the Lord."

The Bible uses plant metaphors to give sexual meanings:

How beautiful and pleasant you are,  
O loved one, with all your delights!  
Your stature is like a palm tree,  
and your breasts are like its clusters.

I say I will climb the palm tree  
and lay hold of its fruit.  
Oh may your breasts be like clusters of the vine,  
and the scent of your breath like apples,  
and your mouth like the best wine. (Song of Solomon 7:6-9)

The commandment by God to Adam and Eve was the same commandment that all parents should give their children, saying, “My children, you are young and immature. Some day you will marry and have children. If you have children now, you will not be mature enough to be good parents. You must first grow up and become adults before you have sex with another person. Sex now will hurt you, but sex when you are married will be the most holy, loving and meaningful part of your life.”

### **SNAKE IS SYMBOLIC**

We read that a snake tempted Eve. This too is symbolic. Only a spiritual being can know God. The snake symbolized an angel. Angels exist. It is fashionable in our secular society to doubt the existence of angels.

God created angels before He created Adam and Eve. He created them to be His helpers. He made angels to be in a position of objects and admirers. At every stage of the creation angels gave God stimulation, praise, comfort and joy as God poured out all His energy in the process of creating the universe and His children.

Genesis 1:26 states, “Let us make man in our own image, after our likeness.” God is speaking to the angels here. God had three archangels: Lucifer, Gabriel and Michael. Lucifer was the leader and assigned to directly be Adam and Eve’s teacher. Artists have portrayed angels with wings, and throughout history we have thought angels to be greater than man. This interpretation comes from Psalm 8. The King James Version of the *Bible* says man is a little lower than the angels. This is not true, and the Revised Standard Version is correct in translating the Hebrew to mean God, not angels. Angels are not greater than mankind.

The hierarchy is:



First Corinthians 6:3 says, “Do you not know that we are to judge the angels?” Another incorrect view held about angels is that they are sexless, neuter beings.

The angel closest to God was Lucifer. He knew that God was preparing this universe for His children. For millions of years Lucifer had been the center of love and now Adam and Eve were. Although God loved Lucifer as He always did, He obviously loved His children too. Lucifer was assigned to take care of Adam and Eve. By comparison, Lucifer felt he was loved less. This feeling would have disappeared when he would have received love from Adam and Eve when they reached perfection. Their love combined with God’s would have been a complete love. An analogy would be a foreman of a company who worked for the owner for 25 years from the very beginning and was close to the owner. The owner then focuses on his son. The foreman feels greater than the young son and misses being close to the owner who now is closer to his young son and who gives the company to his son to run. The proper thing to do is for the foreman to help the son. Fallen nature makes the foreman jealous and resentful for being in a servant position. Everyone has a position in relation to others, and we should not usurp that position.

To compensate, Lucifer turned to Adam and Eve. Since Lucifer was male, he was more attracted to Eve. Lucifer began to spend time alone with Eve. She was young and naive. Lucifer was older, a

teacher, and she was excited as Lucifer told her of how God and the angels led by him created this world. Eve admired and trusted him.

As Eve grew she became more beautiful. Lucifer became confused and in his hurt for feeling less love from God, began to hate God.

### **ORIGINAL SIN**

Lucifer was older and knew better but he seduced Eve. They had sexual intercourse. This union brought about the spiritual fall of man. The initial sin, the original sin that destroyed God's ideal was sex outside of marriage. The original sin was sex outside of God's order. "In the Garden of Eden, a woman rode on Lucifer. You have to know they had relationship for more than eight weeks, not just a couple of days, and therefore she came to receive the seed." (Hoon Dok Hae 6-25-2012)

### **SIN OF ILLICIT LOVE**

Could the Fall have been the result of eating the fruit of a tree? The Fall of Adam and Eve was an immoral sin against the ideal of the true love of God. The fact that Adam and Eve needed to obey the commandment shows that they fell in a stage of immaturity, that is to say, during their period of growth. The archangel, symbolized by a serpent, tempted Eve to eat of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, and she fell spiritually. She later tempted Adam, who was also too immature to eat of the fruit, and they then fell physically.

The only possible sin that could have been fatal in the garden of Eden, where Adam and Eve were in communication with God and living in joy, was the sin of illicit love. The first consummated love of the human ancestors, because it was supposed to have been the perfection of the love of God Himself, was to have marked the beginning of a celebration that would continue throughout history, filled with the never-ending intoxication of joy and blessing for God, Adam and Eve and the universe. It was

supposed to have been a joyous occasion through which the love, life and lineage of God would have been established within humankind.

By disobeying heavenly law, they established an immoral relationship as the basis for false love, false life and false lineage. As descendants of Adam and Eve, all human beings are born with original sin. The Fall gave rise to conflict between the mind and body within every person, thereby causing our societies to be filled with tainted love and with people who do things that contradict the desire of their original minds.” (4-16-1996)

### **YOUR FATHER THE DEVIL**

Jesus said, “You are of your father the devil, and your will is to do your father's desires.” (John 8:44) Since the Devil is identified as Satan,<sup>(Rev. 12:9)</sup> we can assert that human beings are descendants of Satan, the “ancient serpent” who tempted human beings. Through what circumstances did humankind become the descendants of the fallen angel, Satan? There was an illicit sexual relationship between the angel and the first ancestors. As the fruit of that relationship, all humanity is of the lineage of Satan. When St. Paul wrote, “we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies,”<sup>(Rom. 8:23)</sup> he was acknowledging that we fallen people stem from the lineage of Satan, not the lineage of God. John the Baptist reproached the people, calling them “a brood of vipers,”<sup>(Matt. 3:7)</sup> that is, children of Satan. Jesus said to the scribes and Pharisees, “You serpents, you brood of vipers, how are you to escape being sentenced to hell?”<sup>(Matt. 23:33)</sup> These verses affirm that we are the offspring of an illicit sexual relationship involving the angel and our first ancestors. This, in fact, lies at the heart of the human Fall.

The tree of the knowledge of good and evil was shown earlier to symbolize Eve. What does the fruit



of this tree represent? It signifies the love of Eve. As a tree multiplies by its fruit, Eve should have borne good children through her godly love. Instead, she bore evil children through her satanic love. Eve was created in an immature state; she was to reach full maturity only after going through a period of growth. Thus, it was possible for her to bear either good fruit or evil fruit through her love. This is why Eve's love is symbolized by the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and why Eve is symbolized by the tree.

What did eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil signify? When we eat something, we make it a part of ourselves. Eve was to have eaten the fruit of goodness by consummating her God-centered love. Then she would have received the essence of God's divinity and multiplied a good lineage. However, she ate of the fruit of evil by consummating her evil love centered on Satan. Hence, she received the essence of his evil nature and multiplied an evil lineage from which our sinful society descended. Accordingly, Eve's eating of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil denotes that she consummated a satanic love relationship with the angel which bound her in blood ties to him.

God cursed the fallen angel, saying, "upon your belly you shall go, and dust you shall eat all the days of your life." (Gen. 3:14) "Upon your belly you shall go" means that the angel would become a miserable being, unable to function properly or to perform its original service. To "eat dust" means that ever since the angel was thrown down from heaven, (Isa. 14:12) (Rev. 12:9) he has been deprived of life elements from God. Instead, he has had to subsist on evil elements gleaned from the sinful world. (*Exposition of the Divine Principle*)

Eve felt great fear and confusion when she realized she had disobeyed God. She felt cut off from God. Knowing that Adam was eventually to be her husband she thought she could get to God by being with him. She immediately went to Adam and seduced him. She hoped that in sex with Adam she could get rid of her fear and confusion. This sexual union between Adam and Eve was the physical fall of mankind. The first union between Lucifer and Eve was the spiritual fall. Eve could have been restored through Adam if Adam had not fallen with Eve. If he had not fallen he could have restored Eve and connected her with God. After Adam's fall no one could intercede with God on their behalf, and they were completely cut off from God.

### **COVERED LOWER PARTS**

After the Fall, Adam and Eve covered their lower parts. We hide what is wrong. If we say something wrong, we cover our mouth. If there is a scar on our body, we cover it with makeup or clothing. It is human nature to try to hide our defects. "A child caught stealing a cookie by his mother will instinctively hide his hands or cover his mouth. In the same way, if Adam and Eve had taken a piece of fruit and put it into their mouth, then they would have hidden their hands or covered their mouth when God called them. The fact that they hid their lower parts instead demonstrates that their crime was committed through the lower parts of their body. ... The fall of the first human ancestors allowed Satan to have grandchildren and prevented God from having this experience. ... Adam and Eve could not have a marriage ceremony blessed by God. Instead, they married under Satan's dominion. Doing so, they inherited Satan's lineage and multiplied descendants. For this reason, Jesus spoke so sharply when he pointed out that the devil Satan is the father of fallen humankind, 'You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desire.' (John 8:44) The Fall destroyed the eternal relationship of parent and child between God, on the one hand, and Adam and Eve, on the other. Therefore, Adam and Eve were unable to generate the love of true parents, true husband and wife, and true children. Because of this, God never had grandchildren of direct descent. Adam and Eve should have avoided the fall and reached completion, forming one mind and one body as true parents centering on God, their True Parent. Instead, they entered into a relationship with the enemy and found themselves in

a position with their body in total control of their mind.” (50 city tour America 2001)

We read in the *Bible* how arrogant Lucifer then became: “How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of Dawn! You said in your heart, I will ascend to heaven; above the stars of God I will set my throne on high; ... I will make myself like the Most High!” (Isaiah 14:12-14).

Lucifer is then called Satan, meaning in ancient Hebrew “the adversary.” He is compared in the *Bible* to a serpent because he is lowly and speaks with a forked tongue. A serpent’s tongue is split in two. This symbolizes a being that utters two different things with one tongue—a being who leads a double life. He appears good but is evil—a liar and a deceiver. The serpent is also a sexual symbol.

A serpent, like Satan, quietly strikes with surprise, speed and strength. Lucifer was cursed in Genesis to crawl upon his belly. This means he is cursed to be a miserable being not able to function properly. Dust is lowly. The curse that he had to “eat dust” means that he cannot receive elements of life from God but is condemned to receive evil vitality elements from the sinful world. Dust is a symbol of choking confusion and darkness. Lucifer created a world that is like a dust cloud. Everyone is blind, dirty and fighting for air.

Lucifer, now Satan, took many angels with him. We read, “And that great dragon was thrown down, that ancient serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him” (Revelation 12:9).

God’s plan was for Adam and Eve to grow up with Lucifer’s help. Then God would have blessed them in marriage. They would have had children and soon the whole world would have been filled with perfect people each talking to God directly and no angel’s love, which is weaker and lesser than man’s and God’s love, could ever upset God’s ideal.

How could Eve have a sexual relationship with the archangel Lucifer? We have five spiritual senses. Before the Fall, Eve's spiritual senses were completely open. Lucifer was as real as Adam. The *Bible* even tells of instances where angels have relationships with men. Angels came to Abraham's house and ate a meal with him (Gen. 18:8). An angel wrestled with Jacob (Gen. 32:25). Angels do not have wings, wear robes and play gold trumpets. They look like us. The *Bible* says that we should be hospitable to strangers because they may be angels, "Do not neglect to show hospitality to strangers, for thereby some have entertained angels unawares" (Heb. 13:2).

Human beings have a physical body and a spirit body. Angels have only a spirit body.

	<b>Physical Body</b>	<b>Spirit Body</b>
<b>Mankind</b>	<i>Yes</i>	<i>Yes</i>
<b>Angels</b>	<i>No</i>	<i>Yes</i>

Rev. Moon was asked if there are female angels. He answered: "Love is to start between human beings on earth. It is not allowed to start from the angelic world. So there is no love relationship among angels. Until now, the angels have been in a neutral position in terms of love affairs. This doesn't mean that the Archangel was neuter. He was masculine and could therefore tempt Eve. But in terms of love relations, they have been in a neutral position. When the restored angels have a perfect relationship of give and receive with God and become positive (plus), then the negative (minus) is to come about naturally. Whether this will be from the existing angelic world or from a new creation, we don't know." (1965 *Master Speaks*)

## **PETS**

In *1965 Master Speaks* we read that Sun Myung Moon was asked, “Will I be able to have animals in the spirit world?” He answered that animals do not go to spirit world but if you loved certain animals a “reflection” of them will be there: “If you love animals, you will have them in the spirit world. Your love toward Sheba will be reflected to the spirit world, and it will be created there as Sheba for yourself. It will be a reflection of your attachment. It will not be Sheba herself, but a reflection of your mind. But it will still please you.”

## **ROOT OF EVIL — IMMORAL SEX**

There is ample evidence today that the root of evil, the Fall, was an immoral sexual relationship. God created the sexual act of love as the most precious, holy and exciting expression of love in our lives. Yet throughout history the act of love has often been regarded as lowly and made a joke of.

The Israelites practiced circumcision which represents a kind of payment or indemnity—a symbolic restitution for the original sin of Adam and Eve. And sexual crimes have caused the downfall of great men and nations. The rampant immorality in the Roman Empire was one of the reasons it lost its spirit and fell.

The *Bible* teaches us that although it is necessary for man to multiply, for those who can, it is best to be celibate. This was to be an indemnity payment for the Fall and implies that marriage has not had the complete sanction of God. The *Bible* emphasizes not getting married. In First Corinthians 7:38 we read, “So that he who marries his betrothed does well; but he who refrains from marriage will do better.” Celibacy is encouraged because God’s ideal was lost due to the misuse of love. Because the Fall was premarital sex, Satan glorifies this. Today’s Hollywood stars routinely fornicate on and off the screen.

God created the universe. He is almighty. He created Lucifer, Adam and Eve. How could this tragedy have happened? God created a world of love, not regulations. God made the power of love the supreme force in the universe. Love, even non-principled love, is a

powerful force. Adam, Eve and Lucifer fell because of unprincipled love. God said they would die if they fell. Only love can drive man to give his life. God had created the world so that love would be greater than laws or commandments. God created the desire in each of us to preserve our life. Suicide is anti-God. Yet the force of love is greater than the fear of death. We have all heard of men who jumped to their death on grenades to save their fellow soldiers, and we have heard of parents giving their lives in trying to save their children from a burning home. The only force that could induce Eve to do as she did was love. Her emotions and intellect were immature, and she failed to guide them properly.

The power of love is testified to throughout literature and seen in all of history. Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet's love drove them to suicide. Hamlet's uncle killed his brother in order to marry his sister-in-law. And in modern history King Edward VIII of England abdicated the throne for the love of a woman. He told his nation he gave up his kingdom for "the woman I love."

Until man reaches perfection, it is possible to misdirect his love. God gave the commandment as protection to Adam and Eve. It was special guidance until they matured and fulfilled the First Blessing of being fruitful—of reaching individual perfection.

In the original *Cheon Seong Gyeong* we read:

The adulterer who deprived God of His ideal of love, which God intended to realize through Adam and Eve, as His external body, is indeed the devil, Satan. This may not sound familiar to you; however, this is the conclusion that I have gained as a result of searching throughout the spirit world in order to investigate the fundamental problems of the universe. That quest was a struggle in which I shed blood and tears.

\*\*\*\*\*

We fell into the realm of death. Just as God had said that the human ancestors would definitely die if they eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, all of humanity indeed fell into the realm of death. What happened as a result of the Fall? If we look at the Gospel of John 8:44, Jesus points out that Satan, the devil, became the father of humankind.

Adam and Eve, who should have attended God as their father, fell, and as a result they started attending Satan, the devil, as their father.

\*\*\*\*\*

The Fall of Adam and Eve was not just their Fall; it signified the Fall of all human history. In other words, Adam and Eve falling meant that they failed to become good parents, and became evil parents instead. Evil parents gave birth to evil children, and thus evil tribes, evil nations and the evil world were formed. The history that has been unfolding in this fallen realm is most certainly not a history of joy, but a history of sadness; and the human race is not one of happiness, but definitely one of sorrow.

It is an amazing thing that I clarified the fact that the Fall was a result of the misuse of love. My teaching is logically systematized and backed by historical facts, and therefore cannot be denied.

\*\*\*\*\*

If Adam and Eve had not eaten the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and perfected themselves, they would have become the son and daughter of the King who created heaven and earth. If they were the King's children, then who would their children be? They would be princes and princesses. This would be a foundation in the earthly

kingdom that would represent the Kingdom of Heaven. There would be only one kingship, not two.

### **WHY IS THERE EVIL?**

A fundamental question mankind has asked is—why does God allow for evil to exist? Why didn't He stop Eve from falling? If God cared for us why doesn't He, in His omnipotence, destroy Satan and end all the suffering in the world? Walter Lippman wrote, "The greatest of all perplexities in theology has been to reconcile the infinite goodness of God with His omnipotence. Nothing puts a greater strain upon the faith of the common man than the existence of utterly irrational suffering in the universe."

The critic Roy Basler, in analyzing William Blake's poem, "The Tyger" says, "Blake is speaking of good and evil. The orthodox Christian mythology does not encompass both extremes in deity, but does in man. The relegation of Satan to a secondary power, permitted to pursue evil by an absolute God who is thus responsible for the continuation of what He could at any moment terminate, is an anomaly which theology has rationalized but has never made wholly acceptable to human intelligence."

God is omniscient but not omnipotent. He saw what was happening between Lucifer, Eve and Adam. He didn't stop the Fall because He was powerless to stop them.

God's blueprint is an ideal world on earth and spirit world through the fulfillment of the three blessings of being fruitful, multiplying and having dominion. God's ideal can only be realized by man accomplishing these three blessings. God cannot achieve His goal alone, and man cannot achieve it alone. God's ideal world can only happen if God and man work together. We can call God's work: "God's portion of responsibility," and mankind's work: "Man's portion of responsibility."

God's P.O.R. + Man's P.O.R. = God's Ideal World

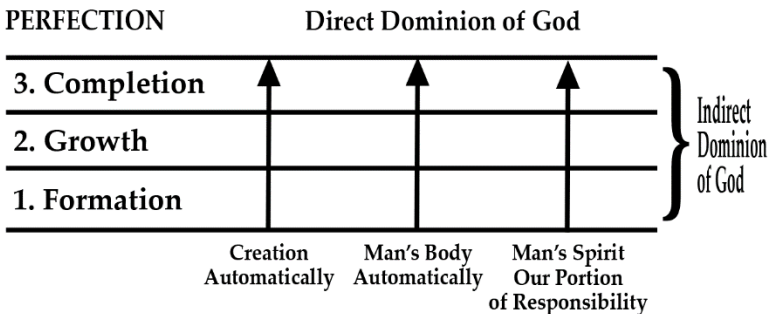
God always fulfills His portion of responsibility. He always gives 100% pure effort. Each of us has the responsibility to give 100% of



our effort too. The proportion of work to build the ideal world is heavily on God’s side compared to ours. He does the most—let’s say 95% and we do 5%. But even though God creates mankind and the universe and we have only to create ourselves and use the natural resources around us to build a beautiful ideal world, it still requires 100% of our effort.

God’s will is the building of the ideal world. God cannot accomplish His will without man’s voluntary cooperation. Adam and Eve were created in God’s image. This position has equal value to God. Adam and Eve had great responsibility. God did not intervene in the Fall because that would interfere with their portion of responsibility. “Although God is all-powerful, He will not set aside the eternal laws and principles that He Himself established.” (9-12-2005)

God created Adam and Eve and every person to grow through the growth period. While growing through the growth period, man is immature, and God cannot relate to him directly. When we have perfected our spirit and are one with God, then we move into the direct dominion and relate to God directly. Until man reaches perfection he is in the indirect dominion.



Adam and Eve were to directly relate to the angels—especially Lucifer as they grew up. During this time God communicated to them in simple terms. When they reached perfection then God would communicate to them fully. God is perfect and can only have a full and complete relationship with other perfect beings. Creation and man’s body automatically grow to perfection. Our spirit does

not. We each have special uniqueness and personality. We are given the mission to grow our unique spirit. If God didn't give us this responsibility we would simply be robots. God's position is like our position to our children. We cannot live their life for them. We cannot and have no desire to force them to be good and mature. We want them to voluntarily take responsibility for their own lives. We want them to grow up and be mature, independent responsible people. God therefore doesn't have total control over man. He gave us individuality. His ideal world can only happen when we voluntarily work with Him as partners.

## **FREEDOM**

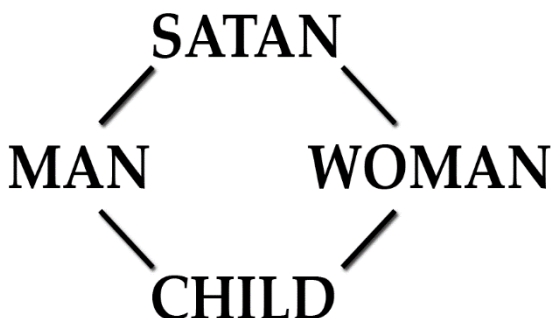
To be able to fulfill their responsibility God gave Adam and Eve the precious gift of freedom. Mankind was given freedom, but freedom comes with the responsibility to act within God's laws. We are free to violate the law of gravity by walking off a five-story building, but we immediately lose our freedom. And if we violate spiritual laws we lose our freedom and suffer also. Adam and Eve didn't fall because they had freedom, but because they submitted to the power of non-principled love that drove them to violate God's spiritual laws. Second Corinthians 3:17 says, "... where the spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom." There is no freedom in chaos. God created normal boundaries of morality, and Adam and Eve were to show self-discipline and live within the laws of the universe.

They misused their freedom. It is our responsibility to forgive them and do better than our original parents did. They didn't center their lives on God but on themselves. God is hoping that we will live within his spiritual laws. Each of us has the freedom to sin or not to.

Due to the Fall this world became a world of relative social and political freedom. Throughout human history mankind has lived in societies with different levels of freedom. Until there is an ideal world, people are going to fight for freedom. Many times in battles for freedom, both violent and nonviolent, God is behind one side and Satan is on the other. Later chapters of the *Divine Principle* will give examples in human history.

Freedom was God's highest gift to man. God desired Adam and Eve to love him voluntarily and would not use force to make them serve him. A flower has no alternative but to turn towards the sun. God gave man alternatives. Man chose to live outside of God's laws and the illicit love of Lucifer shattered the true freedom of man. Ever since then mankind has lived under Satan's bondage. God did not intervene in the Fall because that would cancel human dignity, responsibility and freedom.

The consequences of the Fall were catastrophic. Satan took God's position in the Four Positions of the family unit.



The world is ruled by false "love." Satan is the "god of this world" (II Cor. 4:4). The existence of Satan and the belief in negative spiritual forces influencing our lives has been unpopular to modern educated Western people. This is a recent belief in human history. Western man is naive today and focuses on the temporal, the material, the human rather than the eternal, the spiritual, the divine.

### **SATAN**

Satan is not the folklore being who has horns and a tail. He looks like a human being. And many who have walked a spiritual path will testify to the immense special temptations, obstructions and satanic forces they have to encounter as they seek to live God's way of life.

God and our heart tell us we cannot say seriously or humorously “the devil made me do it.” Ultimately we each have the responsibility to not make a connection with Satan.

Lucifer is a spiritual being, and the act of sex between him and Eve couldn't produce children. Adam and Eve, however, had children. They became parents before they were ready. In the midst of the confusion and fear introduced by Lucifer, they had to raise their children.

Adam and Eve couldn't pass down God's standard of living but passed down confusion and fear to all their descendants. This terrible misuse of love in the Garden of Eden blossomed into many types of unordered “love” such as fornication (premarital sex), adultery (extramarital sex), prostitution, incest, pornography and homosexuality.

These acts of impure, unprincipled love has caused such agony as divorce, separation, VD, AIDS, mental illness and destroyed homes and careers. We reap what we sow. Immoral sexual behavior has broken countless hearts and countless bodies.

## **PAIRS**

Polarity is God's way. Knowing this principle we can see how satanic polygamy is. Plural marriages are Satan's invention. The Old Testament patriarchs and Joseph Smith, the founder of Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (also called the Mormons) received incorrect revelations from fallen angelic spirit world. God is logical. It is just common sense that polygamy is wrong because God created mankind to have equal numbers of men and women. Each person is to have just one mate.

Homosexuality is also unnatural. Each person is destined to be complimented with one person of the opposite sex and to have children. This reflects God. In homosexuality the body parts don't fit, and the universe is not mathematically balanced with homosexuality and polygamy.

All these things are abnormal and against spiritual law. These lifestyles cannot bring complete happiness. God loves the sinner and those who do not meet God's standards, but he hates the sin and behavior that is not totally godly. Some day all these perversions and low standard behaviors will fade away and every person on earth and in spirit world will be paired up to their spouse and live together eternally. It is not God's plan for anyone to be single his or her whole life. Everyone is to marry.

## **PAIR SYSTEM**

The beauty of the universe is the pair system.

When you know that God made everything in the pair system, that God Himself is the subject looking for His object, and all of the universe is the object to man, then you know that all things are created for you. You know also that the central spirit behind it all is love. (2-1-81)

Our mind and body are a pair system. (2-1-81)

Therefore, the greatest feature which God employed within His creation was the pair system. You want to be a part of a pair yourself. This concept came from your Creator. All the aspects of a human being are in the pair system just as all the aspects of the universe are in the pair system.

Love only functions in the pair system because it requires a subject and object relationship. Male and female, plus and minus—the whole creation is organized like that. The ideal is for the lower pairs of life forms to serve and support the higher pairs, reaching higher and higher all the way to the top. Ultimately there is God and right below God, human beings. Why do we exist? It is in order to reach out and fulfill greater love. Each lower form of creation is reaching out for greater love, moving upward all the way to human beings. Then human beings can reach for greater love by going to God Himself.

When the lower elements are absorbed by the higher, it brings fulfillment to the lower elements. (1-11-87)

### **HOMOSEXUALITY UNPRINCIPLED**

All men and women are supposed to get married. We all think about marriage, isn't that true? I hear that in America there are many men living as if married with other men and women with other women. Do you think this is normal and acceptable? Why not? It is not right because it is not parallel with the laws of nature and the universe. When you look at all forms of creation, whether plant or animal, everything exists in the reciprocal relationship between subject and object. God created two aspects or poles in everything and mankind is no exception to that system. Even plants have male and female flowers.

Why do subject and object need each other? Why is the pair system mandatory? Truth is very simple: without a pair system, nothing could survive for long here on earth. If there were no male and female, all the animals and plants would have become extinct a long time ago. Adam and Eve would not have had any generations after them, so you certainly would not be here! The creation is deeply motivated toward one goal—its own survival.

God wants us to leave good seeds and good generations behind us. In order to do that you need a good spouse. Anyone who wants a good spouse is reflecting the basic nature of all creation, and there is nothing wrong with that. Even more than one's own survival, we want to leave behind us an improved species. This is the way God created us.

### **UNIVERSAL RULE**

In God's world, there is absolutely no such thing as homosexuality. This is the most obvious and blatant violation of the universal rule. Are men and women separate and distinct from one another for the sake of fighting against each another? No, man is made for

woman and woman is made for man, each with their own particular characteristics. Those characteristics exist for the purpose of aiding in harmony and unity between man and woman and allowing them to achieve True Love. When you violate that basic principle, you have to pay a most incredible price. The nation, the people have to pay as well.

### **FORMULA OF GOD'S CREATION**

No matter how many millions of years may go by within this universe, human beings will continue to be ruled by this basic principle. Men are born to fulfill the purpose of a man, while women are born to fulfill the purpose of a woman. No matter how old a person may be, whether he is a grandfather, or a great-grandfather, it doesn't matter. The *Principle* cannot be changed. It is always the same. Men were made for women, and women were made for men, and their purpose is to become united in love. The perverted way of life, if followed, could virtually extinguish the human race. When people are espousing and following the way of homosexuality and lesbianism, as well as heterosexual "free sex," what is the difference between them and the animals? When human beings live like that, how can they take their position as masters over the creation? Human beings are God's supreme creatures simply because God created us to be the supreme recipients of His True Love. You understand the formula of God's creation, don't you? (6-20-82)

Universal law pushes a child to seek out his mother or father when he gets lonely; when people grow up, they naturally seek the opposite sex for companionship. This is the natural way for remedying loneliness. However, this world is not natural and the perversion of homosexuality exists. This is a destructive force that violates universal law. The simple proof of its destructiveness is clear when you consider what would happen if everyone in the world were to live as homosexuals for one century.

All humanity would simply cease to exist! Homosexuality is a satanic force which is exactly opposite universal law. It brings destruction rather than creation. (9-19-82)

What man absolutely needs is a woman. A woman needs, more than anything, her spouse, a man. There is no other substitute, no comparable treasure. Why? It is because man and woman are completed by becoming one.

Women are born for the sake of men. It is deceptively simple. It is universal truth. And for what are men born? Women. That makes you feel warm and good. If you say man was born for man and women for women, it makes you feel cold and chilly.

Can two pluses attract? No, they repel. (4-18-93)

Because the motivation of Adam and Eve was a mixture of good and evil we can see the mixture of good and evil “love” in society. All parents have a good side and yet every parent is ultimately incompetent to teach by word and example absolute moral values to their children. Parents have different levels of relative standards and all are ignorant of God’s principle of absolute love.

### **FALLEN NATURE**

Because of the Fall, mankind lost its original nature and gained a fallen nature which has four major aspects.

First, Lucifer didn’t see Adam and Eve from God’s point of view so fallen people generally do not see from God’s point of view. This is why saints and heroes are often misunderstood and persecuted.

Second, Lucifer left the position God gave him, consequently people in this world frequently don’t live up to their positions and disregard their obligations and responsibilities. An example would be a parent who leaves his small child to go to a bar to drink.

Third, we desire to dominate others. Lucifer reversed the order of dominion. He was to be ruled by Eve. But he dominated her. Eve’s



role was to be under Adam's dominion, but she dominated him. The Fall is the origin for all the disorder and oppression we see in the fallen world.

The fourth aspect of fallen nature is multiplication of sin. Eve multiplied her crime by seducing Adam. Adam multiplied sin by uniting with Eve. In the Fallen world people often seduce others to sin. Fallen nature always seeks to share guilt and multiply bad actions.

Adam and Eve's original mind of goodness, i.e., conscience, was not destroyed. Everyone is born basically good with a deep desire to return to God. But we have a fallen, sinful nature that wars with our original nature. Every person suffers from this conflict of good and evil. Every human being is a sinner. The *Bible* says, "all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God" (Rom. 3:23) and "If we say we have not sinned, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us" (I John 1:8).

The original sin in the Garden of Eden corrupted the entire human race. There are different analogies to illustrate how a single event could cause so much damage. The obvious one is one single incestuous or adulterous act. It devastates a family and a marriage. A single puncture of the eye can cause blindness. One severe psychic shock can influence a person's entire life. Contamination of one water supply source can affect an entire city.

## **SIN**

Sin is a transgression of divine law. God is lawful and principled. When we sin we have give and receive with Satan. Because of the Fall each of us has four sins we must eventually liquidate.

## **FOUR SINS**

The first is (1) "Original sin" We must discipline our sexual drive and do the opposite of Adam and Eve.

(2) "Inherited sin" is the sins which were committed by our immediate ancestors and it is up to us to pay restitution. The Ten Commandments say that the sin of parents is conveyed through

several generations. We read in Exodus 20:5 that God visits “the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and the fourth generation.” This is the reason why some people and families may have to suffer more than others. They may have to make up for the sins of their ancestors.

(3) “Collective sin” is the sin for which a particular group or even a whole nation must take responsibility for. An example of this is when the nation of America paid for its sin of bringing slavery into America by having a civil war.

(4) “Individual sin” is the sins we commit ourselves.

If we were not sinners, but one with God, there would be no need (as so many do today) to be artificially intoxicated with alcohol, drugs and promiscuity. Give and receive with God brings strength of character and exhilarating happiness.

A world of perfection would be an incredibly pure and sensitive society. It would be like one human body. If we hurt our finger or pull one hair out of our head our whole body feels it. So in the ideal world if anyone would feel harm everyone would feel it. Therefore, the whole body of mankind would be alert to keep every individual member from destruction or harm.

In an ideal world people and creation would be in harmony. Nature, which is perfect, suffers because it has been ruled by imperfect people. Romans 8:19 says, “For the creation waits with eager longing for the revealing of the Sons of God.”

We are faced with incredible ecological problems such as the burning of the Amazon rain forest, water pollution, and worldwide massive erosion of the earth’s topsoil. The only solution to solving these problems as well as all other problems is to focus on teaching an understanding of God and Satan to people. Satan is the root cause of our problems, and it is crucial that we focus on exposing and eliminating Satan from this earth.

## **DEATH**

God told Adam and Eve that if they ate of the fruit they would die. They ate the fruit, but they lived for many years afterwards. God did not mean they would physically die if they disobeyed Him or that physical death would be introduced into the world, but they would lose contact with God. God is the source of truth and love and life. We have lost God and mankind has been living in darkness. Our conscience gropes for truth and true love.

First John 3:14 says, "... He who does not love remains in death." Love here means God's love. We do not love as God does so we are dead, no matter how active we may be on this earth. In Romans 6:23 we read, "The wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life," and Romans 8:6: "To set the mind on the flesh is death, but to set the mind on the spirit is life and peace."

## **ALL DIE**

First Corinthians 15:22 says, "... in Adam all die..." Psalm 43:1-2 speaks of this search for God and life. The word "hart" in the first verse is the word for a young deer: "As a hart longs for flowing streams, so longs my soul for thee, O God. My soul thirsts for God, the living God. When shall I come and behold the face of God? My tears have been my food day and night."

## **GOD GRIEVED**

God was devastated to see His children spiritually die. In Genesis 6:6 we read with great understatement: "And the Lord was sorry that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved Him to his heart." It is agony beyond words for God to see us blinded. God is calling to us, but our spiritual senses are paralyzed, and we can't hear Him. When God called for Adam in the Garden of Eden saying, "Where are you?" God knew where Adam was physically. It was really a cry, "Where are you, my son, spiritually?" God is like a parent who has a son who lost his memory. We have become paralyzed to God, and there is no joy in God's heart.

Adam and Eve defiled true love during their time of growth. They fell away from God's *Principle* by having sexual relations and creating children before

they reached maturity in true love.

Human history thus began with Adam and Eve's lack of faith in God, their loving Parent, and their ultimate submission to Satan. By this action they became a false husband and false wife, and false parents. Our inheritance from the original family includes their legacy of corruption, conflict and suffering. This legacy has nothing to do with God's ideal of creation. We cannot imagine how God's Heart is broken! (8-31-96)

### **BLAME GOD**

Because every person has been profoundly ignorant of God, most people do not see that Satan is behind the tragedies everyone goes through. Often people blame God for being cruel—for being the source of evil and ignorance. When someone young dies of cancer or some accident, we say "God, how could you do such a thing?" But it wasn't God who killed the child. It isn't God who breaks our hearts.

From the very beginning mankind has been dominated by Satan. We read in the *Bible* that Satan is the "ruler of this world" (John 12:31). Satan is the "god of this world" (II Cor. 4:4). John 8:44 says, "You are of your father the devil, and your will is to do your father's desires. He was a murderer from the beginning, and has nothing to do with the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks according to his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies." Satan has turned the earth into one big concentration camp. Human history is about billions of people living in a death camp run by a sadistic monster. God has had to watch His children being massacred in this nightmare chamber of horrors.

### **ABUSE OF LOVE**

#### **CAUSE AND EFFECT**

The law of cause and effect is clearly evident in history. Whatever you have sown, you will surely reap. Adam and Eve, the first human ancestors, engaged in sexual immorality and the abuse of love

while they were still growing. This was the fall of man. God wanted them to grow in purity until He blessed them in heavenly matrimony, becoming the foundation of God's true love, true life and true blood lineage. Humanity, descending from this perfected and blessed Adam and Eve would naturally become the sons and daughters of God, enjoying the love of the Creator and living in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world.

However, before Adam and Eve matured and received the blessing from God, while they were still teenagers, the archangel tempted Eve and engaged in fornication with her. In this way, the archangel became Satan. By engaging in relations with fallen Eve, Adam also fell. This is how the beginning of human history was sown. Today, we are reaping the consequences: Immorality is rampant. Teenagers in particular are the victims of widespread sexual degradation. Modern society in the advanced nations is little different from Sodom and Gomorrah of biblical times. God abhors this immoral behavior. We must fear the wrath of God. His punishment is imminent. (April 10, 1990)

### **KINGDOM OF HELL**

We are living in the Kingdom of Hell. Mankind has become orphans tortured by a terrible foster parent. Satan has sadistically abused and murdered mankind with an endless list of tortures.

Then, what is evil? Evil is the emergence of selfishness into this world. God's principle of unselfish giving was twisted into an ungodly principle of selfish taking. The ungodly position of desiring to be served rather than to serve was thereby established. The origin of evil is Satan. He was in the position to serve God, but instead he posed as another god and subjugated man for his own benefit. God is the absolute positive force in this universe. Then Satan posed as another positive force. Two positives naturally repel each other. Satan is a fallen archangel.

He left his position as faithful servant to God and man, and he challenged and competed with God. His motivation was selfishness. Out of his selfishness comes the origin of evil and sin.

What happened is this: Eve fell from her position as God's first daughter, becoming the first victim of Satan and transforming herself into a creature of selfishness. Together Eve and Satan then successfully brought Adam into their selfish world. By this tragic event, God was isolated by man in the garden of Eden. Human history started on the wrong footing, without God. The foundation for the evil history of man was laid, and Satan was established as the ruler of this world. Selfishness came into being at the beginning of human history, and now our world is rampant with killing, lying, and stealing. All of these actions in the evil world are motivated by selfishness. Evil subjugates others for its own benefit, while good sacrifices itself for the benefit of others. (10-20-73)

What is the fall of man? The fall of man is nothing more than to transform yourself into the realm of death, to be transformed from life to death. Jesus said, "Leave the dead to bury their own dead." How you live here on earth makes a difference. You think you are alive, but in God's eyes you are dead. Human history began with this history of death. That was the beginning. Adam and Eve went to hell at the very beginning. Succeeding generations have been destined to hell. That is the very sad commentary on human history.

What is hell? Hell is nothing more than a human trash can. Where do we live here on earth right now? In a living hell, created by us. All of us are suffering from internal diseases. What are those diseases? Those diseases are inheriting satanic lineage and being bound to satanic sovereignty. We are the victims of satanic slavery, which God hates most. We are the fruit of Satan's love instead of the fruit of the

love of God, and God abhors this situation the most. Because of illicit or false love, the human race has been brought down to the very bottom, the very pits of hell. The question is how are we to recover and restore humankind to the shining heavenly realm. This is the work of salvation. How can this salvation take place in a world of satanic love? Salvation is the opposite of the fall. It will be done centering upon the love of God.

### **Body Should Obey the Mind**

What is the difference between Satan's love and God's love? Satanic love made our bodies the master, trampling upon the mind and making it the servant of the body. If the mind becomes the servant and the body becomes the master, performing atrocities to the mind, this is slavery of the mind under the body. This is the fallen state. Actually the mind should be the master over the body. The body should obey the mind, but this is opposite now because Satan made it opposite and so the mind is trampled by the body. How painful is this life!

### **Purpose of Religion**

What about yourself? When you look at yourself, what do you think? Is your mind controlling your body or is your body controlling your mind? What do you think in your case? In a way we all are struggling within ourselves. All the good works of the saints and the religions have served to strengthen the mind so that the mind could occupy the original position, subjugating the body. Then the body becomes obedient to the mind and a harmony between the mind and body is created thus bringing a true happiness to life. That is the purpose of the teaching of the saints. That is the purpose of religion. The work of religions is what? Religion is to boost the strength of the mind, to energize the mind so that the mind becomes strong enough to subjugate the body. This is the basic work of religion, regardless of the

name of the religion. All the major good religions of the world have been working for that one single goal. If this is the purpose of religion, then all good religions have to have something in common. The common point is that all religions try to suppress the body, even torment the body so it does not become the strong master of the mind. Therefore, all major, high religions go against the cravings of the body. Whatever the body wants religion says, "No." Whatever the body aspires to, religion says, "No."

In a way the *Bible* appears to have many contradictory statements. For example, Jesus said, "Those who seek to gain their life will lose it. Those who lose their life for my sake will find it." In a way it is contradictory to say that if you are trying to live, you will die. If you try to die, you will live. So, what is this particular statement really saying? "You are going to lose your life," means lose your body for the sake of the direction of the mind. Then what will you find? You will find life.

But why should I torment my own body? Because my body has become the stage of Satan. Satan always uses the body being arrogant, showing off saying, "I am the one; I am supreme. I am number one." That arrogance is demonstrated through the body. That is Satan's way of life. Furthermore, American life is pursuing artificial intoxication. For example, what is alcohol all about? Intoxication of oneself. What is the drug-culture? Intoxicating ourselves. There are so many ways in America that people are trying to artificially intoxicate themselves and live artificial lives. Another example is tobacco, smoking. Why do people do this? It is a way of intoxicating oneself. It is another example.

### **True Religion**

The external environment enhances the desires of the body and its cravings. Alcohol, drugs, smoking and sexual abuse are the vainglorious activities of the body. There is pressure to forget about the mind; the body comes first. Meet the body's desires.



Our society is the realm of death. Who then shall conquer the realm of death and bring it to life? The only hope lies with the appearance of a true religion and a leader of that religion. This is the only hope for the transformation of society from the realm of death to the realm of life.

### **Give Up Bad Habits**

So you Unification Church members, you gave up your past bad habits: smoking, alcohol, free sex, drinking, drugs; you gave up everything. What fun do you need? What poor guys you are!

### **Unification Brings True Love**

So when we say “Unification Church”, what are we going to unite? What are we going to bring into unification? Unification of mind and body, unification of families, people, nations, and ultimately between God and man. What shall we achieve by bringing God and man into one? Why should we do that? By bringing unity between God and man the world will see the visiting of true love; true love coming from God to the world, the nation, the clan and to your family and yourself. True love will come and settle in your home, in the place of original settlement. (2-20-91)

By the fall, man was brought under the false fatherhood of Satan. Man changed fathers. We left our true father, God, and united with the false father, Satan. The first man and woman became the children of Satan. Under the false fatherhood of Satan, Adam and Eve united unlawfully as a couple without God’s blessing or permission. And when they multiplied children, they all came under the same false father. They were all born as the children of sin, not the children of God. Therefore, the multiplication of sinful children from one generation to another has brought about this fallen, sinful world.

Because God is not at the center, this is a world of sin, a world of mistrust, a world of crime, a world of war. And we, the nations and societies of this

world can destroy each other and feel no pain. This is the kingdom of hell on earth.

The master of this world, indeed, is not God, but Satan. This is why John 12:31 indicates that Satan is the ruler of this world. We know this universe was created by God. We know God created us. But God is no longer the master, because people changed masters. Man betrayed God and united with a false master, Satan. This Satan became the father of mankind.

The fall of man has brought great grief to the heart of our Heavenly Father. God lost everything when His people turned against Him. That is why we read in Genesis, "The Lord was sorry that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him to his heart." (Gen. 6:6)

God was grieved because the exact opposite of His will had become the reality. If God's intention had been fulfilled, He would have been joyful. If the consequences of the fall were the result of God's own plan, why should God be grieved to His heart? Why would He have been sorry that He had made us? (9-18-74)

## **SORROWFUL GOD**

How sorrowful God was when Adam and Eve committed the Fall and sank away from Him! They were to have been the ideal partners for God, who embodies the pure essence of love. God's sorrow exceeded that of any person. He grieved so very deeply. The deeper and greater the value of what was lost, the deeper the sorrow. This is the situation of God, who has pursued the way of restoration for His lost children.

Can you imagine how profoundly God's heart was broken at the death of Adam, who was to establish an everlasting family and accomplish God's great

endeavor of Creation? How would He feel that everything had gone wrong in the way it did? Even after six thousand years, God has not recovered from the shock of Adam and Eve's Fall.

Can you imagine how much it breaks God's heart to observe human misery every hour of every day? What happened to God's dignity when His son and daughter, whom He intended to glorify as prince and princess, became cripples, fell into a dung pit, and were stuck upside down in hell?

Human beings today are not God's children. No matter how much God weeps, we pretend not to see His tears. No matter how sorrowful He is, we pretend not to see. This is because the human race springs from the flesh and blood of Satan.

You should know that for tens of thousands of years, even millions of years, God has cried out for us, "My son and my daughter!" Have you ever ardently called out to God, "Father!" until your throat becomes hoarse and your tongue dry, until you cannot breathe and your eyes cannot open? How earnestly have you struggled to embrace that standard, which is that of the Subject of life? Your character is measured in proportion to your efforts to do this. (original Cheon Seong Gyeong pp. 138-140)

### **LINEAGE**

Do you know what has pained God's heart the most, causing Him the greatest grief over the long history since the Fall of Adam and Eve? God lost His lineage. And with the loss of His lineage, He lost His right of ownership. Let me talk about lineage for a moment. Lineage is more important than life, and more important than love. Life and love come together, to create lineage. Lineage cannot be established if either life or love is missing. Therefore, among the three qualities that define the parent-child relationship – love, life, and lineage – lineage is the fruit. God's lineage contains the seed of true love.

God's lineage provides the context and environment for a true life. Hence, for us to become the ideal people envisioned by God, that is, people of ideal character, and to create ideal families, we first need to be linked to His lineage. To take it a step further, only when we are linked to God's lineage is it possible to create God's homeland, the ideal nation. Only when we are linked to God's lineage is it possible to establish the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. Please inscribe the importance of lineage in your hearts. I cannot emphasize this enough.

Without lineage, neither life nor love can endure. You strive to set a good tradition, but it will endure only through your lineage. Lineage is the bridge allowing the parents' spirit to carry on, through subsequent generations. In other words, lineage is the first and final condition necessary, for parents to harvest the fruits of their love, the fruits of their life and the fruits of their joy. We need to know this with certainty.

Yet, when Adam and Eve fell, this lineage, more precious than life, was lost. The fruits of true life and true love never matured. They became the fruits of Satan, lacking any relationship with Heaven. From them descended the six-billion people now inhabiting the earth.

God intended for the seeds He planted in the springtime of the Garden of Eden, to grow into a bountiful crop that He could harvest in the autumn. The ideal of God's creation was to raise Adam and Eve, His son and daughter, to the point where they would blossom in true love, flourish with true life, and bear fruit in a true lineage. God desired to gather up owners — and families — of eternal life, eternal love, and eternal lineage, and to bring about His kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world as their homeland.

### **God's Suffering in Search of the True Parents**

Instead, however, it was false love, false life, and false lineage that infested the earth. God's love, life, and lineage fell into the hands of the adulterer Satan, the enemy of love. Heaven and earth were suffocated and transformed into hell. The world became a wretched place, far from God's presence. Yet, humanity to this day lives in ignorance of this.

People are deluded into believing that the lineage of the enemy is the lifeline upon which the world depends. This is the wretched truth about humanity descended from the Fall. That is why we refer to this world as "hell on earth". God views humanity's tragic situation with a heart full of pain.

After creating Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, God intended to marry them with His Holy (Marriage) Blessing, and bequeath to them Heaven's right of ownership. God wanted Adam and Eve to inherit from Him the ownership of the entire universe.

However, all of this came under Satan's control because of the Fall. God is like a father who labored and sweated, his entire life, to accumulate assets for His children, only to have a thief steal everything overnight.

Who can comprehend the sorrowful, painful heart of God? God lost His lineage, lost His children, and was forced to hand over the ownership of the nations and world to Satan. There was only one way to recover this lineage and ownership. This was the path to win the natural subjugation (winning over) of Satan, to have Satan surrender voluntarily. What is the secret to accomplish this? It can only be accomplished by the power of true love, when we love our enemies more than we love our own children.

Has there ever been a time when God could rejoice with human beings, enjoying the natural bonds of parent and child? Has God enjoyed even a year of comfort with His children, knowing that what He created was good? The answer is no; God has not experienced such joy for even one hour. And has anyone been able to comfort God in this pain? No, because no one has known the reason for the unbridgeable gap that has separated God from humankind for tens-of-thousands of years. No one has known why God and humanity are in such a tragic situation.

The biblical account of Cain and Abel reveals the beginnings of human conflict, even within Adam's family. It reveals the archetype for humankind's unending history of struggle, war, and conflict. We are in conflict on many levels, beginning with the war between mind and body within each individual, and extending to wars between nations, and even to the global conflict between materialism and theism.

Extreme, selfish individualism threatens our prosperity even today. We deem young people to be the hope of humanity holding the promise for the future, but drugs and free sex enslave them. Advanced countries seem to believe that material goods are all that matter. They recognize only their own interests, while ignoring the misery of tens-of-thousands who die of starvation every day. (9-12-2006)

God's purpose of creation called for Adam and Eve to obey the commandment from God, who is the subject of true love, and fulfill their maturation as a true man and a true woman. Beyond that, they were to become a true couple united in the true love of God and then, by having sons and daughters through true love, they would have become true parents and lived in happiness. Had Adam and Eve matured in true

love, they would have fulfilled God's desire to wear a substantial body and when they perfected themselves as a true couple, the ideal of God's absolute love would have been fulfilled. By Adam and Eve having children of goodness and becoming true parents, God would have established substantially the position of parents eternally and achieved His ideal, which was to create infinite citizenship in the kingdom of heaven in heaven by means of multiplying myriad generations of loving descendants in the physical world. (4-16-1996)

### **GREATEST SADNESS**

There is probably no greater sadness than parents losing their beloved children. (7-12-1959).

The moment Adam and Eve fell, God's heart was torn so painfully He almost went insane. You should never forget about the Father who was shaken so thoroughly as to almost forget Himself. Have you ever thought about that?

Even when fallen people on the earth watch their children die, they feel their bone marrow melt. They want to save their children even at the cost of their own lives. How must the heart of God have been as He watched Adam and Eve walking the path toward the Fall and crossing the line of death? Unless you understand that heart, there is no way for you to become God's sons and daughters. (10-11-1959)

Each time God beheld Adam and Eve, a heart of longing burned within Him. As He thought of how they would perfect themselves and live happy lives, a feeling of happiness arose within Him. He hoped that they would take dominion over the creation He had made, enjoy it, and caress it as if they had created it themselves. Such cherished desires in His heart, however, were cut short when they fell. We need to know that it was an unforgivable and most terrible sin that these first

ancestors committed.

God, though, cannot abandon fallen people in this state. Why? It is because He created them in accordance with His laws and principles, which have an eternal standard that He cannot ignore.

God had a strong desire to abandon fallen Adam and Eve. To abandon them, though, would mean abandoning the principles of His creation, the process of which He had worked on for the six biblical days. At the same time, He would put Himself in a position where He would be forced to abandon the standard of eternity. Even the existence of God, the Subject of eternity, would be challenged. Knowing these things, He initiated His providence to redeem Adam and Eve. (original *Cheon Seong Gyeong* p. 2241)

God can do anything at will, but because of the reality of unprincipled love His hands have been tied. No one knows how He suffers under such lasting regret and sorrow and how unimaginably weary He is. (original *Cheon Seong Gyeong* p. 144)

All problems came about due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, who became the false parents. Consequently, problems of the heart, of lineage, of character, of language, and the problems of daily life arose, as well as problems affecting nations and the world. (original *Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

What is the greatest of all problems in the Western world today? An understanding of Satan as an entity doesn't exist in the Western mind. Therefore, people do not know they have been a liege under Satan, born of his lineage. (4-8-89)

St. Paul lamented being influenced by Satan and being unable to live a true life. He said, "We know that the law is spiritual; but I am carnal, sold under sin. I do not understand my own actions. For I do not do what I want, but I do the very thing I hate" (Rom. 7:14-15).



The Fall of Man brought about this fallen world. Disobeying God's Word, man rebelled against Him. This put him in the position to be overpowered by Satan's lies. And so, finally man united with Satan, receiving Satan's personality and love instead of God's personality and love.

Human history has been a history of struggle, a history of war. It has been almost like a tug-of-war between God and Satan with man as the prize. Good and Evil have been struggling to win man to their respective sides.

Because human history started with the Fall, Evil got a head start. Therefore, in history the evil side has always taken the aggressive and offensive position. Good has been passive and defensive; yet, God is on the side of Good. In the end, the good side always wins the victory. The good side is always the underdog; yet, it comes out victorious and expands. (9-18-76)

“Satan is the enemy of God's love, God's life and God's lineage. Each fallen man lacks God's love, life and lineage; all he knows is Satan's love, life and lineage. Consequently, God cannot have prosperity and the whole world is controlled by Satan. Truly, we have to completely change this world.” (3-27-90)

In the next chapter we will begin looking at how God and Satan throughout human history have “been struggling to win man to their respective sides.”

# *Chapter 3*

## *The History of Restoration*

### **THE OLD TESTAMENT**

#### **ADAM'S FAMILY**

We learned in the previous chapter of the *Divine Principle* that God grieved to see evil enter Adam and Eve's lives. God is good and cannot exist eternally with evil. It must ultimately be eradicated in human beings. God immediately worked to bring Adam's family back to a state of goodness. When Adam and Eve fell they lost their value. Let's use an analogy of a cup that falls to the floor, cracks and cannot hold water. The cup has lost its value. It is useless; it does not fulfill its purpose. The owner has two options. He can throw it into the trash and buy or make another, or he can repair it and make it valuable again.

God did not have the option of throwing Adam and Eve and Lucifer into the trash and create other beings to replace them. He created them as eternal beings. It is impossible for God to destroy them. They are part of God. To destroy them would be to destroy Himself. God could only try to repair them—to restore them to their original goodness. He does this not out of duty but out of love. It would never occur to God to destroy his creation eternally. He created Lucifer and Adam and Eve out of love, and He immediately began to work with love to restore them. Evil is abhorrent to God. Evil entered God's creation and just as our body immediately works to eliminate a germ, God began working to eradicate evil.

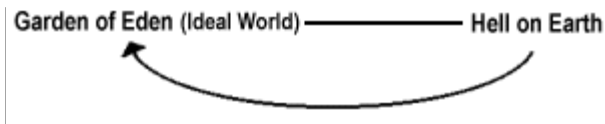
God's love is voluntary and spontaneous. He created Adam, Eve and Lucifer to be like Him—good—and with a drive to express and receive love. Because God's love is voluntary He cannot and would

never use force to get Adam, Eve and Lucifer to love Him. That would not be true love.

### **GOD'S PROVIDENCE OF RESTORATION**

God is a principled being who only works in a logical, orderly and lawful way. He created the universe with principle, and He works to restore it in a principled way. The formula or plan to restore Adam and Eve and Lucifer is called God's Providence of Restoration.

God could not simply snap His fingers or wave a magic wand to restore Adam and Eve and Lucifer. How does God, our loving parent, work? Adam, Eve and Lucifer voluntarily turned the Garden of Eden into hell on earth. To restore God's ideal world they must voluntarily come back to God.



### **RESTORATION = SALVATION**

God works to restore their original state of goodness. Restoration equals salvation. A drowning person can be saved only by being brought back to the shore where he was originally safe. To save him is to restore his previous position. If a person has lost his health and becomes sick, saving him means to restore him to his previous health. Father explains:

Man's ability to respond to the true love of God was killed due to the fall. People cannot even recognize God's true love, much less vibrate with it. The whole purpose of salvation is to restore that ability of human beings to vibrate with the love of God. Once the spiritual body of man can receive the vibration of God's love, his whole self will resound with it. His entire physical body will respond to God's stimuli. That would be the total satisfaction of love. Nothing

more could be desired by anyone. (1-8-1984)

Almighty God is a God of love, a God of mercy. His heart is compassionate and He grieved at the living death of His children.

He knows no person is capable of breaking his chains and getting rid of sin by himself. He knows that only one power can bring people into salvation — God Himself. And God, in His mercy, is determined to save this world.

What is salvation? Salvation is simply restoration. What does a doctor do to save his patient? He restores the patient to normal health. That is a cure. What would you do to save a drowning person? You would save him by bringing him out of the water and restoring him to dry land. That is a rescue.

By the same token, God's salvation of man is simply to restore man from an abnormal, deviated state to the original state of goodness.

So, salvation is equivalent to restoration. God is going to restore the kingdom of hell to the Kingdom of Heaven. (9-18-74)

Since the fall of man, God's work has been the restoration of original goodness. God wants to destroy the world of evil and recreate the world of goodness. We have lost our health. We have become sick people. The salvation of God is, therefore, the restoration of man to a healthy state once again. (10-20-73)



Adam, Eve and Lucifer lost vertical and horizontal love when they fell. Vertical love was the love between God and them. Horizontal love was the love between Adam, Eve and Lucifer. This love is called brotherhood and sisterhood.

The *Bible* says, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the greatest and first commandment. And a second is like it: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments depend all the law and the prophets” (Matt. 22:37-40).

The first commandment is that we demonstrate vertical love for God. The second commandment is to show horizontal love for people. Central figures of God are required to live up to these two difficult commandments.

**LOVE OF GOD = VERTICAL LOVE**

**LOVE OF NEIGHBOR = HORIZONTAL LOVE**

There were two acts of evil in the Garden of Eden. The first was between Lucifer and Eve and the second between Adam and Eve. The first act was more unprincipled than the second. Angels and mankind were never intended to have sexual relations. It is totally

unnatural. Sex between Adam and Eve was natural but premature. Also the motivation of Eve was less evil with Adam than with Lucifer. She went to Adam in the hope of repairing what had happened with Lucifer.

The act between Lucifer and Eve is called the spiritual fall, and the act between Adam and Eve is called the physical fall. If Adam had not succumbed to Eve, he could have restored Eve by teaching her how to lift herself out of her tragic situation, and then Lucifer could have been dominated by Adam. But when Adam fell the Fall became complete and the angel Lucifer dominated God's children. Lucifer became Satan and ruled the world.

**1. Lucifer and Eve ————— Spiritual Fall**

**2. Adam and Eve ————— Physical Fall**

### **CAIN AND ABEL**

God's first central figure on earth was Adam. God works through a central point. When Adam fell and became a mixture of good and evil, God had to restore this. Cain and Abel, Adam's sons, represented the evil and good split in Adam. Abel was chosen to represent God's side because he was the second son of Adam and Eve. Cain, the first son of Adam and Eve, represented the first fruits of the unprincipled love between Lucifer and Eve. Abel represented the fruits of the relatively lesser evil of the second act between Adam and Eve.

Abel and Cain, representing good and evil, were to restore the vertical and horizontal love that was lost in the Garden of Eden. To restore vertical love between God and man, God asked Abel to give an offering. Adam, Eve and Lucifer voluntarily walked away from God. They disobeyed God. To restore this Abel showed his love by obeying God and successfully gave his offering. This act restored vertical love and the spiritual fall.

To restore horizontal love and the physical fall God had Cain represent the angel Lucifer and Abel represent God's children. Cain's mission was to love Abel and become one in heart with him. God told Cain to make an offering. Cain did and then God refused it. God did this not because he hated Cain. On the contrary. He loved Cain. He loved Cain as much as He loved Abel. God loves all of His children equally. But Cain was required to restore fallen emotions. By rejecting Cain's offering Cain would have the same feelings Lucifer had—jealousy. God warned Cain to be aware of this but Cain compared himself to his brother Abel and felt the same lack of love that Lucifer had towards Adam. Lucifer struck Adam, God's first central figure and now Cain struck Abel, God's second central figure. Now physical murder was introduced to the world. More evil was produced. God's task became more difficult. Lucifer (Satan) influenced Cain to kill his brother. God lost in this first attempt to restore the misuse of love in the Garden of Eden.

## **SECOND ADAM**

If there had been love between Cain and Abel then there would have been a base for God to step in and claim from Satan enough room or space in Satan's dominion for another totally pure man to be born. Through this pure man God could reach out to all people and raise them—teaching them how to separate themselves from Satan. This pure man or Second Adam would fulfill what Adam wasn't able to fulfill in the Garden of Eden, i.e., the fulfillment of the Three Great Blessings and an ideal, harmonious Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Cain and Abel were to lay a foundation for the Second Adam to be born. God can only send the Second Adam to an environment that will protect him. God first placed Adam in the Garden of Eden protected by Lucifer who He trusted to protect him. Likewise, God had to see that Adam's family would protect the Second Adam while he was growing to perfection. With the Second Adam as the True Parent to Adam's family, Satan would have no base with anyone and would without his powers give up and be restored to Lucifer as before the Fall. The Second Adam is called the Messiah. God had to postpone sending the Messiah until another family laid the proper foundation. Mankind grew into a society filled with people who had lost their spiritual senses and fallen into a terrible

spiritual darkness. God saw every kind of evil. Satan ruled with a vengeance. The earth was filled with violence and immorality. The murder of Abel increased to wars.

Human history is really an unseen battle between God and Satan. God is struggling to win control. All conflicts are between relative good and relative evil. God has been trying to teach those on His side to be strong and not be killed and win over those in the Cain position.

### **TRUE PARENTS**

Marriage is the most important means of establishing God's kingdom on earth. Adam and Eve were God's first children. They were born of God, grew up in God, and were to have matured into perfection in God. God intended to make Adam and Eve one in heavenly matrimony. Then they would have borne sinless children and become the true mother and father for all humankind. They would have been the "True Parents," establishing the Heavenly Kingdom on earth.

Has such a kingdom ever existed? No. Instead, history started off in the wrong direction. From the first evil step, Satan has been the god of this world. It has, therefore, been God's purpose of restoration, His purpose of salvation, to restore the perfected family so that He can truly have His kingdom upon the earth. For this God needs a model. Who can set the criteria of perfection on this earth? To meet this need, the Messiah comes.

The history of God's providence is a sad, sad story. To comfort the heart of God and fulfill His work, we must clearly understand His process of restoration, and the poverty of the human response to God, especially at the time of Christ. (10-20-73)



## NOAH'S FAMILY

After Cain murdered Abel, Seth, Adam's third son, took the place of Abel (Gen. 4:25). And from Seth's descendants God chose Noah's family to substitute for Adam's family and begin His providence to lay the foundation for the Messiah.

The *Bible* says that there are 10 generations and about 1600 years from Adam to Noah:

1. Adam	130
2. Seth	105
3. Enosh	90
4. Kenan	70
5. Mahalei	65
6. Jared	162
7. Enoch	65
8. Methusaiah	187
9. Lamech	182

---

**= 1056 yrs**

The dates given above for these nine patriarchs are the age they had the son named below them. Adam was 130 years old when he fathered Seth. If we add these numbers they come to 1056. Noah is the tenth and began having his children at the age of 500. This means the *Bible* says there is 1556 years from Adam to Noah.

The *Principle* rounds this off to 1600 which is a multiple of 400. The numbers used in Genesis and most of the numbers used in the entire Old Testament are basically symbolic, not literal numbers. These 10 generations are a cycle of separation from Satan. After this cycle God and mankind could start at the beginning point once more.



### **MATHEMATICAL NATURE OF THE UNIVERSE**

God is mathematical. Scientists have admired the mathematical nature of the universe. One author writes, “Galileo and Kepler really and truly believed in a God who planned and designed the whole creation—a God who was a master mathematician and technician. Mathematics was God’s style, and whether it was the movement of the stars, the flight of a bird, the diffusion of gases, or the propagation of opinions—they all bore God’s mathematical hallmark” (Eric Hoffer, *Ordeal of Change*).

God created the world with mathematical precision. This is why mathematics is the basis of science. Men and women were created to mature by fulfilling the numbers of perfection: 3, 4, 7, 10, 12 and 21.



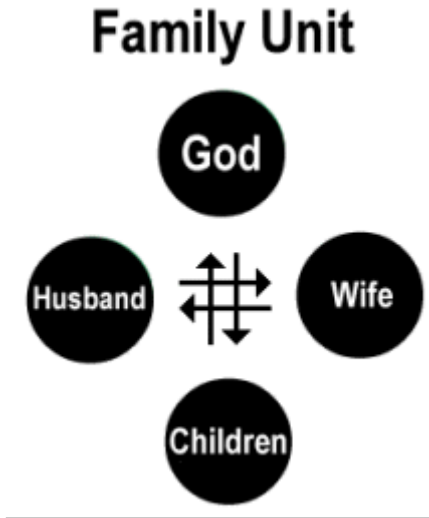
Three is the number of God. It is the highest number of perfection. The number three is often mentioned in the *Bible*: the three decks of Noah’s ark; three flights of doves from Noah’s ark; three sons of Adam; three sons of Noah; the three wise men.

We see the number three reflected in the natural world. There are the three kingdoms of animal, vegetable and mineral. There are the three states of matter: solid, liquid and gas; three primary colors: red, yellow and blue; three components of DNA: sugar, base and phosphate; three macronutrients: carbohydrates, fats, and proteins; three components of atoms: protons, neutrons and electrons. Infinity is represented by a circle; a circle is determined by three points.



The number four symbolizes earthly perfection. There are four directions of north, south, east and west and the four seasons of spring, summer, fall and winter.

The family unit is composed of four parts: God, man, woman and children.

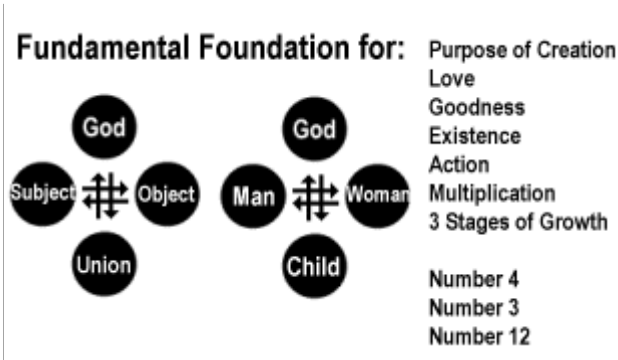


The significance of the number three is derived from these four positions. There are three distinct stages: God as the origin; the husband and wife as the division of God's dual characteristics; and their children as the result of their unity.

<b>God</b>	<b>1. Origin</b>
<b>Man      Woman</b>	<b>2. Division</b>
<b>Child</b>	<b>3. Union</b>

God's eternal pattern for all beings and things is called the Four Position Foundation. It is the fundamental foundation for all love,

goodness, ideals, existence, action, multiplication and the three stages of the growth period. It is also the basis for the significance of the numbers 4, 3, and 12.



Another number of perfection is seven, the combination of the earthly number four with the spiritual number three. There are seven days in a week. The number seven or multiples of seven are often used in the *Bible*: God created the earth and the heavens in seven symbolic days; Jacob worked seven years to gain Rachel; there were 70 members in Jacob’s family.



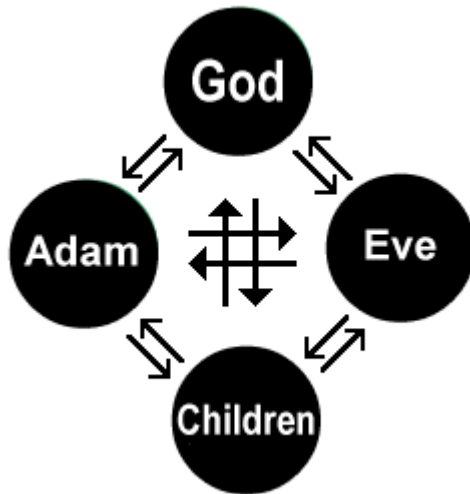
Each stage of the growth period has a formation, growth and completion stage, making a total of nine stages. The final tenth stage is full maturity and the reason that ten is also a number of perfection. This is why we have ten fingers and ten toes.

A baby grows through nine months and is born in the tenth. In the *Bible*, God gave Moses Ten Commandments.

10	Perfection	<hr/>
9		
8	Completion stage	
7		<hr/>
6		
5	Growth stage	
4		<hr/>
3		
2	Formation stage	
1		

# #12

The number twelve is also a number of perfection. There are 12 personality types, 12 months in the year and the number 12 occurs in the *Bible*. For example, Jesus had 12 disciples. The source of these numbers comes from the family unit. God's plan was for man and woman to be one with Him in love. They would marry and have a family. God, the husband and the wife would love the child with all their hearts and the child would love them in return. If we made a diagram of the four positions and put arrows of all the directions of love toward each other there would be 12 directions of love.





By multiplying the number 7 by the number 3 we have still another number of perfection, 21. In the *Bible* Noah sent out doves three times for seven days each totaling 21 days.

## **NOAH**

Sun Myung Moon reveals the truth about Noah's life:

It has been a cardinal principle of God's providence that in order to receive God's blessing you must first demonstrate your worthiness of the blessing. Throughout history there have been many righteous people who demonstrated their worthiness of God's blessing by leading sacrificial lives. Nevertheless, we know that the world we live in today is not literally God's kingdom. We learn that human history started on the wrong footing, on the evil side. This is why the Bible says that the god of this world is Satan.

### **ABEL – FIRST CHAMPION**

It has been the strategy of God to summon champions out of this evil world in order to restore the world and build His kingdom. To understand His ways, let us therefore examine the history of God's providence. The family of Adam was the first family in God's creation. In this family there was a man, Abel, whom God chose to be His first champion. Abel served God wholeheartedly, and became the first man to give up his life for God's purpose.



## **NOAH DEFIES COMMON SENSE**

Later on God called Noah as His champion. And Noah accomplished a very unusual mission. God directed Noah to build a ship, and he was to build it on the top of a mountain. Now, it is just common sense that in building a ship you need a shipyard by some body of water. But Noah's instructions were to build the ark on top of a mountain rather than at the seashore or riverside. How many of us here could accept that kind of mission? How many of us could obey such a command and set to work without a single shred of doubt?

In Noah's time, no one could believe that Noah had received a command from God — nor did anyone accept him in his mission of revealing the coming flood judgment. Can you imagine how Noah appeared to the people of his day? For 120 years he went up and down, up and down that mountain working on his boat. Would anyone among the ladies in the audience like to think of herself in the position of the wife of Noah? I don't think you would be a very happy wife.

## **INCOMPREHENSIBLE MISSION**

Noah's wife must have packed his lunch basket every day, using only a little food. Noah was so busy with the ark he could not find time to provide for his family. Within only a few months the family squabbles must have begun, but it was not just for 12 months or 12 years that Noah's wife had to sustain her situation, but for 120 years. Why, then, did God ask of Noah such an incomprehensible mission? Why does God have to work that way? There is a reason. It is because of evil.

## **180 DEGREES**

God cannot dwell together with evil. The

direction of God is 180 degrees contrary to the direction of evil. God abhors evil! God cannot accept the things that the evil world accepts. So God does not want anything to do with the evil world, or with whatever is tainted by evil.

We are all in the image of God and can find traits similar to His in our human nature. Consider if you have an enemy toward whom you have strong feelings; you don't want to so much as look at that person. Likewise, God will have nothing to do with the evil, satanic world. Therefore, in dealing with it, He chooses ways often incomprehensible to man.

### **GOD TESTS**

God also tests the faith of man. He cannot do this by asking just ordinary things of people. We must be willing to comply with God's extraordinary instructions. We must display to God absolute faith. This is not an easy task. People thought Noah was a crazy man for building the ark. Nobody knew he occupied the central position in God's view.

### **CRAZY PERSON**

Have you thought about Noah's family? Noah built the ark on the top of a mountain. If it was on flat land, it would be a different story, but building a ship on the top of a mountain is not only beyond common sense it also certainly passed the limits of logical tolerance. In any ordinary sense, Noah is acting like a crazy person. If he wanted to build a ship, he should have built it on a bank; however, since he built it on a mountain, his action was totally beyond common sense.

## **LIFE OF LONG DEDICATION**

Do you think God who ordered such a command did so in a joking manner? No. God knew better than anyone that Noah's course required a life of long dedication on the path of unbearable suffering, and He did not command him with a more peaceful (inner) content than Noah's suffering course. Because there was an even more difficult content for God, with such a condition God hoped to gain one way to resolve His inner situation, and He commanded Noah to go the path of suffering for 120 years. How miserable would such a heart of God be? His misery was indescribable.

Therefore, when Noah took the obedient position at the decisive, tense moment of whether to accept or not to accept that command, don't you think God was happier than Noah? Moreover, God is the one who could be saddened more than Noah. God's position cannot be established without establishing the position of such an owner who takes the responsibility for joy and sorrow.

Noah suffered rejection from his own wife, family, neighbors and relatives. He received mockery and opposition from his own nation and the whole world. If he attempted to abandon his task even once, then he would have been attacked by Satan again. However, he overcame all difficulties and was successful in completing his mission.

He fought against Satan and separated himself from Satan. God came to love him, and he came to dwell within the realm of God's love. However, that was not all. Whoever comes to dwell in the midst of God's love, God makes that person sacrifice himself by sending him into the

satanic world and into difficulties. Of course, one reason may be to train him; however, it is really for the purpose of saving more people. Noah who was righteous, honest, and good had to always sacrifice himself with a sorrowful heart and with the shedding of tears.

Even in the environment of persecution and chaos, grandpa Noah was able to win over such an environment because he gave his utmost effort. He went forth with the humble mind that he can only try his best in front of God's law to fulfill the duty of filial piety and loyalty. As he went closer in front of God, he felt the cruelty of his environment and became sorrowful. In such moments, because the grandpa Noah went on shedding the tears of repentance and feeling sorry to God, there was no one who could stop his way. Do you understand?

Think of Noah who lived in such way for 120 years. Even though the satanic world mobilized every possible means to hit this one person, Noah, he never deviated from the standard which God established as the center. That standard is established as the absolute center of the cosmos, as the righteous man of the cosmos, and as the victor of truth. (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part I*)

## **INDEMNITY**

God was betrayed in the Garden of Eden. And it was necessary for Cain and Abel to make special effort, i.e., indemnity conditions to show God they loved Him and were sorry. In our everyday life we have to show effort to restore any relationship in which we hurt others. We have to apologize, change our behavior, pay money or do something to pay for our mistake and show our sincerity and that we want to have a trusting relationship again.

The indemnity conditions God needed from Cain and Abel were efforts to show vertical and horizontal love. Abel, God's central figure, had to make an offering and show vertical love. Then Abel and Cain were supposed to restore horizontal love between each other with Cain accepting Abel as his leader and following him.

In Noah's family Noah showed vertical love, and God was hoping Noah's sons Shem and Ham could show horizontal love. Before we get into Noah's family let's stop for a moment and look at one further aspect in God's pattern and formula to restore man. In God's dispensation of restoration we call the indemnity conditions to restore vertical love—the Foundation of Faith, and the effort required to overcome our fallen nature and love each other horizontally in a God centered way is called the Foundation of Substance. By doing both of these loving actions we lay the Foundation for the Messiah. It is also necessary to make these conditions in a certain time period.

### **NOAH WAS RIGHTEOUS**

Noah was a righteous man. God told Noah he was going to flood the earth and that Noah should prepare. Noah spent around 100 years building the ark. The ark symbolized the world. The three decks represented the three stages of the growth period. Noah represented God; Noah's family represented mankind; the animals symbolized the creation.

It rained 40 days (10x4), representing separation from the satanic world. Afterwards, a raven went forth symbolizing Satan. Noah sent a dove. After 7 days it returned, unsuccessful in finding dry land. This represented Adam who was unsuccessful. Noah sent a second dove after 7 days. It returned with an olive branch symbolizing the Second Adam. Seven days later, after 21 days, Noah sent a third dove. It did not return, which meant that it was successful in finding dry land. If God was unsuccessful with the Second Adam, He had one more chance to send a Third Adam who would be successful.

There were eight members in Noah's family: Noah, his wife, their sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth, and their wives. This equaled Adam and Eve, their three sons, Cain, Abel and Seth and their wives. The

number eight symbolizes a new start. There are seven days to a week; the eighth day is a new start.

With Noah's family God wanted to start fresh. If Noah's family could restore the sins of Adam's family, then they would multiply and the Second Adam could be born. Satan would have no base on earth and would have to repent and become Lucifer again. Because sin began on earth, it must be erased from earth first.

To help explain God's purpose of the flood judgment let's use an analogy of a parent who has a son that becomes criminally insane. The son commits terrible crimes and comes home to hide. Although the Father loves his son he cannot let him continue to hurt others. The father does not want his son to be imprisoned but in this case he knows it is a better place for him because he can be helped. So in agony the father calls the police and has his son taken to a mental hospital. The father is not acting out of vengeance. The flood judgment was not the wrath of God but the love of God. For God, the flood was the police, and the spirit world was the mental hospital.

In this way, God wanted to save mankind. God's motivation in putting everyone in the spirit world by cleansing the earth with the flood was to save mankind, not to hurt them. The people would be better off in spirit world. Even so, it was such a difficult and painful decision for God to create the flood that He decided never to work that way again.

We read in the *Bible* that God said, "... never again shall there be a flood to destroy the earth" (Gen. 9:11). The rainbow is a reminder of that promise.

If Noah's family demonstrated purity, then those who were killed by the flood and everyone else who had previously died and gone to the spirit world, including Adam and Eve, would be restored to perfection.

God wanted to send the Messiah to Noah's family but He needed Noah's family to be a safe place for the Messiah to be born into. He

needed to be protected and followed. God tested Noah's family to make sure they would not act like a violent Cain. God re-enacted what happened in Adam's family. In the Garden of Eden there was no shame of nudity with Adam and Eve when they were growing up. The Fall caused shame for the sexual organs. God tested Noah's son Shem who was in the position of Cain and Noah's second son, Ham in the position of Abel. One day, Noah fell asleep naked in his tent. Ham saw him but failed to see Noah as God saw him. Ham should have multiplied goodness with his brothers but instead they felt shame, the same feelings that occurred in the Garden of Eden. Ham multiplied evil by having his two brothers cover his father. When Noah woke up, he cursed him. Satan had again stopped God from sending the Messiah. God couldn't send the Second Adam to Noah's family. There was no foundation for the Messiah.

"Is it always sinful to regard nakedness with a sense of shame? No. Noah's was a special case....this was an indemnity condition which only Noah's family was required to fulfill." (*Exposition of the Divine Principle* p. 172)

So God had to wait and transfer the mission of restoring Adam's family to another family. When a champion of God fails, God moves on to another person. As God waited, the earth became re-peopled from Noah's three sons and their wives. God's original plan was for one culture and one language. The differences in languages are a result of the Fall and has been one of the barriers to creating a one world family. As history goes on and more languages and cultures arise, it becomes harder for God and mankind to restore the world. The *Bible* says after 400 years God found a family He could work with. This family was Abraham's.

## **ABRAHAM**

The approximately 400 years between Noah and Abraham were 10 generations just as there was 10 generations (1600 years) between Adam and Noah.

"When human beings began to increase in number on the earth the LORD said, 'My Spirit will not put up with humans for such a long

time, for they are only mortal flesh. In the future, their normal lifespan will be no more than 120 years.” (Gen. 6:3)

<b>Noah</b>	—————	<b>Abraham</b>
	<b>400</b>	
Shem		100
Arpachshad		35
Shelah		30
Eber		34
Peleg		30
Reu		32
Serug		30
Nahor		29
Terah		70
	—————	
<b>Abraham</b>		<b>390</b>
		<b>(Rounded off to 400)</b>

These nine patriarchs had their son listed below their name at the age given. Terah fathered Abraham when he was 70. If we add the numbers above we see there were 390 years from Adam’s son Seth to the birth of Abraham.

**ABRAHAM — ISAAC — JACOB**

God’s previous champion, Noah, was a righteous man. But Abraham was the first son of an idol maker. Why did He choose someone like Abraham? Before Abraham, God had favored second sons such as Abel, and Satan had favored first sons like Cain. But we know that in Noah’s family Satan claimed Ham, a second son. Therefore God claimed a first son of an idol maker.



Sun Myung Moon talks about Abraham in some of his speeches. Here are a few excerpts:

God summoned Abraham, not from a family headed by a man of God, but from an idol-maker's house, and ordered him to separate himself from his evil surroundings and leave his homeland. God wanted Abraham to be His champion. This was God's personal command. If Abraham had then discussed this matter with his father, the idol-maker would undoubtedly have asked him, "Are you crazy?" Abraham knew better than to mention anything to his father about his instruction from God. Who would have believed him? His mission was not just to say hello to his next door neighbor. God instructed him to journey to a strange land, as far away as Egypt.

Abraham's decision then was a lonely one, based upon his faith and his reliance upon God. By faith alone he made his decision and departed, with nothing on his mind except following the command of God. I know he stole away in the middle of the night. Suddenly he found himself wandering like a gypsy. He lived in self-denial; he had given up everything.

The champions of God have one characteristic in common. They begin their missions by denial of themselves and their surroundings. (10-21-73)

Abraham was the son of an idol merchant. To Abraham who was living in an affluent environment, God called and commanded, "Oh! Abraham, come out of your home." Thereupon, without a word of complaint, without any guarantee of a good life anywhere else, Abraham left his hometown, Ur of the Chaldeans,

abandoning everything. As a result, what did he become? He became a gypsy wandering across borders.

If God calls you to come out, then come out. After coming out, no matter what kind of difficulty you may face, you should never regret or resent God. If you complain then you go back to the position of fallen Adam.

Let us look at Abraham. God separated him from his father who was an idol merchant. He had to abandon his own family, own nation, all the material wealth and everything else. In this manner, by separating him from the satanic world, he came into the land of Canaan. God trained him and advanced the dispensation by making him cry not only for his own people but for other people and even for his enemies.

God made him work leaving his own nation for a foreign land. He had to wander around like a gypsy. He always prayed in tears with earnest heart, and lived with the hope that God could save many people through his prayers.

When we look at the Bible, we may get the impression that God blessed Abraham and loved him unconditionally. However, it is not so.

Abraham had to separate himself from Satan by abandoning his loving family, nation, material wealth, and everything else, by going to the unknown chosen land, and by always shedding tears for God and for the people. He prayed much for his people and suffered much pain for his nation.

Through such conditions, God was able to establish Abraham as the ancestor of faith and to bless his descendants to prosper greatly. Although such content is not recorded in the Bible, behind God's blessing there was such a background. (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part I*)

Before they entered Egypt, Abraham told his wife Sarah to pretend to be his sister. When they arrived in Egypt, the Pharaoh heard of her great beauty and took Sarah into his home. God immediately inflicted a plague on Pharaoh's home. The Pharaoh, in fear, gave Sarah back and told Abraham to leave Egypt.

Here again is a re-enacting of the Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve were like brother and sister. The Pharaoh was Lucifer. Lucifer took Eve, but the Pharaoh did not take Sarah. He gave her back to Abraham untouched. So, Abraham's family restored the Fall in Adam's family. The stories of Adam, Noah and Abraham take place in different times and in different ways but the motif of the pattern or symbolism is the same. The stories in the *Bible* are tied together.

By passing His test in Egypt, God let Abraham enter Canaan. God tested Abraham again. God said to him, "Bring me a heifer, a female goat, a ram, a turtledove, and a pigeon" (Gen. 15:9). The sacrifices symbolize the three stages of the growth period. The turtledove and pigeon represent the formation stage; the goat and the ram the growth stage; and the heifer, the completion stage.

<b>COMPLETION STAGE</b>	<b>Heifer</b>	<b>3rd Adam</b>	<b>Completed Testament</b>
<b>GROWTH STAGE</b>	<b>Goat, Ram</b>	<b>2nd Adam</b>	<b>New Testament</b>
<b>FORMATION STAGE</b>	<b>Turtledove, Pigeon</b>	<b>1st Adam</b>	<b>Old Testament</b>

Each stage also represents God's three chances to bring a perfect Adam to earth to start building the kingdom of heaven. The First Adam is represented by the birds. What is the symbolism of the dove? A dove descended on Jesus. John the Baptist represented the Old Testament; Jesus the New Testament. At this point the Old Testament was fulfilled. So the dove symbolized the Old Testament beginning with Adam.

What does the goat and ram mean? Jesus was called the Lamb of God. John the Baptist once said, pointing to Jesus, "Here is the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" (John 1:29). The growth stage represents the New Testament of Jesus, the Second Adam.

What does the heifer mean? Its symbolism can be found in the story of Samson. Samson told a riddle to the Philistines. They couldn't figure it out so they had Samson's wife find out and tell them. When they answered the riddle, Samson told them, "If you had not plowed with my heifer, you would not have found out my riddle." Samson's wife was compared to a heifer. If, by chance, the Second Adam was unsuccessful, then God could send the Third Adam. This Adam would succeed in marrying and establishing the first perfect family on earth and restore what Adam and Eve failed to do. The third stage represents the Third Adam who brings the Completed Testament.

The manner of cutting the animals in half was difficult for Abraham. It took great effort to carefully cut the animals lengthwise through its entire body. Abraham successfully cut the heifer in half and the ram and goat but became tired and fell asleep before sacrificing the birds. Birds of prey came and destroyed the offering. Abraham had failed. We read, “He brought him all these, cut them in two, and laid each half over against the other; but he did not cut the birds in two. And when birds of prey came down upon the carcasses, Abraham drove them away. As the sun was going down, a deep sleep fell on Abraham: and lo, a dread and great darkness fell upon him. Then the Lord said to Abraham, ‘know this for certain, that your descendants will be aliens in a land that is not theirs, and will be slaves there, and they will be oppressed for four hundred years!’” (Gen. 15:10-13)

These offerings were deeply symbolic and important. The cutting in half was a symbolic act to show Abraham’s desire to separate good and evil—to separate Cain and Abel. Each of us must work to cut evil out of ourselves. If we don’t, Satan will invade. “Whatever was sacrificed was killed and cut in half, to ensure that one part representing goodness was separated from the bad so that God was free to claim it. ... By instructing man to shed the blood of animals God could begin to restore man without shedding man’s blood.” (6-6-78)

Abraham was careless and did not cut the birds because he was tired after working on the large animals. Even though we get tired doing what is right we must be careful to understand deeply our responsibilities and persevere to accomplish our mission.

Now you know about endurance and contemplation. What would result from your doing this? How much effect would this have on the world? If Adam and Eve had endured, would they have fallen? If they had thought one or two steps ahead, would they have yielded to the fall? If Eve had had second thoughts, she would never have tried to tempt Adam into falling as well. She would have contained it within herself and never passed it to Adam. If they had thought longer and

more deeply, they would never have fallen in the first place.

We can say that the failure of every providential mission resulted from failing to think deeply. If Noah had persevered in his vigilance a little longer, instead of becoming intoxicated and lying naked, his mission would not have been invaded. We can definitely say his mission would have succeeded if he had continued and thought a little more. Why would Abraham have cut all of his offering in half except the two birds? If he had only thought a little more about what he was doing and whether it was right, then he would not have been negligent and brought failure. (8-27-78)

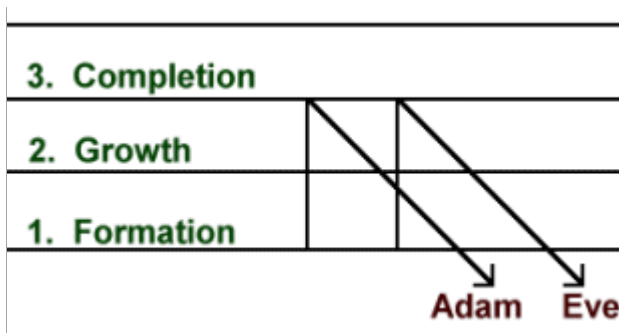
Abraham may have also felt the birds seemed of little importance because they were literally little. Abraham should have been thorough and seen every act as important. The birds had as much value as the larger animals just as children have as much value as adults. God loves every person regardless of their size or importance or status. He loves every nation of the world regardless of its size. These animals, just like the animals on Noah's ark, symbolized the whole earth.

Placing the cut animals one side on top of the other represented the restored position of Adam over the archangel. By failing to offer a pure offering of the birds that were in the formation stage the entire offering and all of mankind was claimed by Satan. The birds of prey represent Satan and evil spirits dominating mankind. We are all from the blood lineage of Adam and Eve. Shedding blood of animals in the sacrifices of the Old Testament and in the act of circumcision is symbolic of cutting off from that stained lineage and beginning a pure lineage from God.

Abraham's failure, like the failures of central figures before him, caused so many to suffer. Because he didn't cut the birds in half his many descendants were to suffer in slavery for four hundred years.

It is important to see the magnitude and importance that central figures of God have.

We have seen that when a central figure of God fails He always moves on to another. In Abraham's case we have an exception. God was able to give Abraham a second chance to be a central figure because Abraham was the third central figure of God (after Abel and Noah). The reason God could claim the third central figure was because Adam and Eve fell while they were in the growth stage of development.



The third stage was not invaded by Satan so Abraham, the third champion of God and his family, could be used again. If Abraham had been successful God would have had Abraham's two sons Isaac and Ishmael be the central figures to restore horizontal love of Cain and Abel. Abraham's failure caused a division. Ishmael left and became the ancestor of the Arab race. Another tragic effect of Abraham's failure was that it laid the basis for division and hatred between the Arabs who would be descended from Ishmael, and the Jews who would be descended from Isaac. The Arab and Jew are brothers but the seed of animosity and distance between them originate with their ancestor Abraham.

### **WOMEN'S ROLE IN RESTORATION**

Women play a very important part in God's dispensation. Sarah made a mistake in not creating unity with Hagar. "Those two wives were supposed to be united together as one family of Abraham but that was not done" (2-20-91). Sarah influenced Abraham to have

her banished. “Abraham should have taken care of Ishmael’s mother Hagar ... Sarah did not embrace Hagar and Ishmael. Do you think God wanted Ishmael to be expelled? God wanted him to embrace him. That is why it is important to love the enemy” (8-31-2003). “Abraham should not have kicked out Hagar and Ishmael. The world would be totally different if this did not occur. Sarah made a serious mistake.” (1-3-2004)

Wives and mothers play crucial, central roles in a marriage and family. Their role is to be architects of intimacy that create harmony in a family. Sadly, not only have central men failed to live up to God’s directions completely but women in the lives of these men have sometimes caused disunity and slowed the providence of God and made it more difficult for those who follow. When God’s champion men, champion women and champion families make mistakes they influence future generations to make the same mistake. They plant seeds that sabotage God’s plan of restoration. The core tactic of Satan is to cause disunity in marriages and families. God’s core tactic is to build unity. The Fall was disunity in the marriage of Adam and Eve that led to the disunity of their sons, Cain and Abel. Their disunity was the seed of disunity that we see today.

God’s alternative plan was to have Abraham’s son Isaac become the central figure to restore vertical love and for his children to restore horizontal love (Cain and Abel). God told Abraham to take his son to Mount Moriah and sacrifice him. He had to pay a greater indemnity for the failure of not cutting the birds.

Abraham and Sarah were very old when they had Isaac. Abraham adored his son. When God asked Abraham to sacrifice Isaac on an altar of fire you can imagine the feelings of Abraham. He loved his son, but he loved God more. So he took Isaac on a three-day walk to Mt. Moriah. The three days represent a separation from Satan and a new beginning for God.

When they arrived, they built an altar and when Isaac asked, “Where is the lamb?” Abraham said, “My son, you are the sacrifice.” Without any hesitation, completely trusting his father, Isaac got on



the altar. Abraham took his knife, raised it in the air and was about to plunge it into his son when we read, “an angel of the Lord called back from Heaven, and said, ‘Abraham, Abraham!’ And he said ‘Here I am.’ He said, ‘Do not lay your hand on the lad or do anything to him; for now I know that you fear God, seeing you have not withheld your son, your only son, from me’” (Gen. 22:10-12).

Abraham’s mission as God’s central figure transferred to Isaac and then to Jacob. The Old Testament gives 40 years as a generation so these three generations total 120 years. (Some historians believe they have been able to determine literal dates for the length of time a few people lived that are named in the Old Testament, but the *Principle* only looks at the symbolic dates given in the *Bible*.) And because they became united as one in God’s dispensation the Jewish people today say their God is the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.

## United Generations

Abraham Isaac Jacob

---

120

### **JACOB**

Isaac inherited Abraham’s position as central figure because although Isaac was a young boy he was old enough to know he was giving his life and did so without hesitation. By being one with Abraham and offering himself as a sacrifice he successfully became a central figure and fulfilled the foundation of vertical love. Isaac’s two sons, Esau and Jacob, were placed in the positions of Cain and Abel. Esau was in the position of Cain (or Lucifer) and Jacob was in the position of Abel (or Adam). Esau was the eldest son like Cain and represented evil and Jacob was the second son, like Abel, who represented good. We read that Esau and Jacob fought, even in their mother’s womb (Gen. 25:22-23) and that God “loved” Jacob and “hated” Esau (Rom. 9:13) because God must hate what is evil and love what is good. God loves Esau, but he hates the evil that Esau represents.

In restoring the past during God's Providence of Restoration not only must those in the Cain position do right but those in the Abel position must make conditions to show they are worthy of being God's champion. Jacob had to show his worthiness for being in the Abel position. In the Garden of Eden Lucifer stole the birthright from Adam. So to restore this loss, Jacob, in the position of Adam stole the birthright from Esau who represented Lucifer. Jacob and Esau had such different personalities and interests that they had almost nothing to do with each other for many years. Let's use the number 40 to represent their separation. But at the end of this time the division between them became complete when Jacob stole Esau's blessing by pretending to be Esau before his father Isaac.

## Divided Brothers

### Jacob and Esau

---

# 40

God does not condone stealing but in this case God did because it represents restoration of the birthright to Adam. When Esau discovered how his brother had tricked him, he was furious. He was going to kill Jacob, but Jacob heard this and fled to Haran and stayed with his Uncle Laban.

Laban was cruel and cheated Jacob many times. But after 20 years of suffering Jacob successfully earned great wealth and in the 21st year started his return to his homeland. True Father, Sun Myung Moon, reveals:

Jacob was in the position of Adam, and had to go beyond the level where Adam failed and fell. In what manner could Jacob carry this out? Jacob had to think only of God, His will, and His words, trusting that God, who had blessed him, would never betray him. Even though his brother, Esau, may have wanted to

take revenge on him, he would have to have such strong faith as to never be defeated so he could stop his brother from taking his revenge.

Now Jacob was on his way home to meet his brother, Esau. He could have gone somewhere else to enjoy his wealth if he did not think of God's will. He could have said, "Esau is Esau, and I am I; what have I to do with his life?" But his mind was so occupied by God's will that he wanted to meet his brother and reconcile the past and soothe his heart until his resentment vanished. What did he have to do in meeting his elder brother, Esau? First of all, he was ready to give up all his possessions, all his servants and his children, telling his brother that all these belonged to him. His attitude was: "All that I have is yours except God's will and God's blessing which is eternally mine." Adam, who ignored God's will, was self-centered, minding only himself, and lost his children and all things of God's blessing. On the contrary, Jacob was so God-centered that he would give away all things for the will of God. (5-27-1973)

## **Jacob's exile and return**

---

### **21**

---

When he and his family were leaving Haran, Rachel, Jacob's wife, stole Laban's idols. Laban pursued them, found Jacob and said, "You have stolen my idols. I want them back." Jacob, knowing nothing, got angry and said he didn't have them but Laban could look for them. When Laban went into Rachel's tent, we read, "Now Rachel had taken the household gods and put them in the camel's saddle, and sat upon them. Laban felt all about the tent, but did not find them. And she said to her father, 'Let not my lord be angry that I cannot rise before you, for the way of women is upon me.' So he

searched, but did not find the household gods” (Gen: 31:34-35). Laban finally gave up and returned home. Lucifer had deceived Eve. Now Eve, represented by Rachel, stole from Lucifer. “Because Rachel was sitting on the idols and they were under her sexual organ, Laban couldn’t touch them. Therefore this set the condition to restore the ownership of the sexual organ.” (Rough notes hoon dok hae 2-4-06)

As Jacob bravely made his way back to his home Esau heard of his coming and he felt, like Cain, a great resentment to his brother and led an army of four hundred men to kill Jacob. When Jacob heard this news he prayed to God and then thought, “I may appease him with the present that goes before me, and afterwards I shall see his face; perhaps he will accept me” (Gen. 32:20). With a pure heart he sent ahead of him as a gift for Esau his five hundred livestock that he had earned for his hard labor in Haran. And when Jacob saw Esau he went to him and we read, “...bowing himself to the ground seven times, until he came near to his brother. But Esau ran to meet him, and embraced him, and fell on his neck and kissed him, and they wept” (Gen. 33:3-4). Esau had been melted by Jacob’s total generosity, sincerity and courage. Human history entered a new era. It was elevated to a higher dimension at this time.

Man’s portion of responsibility throughout human history has been to subjugate Satan. Sin is having a give and receive relationship with Satan. The kingdom of heaven will come when every human being frees himself from his influence.

Jacob was the first champion in history to subjugate Satan enough to lay a foundation for the Messiah to come.

### **Do you think I made up all those stories?**

Many people have a hard time with Jacob. He is always criticized for being cunning and stealing, but Jacob was loved by God because he was so successful. His life is the model course that shows us the way to subjugate Satan. Father reveals, “According to the Bible, Jacob’s nature seems very cunning. Isn’t it strange that God blessed such a cunning Jacob? There is a clear reason for this from the viewpoint of the Principle. Because Jacob fulfilled his mission

given by God, God could bless him. Can you believe such a story? Do you think I made up all those stories? All those things happened several thousands of years ago, so nobody could understand the true meaning of the stories in the Old Testament until the Principle was revealed.” (*The Tribal Messiah*, section 3, chapter 1)

But Jacob and his family did make some mistakes. After he had successfully made unity with his brother they were both supposed to live together in a community. Tragically they separated and went their own way. Satan was successful in creating disunity. Also Jacob’s two wives were sisters who hated each other. They should have made unity and loved each other. If Esau had gone with Jacob to Egypt the Israelites would not have had to suffer 400 years of slavery. Father Moon says:

We must realize that Jacob made a mistake by not bringing Esau and all the family into Egypt. If they didn’t do this they could have united in Egypt and Moses would not have had to lead them into the wilderness.

Now the greatest struggle in the world is between the Muslims and Christians and particularly the separation of Jews and Palestinians. Abraham should have taken care of Ishmael’s mother, Hagar.

There were a lot of struggles between Rachel and Leah. They should have been loving each other. Esau’s family should have been taken along with Jacob’s family when they went to Egypt. This caused the Israelites to lose their blessing.

The bad relationship of individuals can lead to world conflict. Rachel and Leah were sisters. Rachel had Joseph and Benjamin. The other brothers sold Joseph and also went to expel Benjamin. Jacob made a mistake in that he didn’t bring Esau with him, this bad relationship became

the seed for the Canaanites. If the elder and younger brother had been united as one then there would be no problem today between Muslims and Jews. Because Jacob didn't embrace Esau and bring him to Egypt they went their separate ways. This became the seed for the separation of whole nations. (rough notes 9-24-03)

The Fall placed angels—both the good and evil ones—above mankind. The Fall caused people to fall to the very bottom of the universe. Even the creation has become higher than mankind.



To restore ourselves we must stop angels from dominating us and then dominate them. Jacob pioneered this. The night before Jacob was to see Esau we read that he sent his family “across the stream” of Jabbok. “And Jacob was left alone; and a man wrestled with him until the breaking of the day. When the man saw that he did not prevail against Jacob, he touched the hollow of his thigh [symbolizing the lower parts]; and Jacob’s thigh was put out of joint as he wrestled with him.” (Gen. 32:24-25) Father reveals, “Why did the angel hit Jacob’s hip bone before giving him the blessing? The human fall was caused by misuse of the hip bone; therefore, indemnity was completed through the blow to the sinful part of the body.” (*The Tribal Messiah*, section 3, chapter 1)

We read in the Bible, “Then he said, ‘Your name shall no more be called Jacob, but Israel, for you have striven with God and with men, and have prevailed’” (Gen. 32:28). Then as “The sun rose upon him” Jacob went “limping because of his thigh... And Jacob

lifted up his eyes and looked, and behold, Esau was coming, and four hundred men with him.”

## **VICTOR**

The “man” who fought Jacob was an angel sent by God. Jacob pioneered the way of strength and perseverance and love that we must have to lay a foundation for the Messiah. The name Israel means “victor”. Jacob was victorious.

## **Double Deception**

Cain and Abel were born separately, while Esau and Jacob were twins. As twins they were much closer in their relationship than Cain and Abel. Why was Jacob blessed? According to the Bible’s description he was a cunning man who lied to his elder brother and father, conniving with his mother to get Esau’s birthright. Why could God continually bless him in that case? Rebecca, his mother, also deceived her husband and son. In the Garden of Eden Eve deceived both her husband and God, and this double deception brought the fall. Eve did not listen to God but listened to Satan, and lied to her own husband; she lied to two generations, father and son.

### **Rebecca in Position of Eve**

In the restoration Rebecca took the position of Eve, doing so by lying to her husband and her son for the heavenly purpose of assisting Jacob to restore the birthright. Through her fervent desire to fulfill the work of God, Rebecca was able to restore herself to the position of heavenly mother, and help restore Jacob as a heavenly son. Step-by-step, Rebecca cooperated with her heavenly son to restore everything. Biblical scholars are confronted with an unsolvable question of morality in Jacob’s course; he was a cunning man and a swindler, yet the *Bible* indicates that God continuously blessed him. Why? Without

knowing the deep significance of God's dispensation, there is no way to understand. (4-18-77)

### **STORIES DIFFICULT TO UNDERSTAND**

The Bible, which records the providential work of God, contains many stories that are difficult to understand. For example, Rebecca deceived her husband Isaac and her first son Esau, and helped her second son Jacob receive the blessing. (Genesis 27) God took the side of that mother and son, and although they used methods that at first glance seem unjust, God still blessed them for their actions. (4-16-96)

### **MOTHER AND SON**

From the overall perspective of the Providence of Restoration, the foundation of cooperation between mother and son is very important. This was so at the time of Jacob, Moses and Jesus. God was working His Providence to separate people from satanic life and lineage by establishing the foundation of cooperation between a mother—who had to fulfill the responsibility of Eve, the originator of the Fall—and the second son of the family.

God cannot directly relate to the first son because he is in the position of having a direct blood relationship with Satan, who through the Fall was the first to dominate humankind. God has been restoring the blood lineage of goodness by having the second son, who represents the side of goodness, establish a condition. Then God had the first son, representing the side of evil, take a position subordinate to the second son.

In the family of Adam, God carried out the providence of establishing the second son, Abel, and having him subordinate the first son, Cain. Even though Eve had fallen, as a mother she could have made an effort to create unity between the two brothers. In the end, however, Cain



murdered Abel (Genesis 4:8), and the Providence of Salvation, not being fulfilled, was prolonged.

### **FORMULA OF COOPERATION**

There was also a required formula of cooperation between mother and son at the time of Noah. But that formula of meaningful cooperation was not realized until the time of Rebecca and Jacob.

The human Fall was committed by three beings: Adam, Eve and the Archangel. The Archangel seduced Eve, causing the spiritual fall, and later fallen Eve seduced Adam, causing the physical fall. As a result, they turned their backs on God, and the fallen Archangel became Satan. Since the Providence of Salvation is the Providence of Restoration, the Principle of Restoration can be carried out only by going in a direction 180 degrees opposite of the Fall. (4-16-96)

When Isaac was close to death, he blessed Jacob, believing that Jacob was actually Esau. When Esau later went to receive his father's blessing he discovered Jacob's deception, and he demanded, "Have you but one blessing, my father? Bless me, even me also, my father." But Isaac insisted, "Behold, I have made him your lord. What then can I do for you, my son?" Jacob was a man of wisdom, and in order to avoid the accusation of his elder brother, he had already conditionally traded his elder brother's birthright for a bowl of lentils. Strictly speaking, Esau had no right to be angry, for he himself had already sold his birthright. Even so, Esau was consumed with anger and determined to kill Jacob, just as Cain had killed Abel. However, Rebecca again assisted Jacob, and he fled from danger.

If Isaac had actually given Esau the blessing he gave Jacob then God would not have had a

condition to side with Jacob, and a confusion would have emerged in the dispensation. However, God was always with Jacob, and through him God's dispensation was successfully fulfilled for the first time. All the conditions of physical restoration were met and fulfilled.

### **Subjugate the Angel**

After a 21-year sojourn in a foreign land, Jacob returned to Canaan. On his way Jacob was confronted at the ford of Jabbok by the angel, who represented Satan. The fall of man came when an angel subjugated a man; therefore, in restoration man must subjugate the angel. For this reason God sent the angel to confront Jacob, wanting Jacob to win not only physically over Esau, but also spiritually over the angel. By doing so Jacob could restore man to his proper position and bring the angel down to his proper position as servant.

### **Spiritual Victory over Angelic World**

When Jacob confronted the angel at the ford of Jabbok, he had to give his entire heart and soul, even more than he had during his 21 years of servitude in Haran. Indeed, Jacob was determined even to die, and though his thigh was knocked out of joint he did not hesitate, but continued in his struggle. The angel finally acknowledged that he could not prevail against Jacob and blessed him, saying, "Your name shall no more be called Jacob, but Israel, for you have striven with God and with men, and have prevailed." What was Jacob's victory? Jacob won a spiritual victory over all the angelic world. From that time on Jacob was assisted not only by God but by the angelic world in whatever he chose to do. Spiritually Satan could not assist Esau when he confronted Jacob after 21 years of separation, and Esau had to embrace his brother.

## **With Divine Principle the Bible Becomes Logical**

You recall that Esau received a great many gifts when Jacob freely gave of his earnings of 21 years. What is the significance of this act? In doing so, Jacob set the condition by which we also can purchase our birthright through giving out our fortune. Thereafter all religious people have given up their material wealth to the satanic world, and in doing so could not only win the satanic world but win their birthright. Jesus also gave up everything, possessing nothing throughout his entire mission. Once you know the *Divine Principle* the *Bible* suddenly becomes very logical.

## **Restoration of Cain and Abel**

The restoration of Cain and Abel was completed for the first time through the lives of Jacob and Esau. God won His first victory on earth at the moment the two brothers became one and Esau embraced Jacob. Through his unity with Jacob, Esau and his descendants also received the blessing of God. Esau was born into Satan's position, but during the process of restoration Esau cooperated with Jacob, however unwillingly, and when Esau welcomed Jacob, the two positions were restored, and God could extend an equal blessing to Esau. (4-18-77)

## **MODEL COURSE**

The stories in the *Bible* are lessons for each one of us. "Jacob's course shows us the formula, or pattern, for the entire course of the providence of restoration. ... his course is the model course which a man of faith must follow" (5-27-73). One thing that we should learn from Jacob is that God wants every person to be God-centered like Jacob instead self-centered like Adam. Jacob "did not want to merely enjoy his life in Haran with the blessings God had allowed

him to have, but he desired to share his blessing with his brothers and parents back in his native home. Adam, who ignored God's will, was self-centered, minding only himself, and lost his children and all things of God's blessing. On the contrary, Jacob was so God-centered that he would give away all things for the will of God."

### **DESPERATE TO WIN OVER SATAN**

Another lesson in this true story of Jacob was that each person must fight evil within and outside our self. We have to subjugate the angels who dominate us. "They fought all through the night until they were both exhausted, but the wrestling was not over yet. How do you think the match went? They were not evenly matched. There were times when Jacob was almost defeated. What do you think? Was it Jacob who fell more times or the archangel? It is understandable that Jacob fell more times, but he would not give up even though he faced death; he fought desperately to win over the archangel. He would cling to the archangel again and again at the risk of his life. That's what made him fierce. That's exactly what happens in our course of life in faith. You are desperate to win over Satan, but Satan is so fierce that you stumble over and over again. No matter how many times you may be on the verge of defeat, you will attack him again and again.

### **NEVER GIVE UP**

"In the meantime dawn was breaking and the archangel knew that he had to leave Jacob at daybreak because the archangel belonged to darkness. So, just before the dawn, he became desperate and he broke Jacob's thigh. How do you think the archangel broke Jacob's thigh? He must have done this in a moment when Jacob was weak. If, at that moment, Jacob was not being defeated, he could not have done that. Still, Jacob could not give up. Even though his thigh was broken, Jacob would not give up. At the thought of loss he became even more furious, and attacked the archangel again and again. He would rather lose his life in attacking than lose the battle.

### **FIGHT SATAN AT RISK OF YOUR LIFE**

"At last the archangel had to give in. At last he could not but say to Jacob, 'You have won the battle; you are the victor.' He had to bless Jacob with the name 'Israel', which meant 'victor.' All through human history, Jacob was the only one who wrestled with the

archangel and was victorious over him. He well deserved the name of ‘the victor.’ That is how the word ‘Israel’—which means ‘victor’—came into being. You must know that in being victorious over the archangel, he battled at the risk of his life, and that you, too, in your life in faith, must fight against Satan at the risk of your lives.” (“Jacob’s Course And Our Life In Faith” May 27, 1973)

### **JACOB’S PERSEVERANCE**

Another lesson we can learn from Jacob is that in our life of faith we may be tested for many years. We have to be persevering like Jacob. And we should be ready to be attacked the most when we are tired after working for a long time. Just when we think we can’t take anymore, Satan will strike. We have to be vigilant and fight the good fight right up to our last breath. “We must have Jacob’s steadfastness and perseverance. ... We are exactly in the position of Jacob, aren’t we? We have nothing to be afraid of. Since we are going to do things for the sake of God, we can do just about anything, and everything will come to us. Are you like that? These are not words fabricated by man; it is the word of God. I am conveying this to you since I have put it into practice myself.” (5-27-73)

### **NEVER COMPLAIN**

“God blessed Jacob. Jacob who received the blessing went into Haran and walked the suffering course for 21 years. He went the path of persecution even being deceived ten times. He was in the sorrowful position. He was driven to the lonely position. However, if Jacob ever became a person who complained about his despair, who felt grief for oneself centering on himself, he could have never occupied the national authority of representing Israel.” (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader*)

“What do you think Jacob had to endure all night, fighting the angel at the ford of Jabbok? Don’t you imagine he sweated a lot? He shed a lot of tears, too. It was life and death. ‘Let me go back to my homeland now,’ he pleaded. It was a very tearful situation. The angel hit him so hard, he dislocated Jacob’s thigh bone, and then he released him a little bit after that. The angel saw that Jacob would rather die than be held back, so the angel finally gave up and let

Jacob go. It was that difficult. We have to go through that kind of difficulty, but it is well worth it.

### **HEAVY BURDEN**

“Jacob’s victory was on the individual level. He brought the victory up to the family level. To go from the individual level to the family level was so difficult, you can only imagine the difficulty of any level beyond that, all the way to the world level. All Blessed couples have to go through that. God expects that. Father expects that. Do you think this is just something I am saying, or are my statements based on the course of God’s dispensation? This is our mission. It is a heavy burden. Father understands every time and everything you go through. Don’t forget that for one second.” (3-1-92)

The Messiah could not come at the time of Jacob because even though Jacob had laid a foundation for the Messiah at the family level there were nations surrounding Jacob who would kill the Messiah if he came. Because mankind had grown and become divided into power units of nations God had to build a nation too. So God concentrated His efforts to build a nation. God concentrated His efforts to build the Israelites into a nation that would protect the Messiah. God had to prolong His dispensation from the family level to the national level. As history goes on it becomes more and more difficult for God to restore the world. As mankind increases in population, evil increases.

Father Moon teaches, “You may think that upon this foundation the Messiah could come immediately, but that was not the reality. Why? Nations had already been established in the Satanic world, but Israel had only set up a people. The people of Israel could not confront the nations of the Satanic world. So God prolonged history for 2000 years” (*Way Of Unification (Part 1)*).

We read in Genesis that Jacob became the father of Joseph when he returned to his home. Joseph was 30 years old when he was given power in Egypt. Then there was seven plentiful years he had predicted. This would make him 37 years old. Then the *Bible* says that sometime after that he met his father who came to Egypt

because of the famine that occurred seven years after the seven plentiful years.

Therefore there is approximately forty years between the time Jacob returned home and when he went to Egypt with his family. This 40 year time period is called the “Preparation for Egypt.”

## Preparation for Egypt

---

### 40

For the next 2000 years the *Bible* records how God worked to build the Israelites to be His chosen nation. It is important to learn here that God and Satan work through nations.

Those individuals, families, religions and nations that are in the Abel position must, like Jacob, be sacrificial and giving without complaint. And those in the Cain position must be won over by Abel’s generosity and sincerity and strength of faith in God’s will.

### *2000 YEAR PRE-ISRAELITE HISTORY*

Adam	Noah	United Generations	Brothers Divided	Jacob's Exile and Return	Preparation For Egypt
1600	400	120	40	21	40

---

We have learned that God worked in 6 periods of time from Adam to Jacob. First, there was the 1600 years from Adam to Noah; second, the 400 years from Noah to Abraham; third, the 120 year period of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob; fourth, the approximately 40 years when Jacob and Esau divided. Fifth, the 21 year exile of Jacob and his return to his home, and Sixth, the 40 year time period before he and his family went to Egypt.

Jacob's descendants were the Israelites and the Old Testament tells of their 2000-year history. We will see that these 2000 years resemble the six time periods of the previous 2000 years.

## **MOSES**

The first time period of the Jewish people was the 400 years of slavery under the pharaoh of Egypt. They had grown to a large number of people and finally, Moses, a liberator, came.

# **2000 YEAR JEWISH HISTORY**

## **Persecution in Egypt**

**Jacob** ————— **Moses**  
**400**

---

Jacob had shown vertical and horizontal love. Vertically he loved God with all his heart and horizontally he showed his love for mankind by successfully bringing unity with Esau, and restoring Cain and Abel.

Moses' mission was to lay a national foundation for the Messiah. Vertically Moses loved God. To restore horizontal love Moses was in the position of Adam or Abel and the Israelite people were in the position of Lucifer or Cain. If the Israelite people would love Moses then God could send the Messiah to them knowing that they would protect and follow the Second Adam who would lead the Israelites throughout the world as God's ambassadors to begin the building of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Father Moon has revealed that Moses' mother should have been better at raising Moses. If she had, he would not have made the tragic mistake of killing an Egyptian soldier. "He should not have killed the Egyptian soldier" (8-31-03). God originally intended for the Israelites to stay in Egypt. Moses would have been the Prime

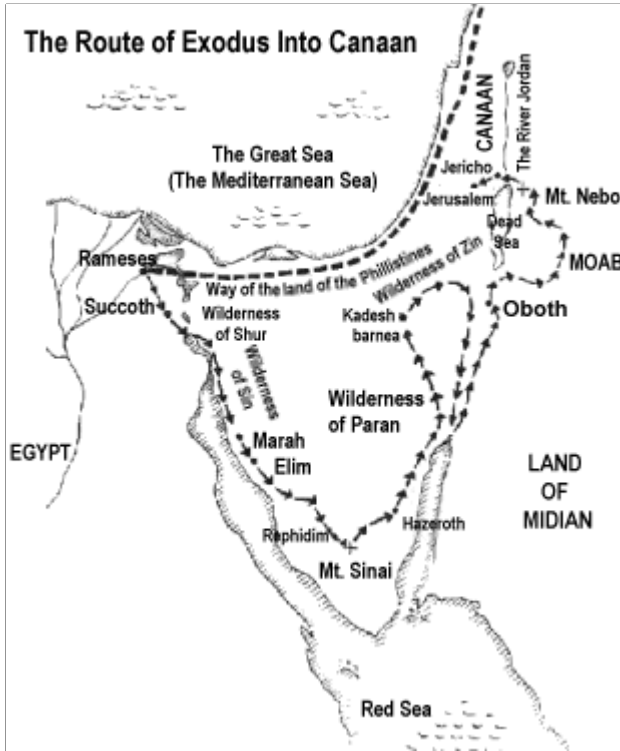


Minister who would have been able to liberate his people and inherit the nation. Because his mother did not guide her son correctly this course failed and the exodus had to occur.

After Moses killed the Egyptian he fled from Egypt and went to the wilderness in Midian and spent 40 years there restoring his 40 years in the Pharaoh's palace. Forty is a number for separation from Satan. After this period of exile God told Moses: "I have seen the misery of my people who are in Egypt, and have heard their cry because of their taskmasters; I know their sufferings, and I have come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land to a good and broad land, a land flowing with milk and honey, to the place of the Canaanites.... And now, behold, the cry of the people of Israel has come to me, and I have seen the oppression with which the Egyptians oppress them. Come, I will send you to Pharaoh that you may bring forth my people, the sons of Israel, out of Egypt." (Ex. 3:7-10)

Moses came back and performed miracles to prove he was the true leader of the Israelites sent by God to liberate them. But God saw that the Israelites did not have total faith in Moses so He had Moses not take them the direct route along the Mediterranean from Egypt to Canaan which would have taken a matter of weeks (21 days or less). "When Pharaoh let the people go, God did not lead them on the road through the Philistine country, though that was shorter.

For God said, 'If they face war, they might change their minds and return to Egypt.'" (Ex. 13:17)



God felt that they would be afraid of battle with the Philistines, and they would return to Egypt. God needed time to work with them so that they would be a united, strong people who could successfully settle in Canaan.

God led them across the Red Sea and through the Sinai wilderness. Those months in the wilderness were to be a time for Moses and the Israelites to be trained and tested as a chosen people, as God's champions. God could not allow them to enter Canaan unless they were united, strong and fearless. To lay a Foundation for the Messiah they had to overcome Cain and Abel's tragic disunity.

To get the Israelites out of Egypt Moses deceived the Pharaoh by telling him they needed a three days journey into the wilderness. The Pharaoh told him to stay there to do their sacrifices. Moses convinced the Pharaoh by saying: “It would not be right to do so; for the sacrifices we offer to the Lord our God are offensive to the Egyptians. If we sacrifice offerings abominable to the Egyptians before their eyes, will they not stone us? We must go a three days’ journey into the wilderness and sacrifice to the Lord our God as he commands us.” (Ex. 8:26-27)

This three-day period is symbolic for a principled period of time to separate from Satan and start a new providential course. Before offering the sacrifice of Isaac, Abraham waited three days. When Jacob started his providential course to Canaan, he left Haran by deceiving Laban with a three-day period of separation. (Gen. 31:19-22)

### **TEN COMMANDMENTS**

At Mt. Sinai Moses fasted for forty days and was given the Ten Commandments. They were written on two stones—five laws on each. This symbolized the five physical senses and the five spiritual senses or the unity of heaven and earth.

When Moses came down from the mountain he found the Israelites worshipping a golden calf as their God. Moses was angered and threw the tablets of stone to the ground, breaking them. Moses should not have done this. It was like striking the Messiah. To restore this Moses had to go back and fast again and receive the Ten Commandments again. This time they accepted them and built the Ark of the Covenant and the Tabernacle which housed the tablets.

The tablets symbolized Adam and Eve who were to be perfect incarnations of the Word. Since the Fall another man and woman have to fulfill that role. This is why the Messiah is symbolized as the “living stone” (1 Peter 2:4). One reason a stone is used as a symbol is because the Messiah is stronger than evil. He is like a stone in being tough and unmovable.

God had also shown that He was relating to people on a higher level by giving words and asking for obedience to them rather than giving animal sacrifices. Mankind had been climbing to a higher spiritual level. After the Fall mankind fell into a deep darkness and then turned to animism, then polytheism and then monotheism. Gradually God was able to give more of Himself. Still the people were so primitive that He gave many laws. As mankind grows higher spiritually through history God is able to speak more and more clearly. Today we live in a sophisticated world, and God is trying to speak in a more advanced manner.

Next God chose twelve people to spy for forty days. Only Joshua and Caleb had faith that the Israelites could enter Canaan and win. The Israelites constantly complained and again demanded a new leader and wanted to go back to Egypt—even though it meant slavery.

If the months in the wilderness had been enough time for the Israelites to grow in unity and strength they could have gone to Canaan, but when ten of the twelve spies came back fearful, then God had to give a greater time to restore this lack of faith and to teach them to be His champions. The people wanted to stone Joshua and Caleb. We read: “Then all the congregation raised a loud cry; and the people wept that night. And all the people of Israel said to them, ‘Would that we had died in the land of Egypt! Or would that we had died in this wilderness! Why does the Lord bring us into this land, to fall by the sword? Our wives and our little ones will become a prey; would it not be better for us to go back to Egypt?’ And they said to one another, ‘Let us choose a captain, and go back to Egypt.’ Then Moses and Aaron fell on their faces before all the assembly of the congregation of the people of Israel. And Joshua the son of Nun and Caleb the son of Jephunneh, who were among those who had spied out the land, rent their clothes, and said to all the congregation of the people of Israel, ‘The land which we passed through to spy it out, is an exceedingly good land. If the Lord delights in us, he will bring us into this land and give it to us, a land which flows with milk and honey. Only, do not rebel against the Lord; and do not fear the people of the land, for they are no more than bread for us; their protection is removed from them, and the Lord is with us; do not

fear them.’ But the whole congregation threatened to stone them.” (Num. 14:1-10)

Moses had sent them to spy out the land of Canaan and told them to see how strong or weak they were and he said, “Be bold and bring some of the fruit of the land. Now the time was the season of the first ripe grapes” (Num. 13:20). When the spies came back they said, “We came to the land to which you sent us; it flows with milk and honey and this is its fruit. Yet the people who dwell in the land are strong, and cities are fortified and very large.” (Num. 13:27-28)

We must believe that God is on our side and will help us. And because God is on our side we will win. Throughout the *Bible* we are taught not to be dismayed or anxious. We must have faith. We must be intrepid. The Israelites failed to be courageous. God was in agony when He saw them fail. God had wanted them to go into Canaan. God told Moses: “How long will this people despise me? And how long will they not believe in me, in spite of all the signs which I have done among them?” (Num. 14:11)

God was continually frustrated by their lack of faith and their love of this fallen world and its low standards. God was forced to have them wander in the wilderness for forty years to indemnify their lack of faith. Only the next generation could enter Canaan. He said: “But your little ones, who you said would become a prey, I will bring in, and they shall know the land which you have despised. But as for you, your dead bodies shall fall in this wilderness. And your children shall be shepherds in the wilderness forty years and shall suffer for your faithlessness, until the last of your dead bodies lies in the wilderness. According to the number of the days in which you spied out the land, forty days, for every day a year, you shall bear you iniquity, forty years, and you shall know my displeasure.” (Num. 14:31-34)

After 40 years in the wilderness the Israelites were to enter Canaan, but Moses made another tragic mistake in a moment of rage. The people complained of water. Moses was told by God to strike a rock once and bring them water. Moses did so and water came. But Moses heard the people murmuring in resentment against him that

they had been without water and in anger he struck the rock twice with his rod. God then told him that he could not enter Canaan: “Because you did not trust in me, to show my holiness before the eyes of the Israelites, therefore you shall not bring this assembly into the land which I have given them.” (Num. 20:12)

Moses was in sight of Canaan and now he couldn't go in. He had worked so hard for so many years and now because of one seemingly small mistake he couldn't enter Canaan. The precious goal was in his grasp and now it was taken away. He begged God, “Let me cross over, I pray, and see the good land beyond the Jordan, that good hill country, and Lebanon” (Deut. 3:25). God answered firmly, “... Speak no more to me of this matter” (Deut. 3:26). Moses died on a mountain looking at Canaan but without setting foot in it. This is a lesson for each of us to control our emotions. We are not supposed to have a bad temper.

Christ is symbolized by a rock: “the rock was Christ” (I Cor. 10:4) and a “white stone” (Rev. 2:17). Christ gives life. He is a tree of life. He gives water of life. Christ gives life giving truth and love. Adam failed to become the rock that would give the “water of life” from God, which his descendants would drink forever. The rock Moses struck was a rock that yielded no water. This symbolized fallen Adam. Satan had struck Adam and killed him spiritually and was unable to give “water”. When Moses struck the rock, it gave water. This showed a restoration of fallen Adam to perfect Adam or Christ who would come to give the water of life to all fallen man. Christ said: “whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life.” (John: 4:14)

God had Moses strike the rock once as a condition to restore the fallen Adam to perfect Adam. When he did the rock symbolized Christ and then when Moses struck it again he laid a foundation or basis for the Second Adam, the restored Adam, to be struck.

### **BE STRONG AND OF GOOD COURAGE**

God passes on a person's mission to another if they are unable to fulfill that mission. Joshua was given leadership because he was strong and had not been faithless during the 40-day spying period:

we read, "... as I was with Moses, so I will be with you; I will not fail or forsake you. Be strong and of good courage; for you shall cause this people to inherit the land which I swore to their fathers to give them." (Josh. 1:5-6)

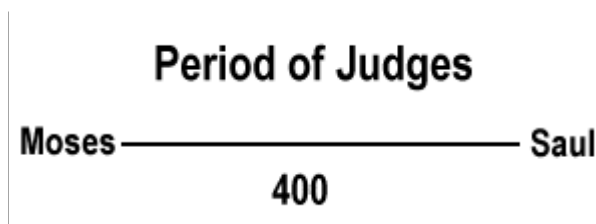
Joshua and the second generation of Israelites which had been born in the wilderness and had no ties to Egypt were determined to follow Joshua at the risk of their lives, saying ... "All that you have commanded us we will do, and wherever you send us we will go. Just as we obeyed Moses in all things, so we will obey you. ... Whoever rebels against your words, whatever you command shall be put to death. Only be strong and courageous." (Joshua 1:16-18)

After God had tried three times with the Israelites to enter Canaan they finally fulfilled the conditions necessary to enter. They presented faithful reports after spying at Jericho saying, "Truly the lord has given all the land into our hands; and moreover all the inhabitants of the land melt in fear before us" (Josh 2:24). The Israelites were centered on Joshua and the Tabernacle and successfully went into Canaan. Joshua was a successful central figure. The central figures of God have tremendous missions. If they succeed then so much good can happen but if they fail so many people suffer. It is agony for God to see His predestined will of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth prolonged.

The Israelite people had made a condition to restore the Garden of Eden. The Israelites in the position of Lucifer or Cain did not betray Joshua who was in the position of Adam or Abel. They united as brothers centered on God and now they had a land of their own. But even though they had accomplished forming the national Foundation for the Messiah, the Messiah could not come yet because they were still not strong enough as a people to stand up to the other nations surrounding them and they were still too primitive in their understanding of God and their mission as the chosen people. God's dispensation would be prolonged until they were truly united and longing for the Messiah. The 400 years of slavery in Egypt were followed by 400 years known as the Period of Judges.

The *Bible* is symbolic in its use of numbers and rounds this period of Judges to 400. We read in I Kings 6:1: “In the four hundred and eightieth year after the people of Israel came out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon’s reign over Israel....” Solomon came after the 40-year reign of Saul and the 40-year reign of David. Eighty from 480 means 400 years were given for the period of Judges.

Scholars have found that the period lasted from approximately 1200 B.C. to 1000 B.C. or 200 years. They say that some of the Judges’ years of rule were “stylized” to show a full generation of 40 years or two generations of 80 years.



During this time the Israelites were divided into tribes and during moments of crisis leaders appeared called Judges, such as Gideon and Samson. Finally, under God’s influence, the Israelite tribes banded together to form a nation to protect themselves.

### **SAUL DAVID SOLOMON**

The last Judge, Samuel, anointed Saul as King. God finally had His nation. But He couldn’t send the Second Adam until they had demonstrated their loyalty to God. God tested them by seeing if they could honor and center their lives on a symbolic Messiah. With Moses God had used the Ark of the Covenant to be the symbolic Messiah. Now that God had a nation with a king, He wanted a temple built, a more permanent structure. Unfortunately, Saul failed to build the temple. The next King, David, also failed to build the temple in his 40-year rule. The third King, Solomon, built the temple in his 40-year reign.



We see in Jewish history three attempts by God to build the temple in the three 40-year reigns of Saul, David and Solomon. This 120-year period is called the United Kingdom.

## United Kingdom

Saul    David    Solomon

---

120

Still, God couldn't send the Messiah to the Israelites. Building the temple was not enough. They had to honor the temple to show they could honor the Second Adam. Unfortunately, Solomon defiled the temple (symbolically the Second Adam) by letting his wives worship pagan gods there. Man again failed to lay the proper foundation for the Messiah.

### **GOLDEN AGE OF ISRAEL**

This was the golden age of Israel. It was the greatest and most powerful nation on earth. God's plan was for Israel to keep that position so that the Messiah would be born into royalty to a nation that dominated the world. God said to Solomon "if you walk before me, as David your father walked, with integrity of heart and uprightness, doing according to all that I have commanded you, and keeping my statutes and my ordinances, then I will establish your royal throne over Israel forever." (1 Kings 9:4-5)

But God warned that if Solomon did not follow God's commandments then Israel would decline and lose its power and position. God teaches that nations fall when they disobey His laws.

Under Solomon's rule, Israel's powerful army controlled a vast empire. It was the leader in economics, trade, art, music and science. God explained that if Israel centered itself on God they would prosper and never be dominated by another empire and if they didn't they would be humiliated, "But if you or your sons turn away from

me and do not observe the commands and decrees I have given you and go off to serve other gods and worship them, then I will cut off Israel from the land I have given them and will reject this temple I have consecrated for my Name. Israel will then become a byword and an object of ridicule among all peoples. This temple will become a heap of ruins. All who pass by will be appalled and will scoff and say, ‘Why has the Lord done such a thing to this land and to this temple?’ People will answer, ‘Because they have forsaken the Lord their God, who brought their ancestors out of Egypt, and have embraced other gods, worshiping and serving them—that is why the Lord brought all this disaster on them.’” (1 Kings 9:6-9)

Sadly, Israel became a “heap of ruins.” Other empires came after the decline of Israel: the Babylonian, Persian, Greek and Roman Empire. Tragically, Jesus was born in a barn in an obscure country instead of in a palace as a direct descendent of a king to a nation that had established world dominion.

Why? Because central figures like Solomon disobeyed God. In Deut. 17:17 we read that God commands a king to not take many wives, “The King must not take many wives or his heart will be led astray.” Solomon had 700 wives and 300 concubines. He rejected God’s word. We read:

King Solomon, however, loved many foreign women besides Pharaoh’s daughter—Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Sidonians and Hittites. They were from nations about which the LORD had told the Israelites, “You must not intermarry with them, because they will surely turn your hearts after their gods.” Nevertheless, Solomon held fast to them in love. He had seven hundred wives of royal birth and three hundred concubines, and his wives led him astray. As Solomon grew old, his wives turned his heart after other gods, and his heart was not fully devoted to the LORD his God, as the heart of David his father had been. Although he had forbidden Solomon to follow other gods, Solomon did not keep the Lord’s command. (1 Kings 11:1-4, 10)

The consequence was the loss of national greatness and prolongation of the coming of Christ.

The punishment was severe for the Israelites. God the father saw His children pay for their crimes. Because the Israelites were not united with God a division of Cain and Abel came to their nation. In Jewish history this was a 400-year period called the Divided Kingdoms.

## **Divided Kingdoms of North and South**

---

**400**

---

Ten of the 12 tribes of Israel traveled to the north. They had the name of Israel, God's name for his people, but He did not favor them. They were the Cain side. God favored the Abel side—the two tribes in the Southern Kingdom of Judah because they were more righteous.

### **INDIRECT METHOD**

“God wanted men and women to have the feeling of love for each other. He wanted them to perfectly fulfill the purpose of creation and to experience love in a free and natural way. That is the reason why He wanted to unite with man centering upon love. However, man took the opposite course through the fall, and the central point for connection was taken by the archangel. As a result, the whole universe became a mass of confusion. The central point, love, which should have been connected to God, was actually bound to Satan. The motivation for connection became opposite to God's motivation. Therefore, in man, the standard of the conscience and the standard of the flesh are opposed to each other. People have related to each other centered upon Satan's love, not God's love.

“For that reason, mankind has been suffering through 6,000 biblical years up till now in order to be liberated from the bondage of Satan's love. God has been prevented from entering the inner mind of people directly to recover the necessary central point, so He has had to adopt an indirect method to penetrate their conscience. In history, therefore, God sent prophets, saints, and sages, hoping that through them fallen man would receive His love and truth.” (October 13, 1970)

God's desire is always for unity. Division is Satan's way of working. To help bring the Israelites together God sent prophets such as Elijah, Jonah, Amos and Hosea. Hosea lived in the eighth century B.C. He writes out of the agony he feels from his faithless wife. Hosea compares this personal tragedy to God's feelings about His relationship to Israel that is constantly unfaithful to God.

God speaks of His broken heart: “The more I called them, the more they went from me; they kept sacrificing to the Baals, and burning incense to idols. Yet it was I who taught Ephraim to walk, I took them up in my arms; but they did not know that I healed them. I led them with cords of compassion, with the bands of love, and I became to them as one who eases the yoke on their jaws, and I bent down to them and fed them” (Hosea 11:2-4).

Because Israel refused to listen to the prophets, God was helpless to see His people taken into captivity. When we do not listen to God's prophets who tell us to repent and change our ways we prolong God's goal of restoring the world. It has been heartbreaking for God to see mankind rebel against those who he calls to speak for Him because it means that they will bring suffering upon themselves. Ignorance is not bliss. Ignorance of God's will brings incredible tragedy. We reap what we sow. The prophet Jeremiah told them:

And though the LORD has sent all his servants the prophets to you again and again, you have not listened or paid any attention. They said, “Turn now, each of you, from your evil ways and your evil practices, and you can stay in the land the Lord gave to you and your fathers for ever and ever. Do not

follow other gods to serve and worship them; do not provoke me to anger with what your hands have made. Then I will not harm you.” “But you did not listen to me,” declares the Lord, “and you have provoked me with what your hands have made, and you have brought harm to yourselves.” (Jeremiah 25:4-7)

The ten tribes of the north were attacked by the Assyrians and destroyed. To this day we do not know what happened to them. They are called the ten lost tribes of Israel. The two tribes in the south were invaded by the Babylonians. In 586 B.C. the Babylonians stormed Jerusalem, pillaging and burning. Their king, Nebuchadnezzar, ordered mass deportations. The Israelites now begin a period in their history called the Babylonian Exile.

The journey to Babylon was difficult and heart-breaking, but when they arrived the Assyrian and Babylonian monarchs allowed them to worship in freedom. They prayed, sang psalms and studied the Torah. The Hebrews became a very tight-knit religious community and established laws and traditions.

They became adept in industry and commerce. One Jewish family, for example, was put in control of the largest private bank in Assyria. Soon, Hebrews were landowners, merchants and high government officials. Still, they longed for Jerusalem.

In 538 B.C., Cyrus the Great of Persia captured Babylon. The Israelites were a refugee group, and Cyrus let those who wanted to return to Jerusalem to do so. He even helped in rebuilding the temple at Jerusalem by giving government money and returning some items that were sacred to the Jews that the Babylonians had kept. The exiles returned home in stages. The exile in Babylon had lasted 70 years. And after 140 more years the Jewish people had returned to Israel. The *Bible* uses symbolic and prophetic years in keeping with God’s pattern of restoration by saying it lasted 70 years. In Jeremiah 25:11 we read, “This whole land shall become a ruin and a waste, and these nations shall serve the King of Babylon seventy years.”

Jeremiah says the captivity in Babylon lasted 70 years. Actual history shows that the *Bible* is close to being literal here. Some historians number the years from 605 B.C., in which the first deportation happened, until 538 B.C. when Cyrus freed the Israelites. Six hundred and five to 538 is 67 years. Others begin with 586, when the last deportation took place and the temple was destroyed, until 516, when the second temple was built: 586 to 516 is 70 years.

The 70 years in captivity were followed by approximately 140 years of Jewish return until God sent the prophet Malachi. This 210-year period is called the Jewish captivity and return.

## **Jewish captivity and return**

---

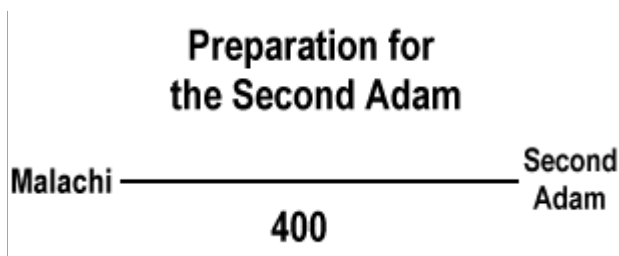
**210**

They rebuilt the temple in Jerusalem. But times were hard. There was drought and famine. The people became spiritually indifferent. Then God sent a reformer, Malachi, to revitalize the faith in the 5th century B.C. He spoke in the streets and preached in the market place. He chastised the people for their sins and the priesthood for its corruption.

God also prepared the rest of the world for the Messiah's coming by sending Buddha to India, Confucius to the Orient and Socrates to Greece. They raised the people's level of spiritual advancement. This would make it a little easier for the rest of the world to accept the Messiah when he came.

The King James *Bible* says in the margins of the book of Malachi that the dates in the *Bible* show this to be 397 B.C. Historians say the actual, literal date of this book is close to that symbolic number—around 450 or 435 B.C.

The last period of Jewish history is the 400 years of preparation for the Messiah. Approximately four hundred years after Malachi the Second Adam was born. His name was Jesus.



***2000 YEAR JEWISH HISTORY***

Persecution In Egypt	Period of Judges	United Kingdom	Divided Kingdoms	Jewish Captivity	Preparation for Messiah
400	400	120	400	210	400

The nation of Israel was a small nation compared to the other powers around it. And because it was strategically located between these other empires they often saw foreign soldiers march through their country.

In the 400 years before Jesus they were dominated by such powers as the Greeks and the Romans. The Israelites were burdened with cruel rulers who imposed heavy taxes and did not respect their religious beliefs and traditions.

One ruler tried to destroy the Jewish religion. In 167 B.C. he decreed that the Jewish religion was illegal. Anyone who was found carrying a copy of the scriptures was put to death. He set up an altar to the chief god, Zeus, in the Jewish temple, and Jews were forced to offer sacrifices. Altars were set up of Zeus all over Israel, and many Jews preferred to die rather than go against their laws and worship false gods.

An uprising took place against this called the Maccabean Revolt and there was war for 6 years. The 400 years before Jesus were years of turmoil. Just before Jesus was born the governor of the Roman Province of Syria had to bring in three legions to crush a rebellion. Around two thousand rebels were crucified as punishment.

At the time of Jesus' birth the Roman ruler wanted a census taken to determine taxes and this is why Joseph and Mary went to Bethlehem. The people hated paying taxes to Rome. This particular census was for the people of Judea but the people of Galilee were so angry there was a revolutionary movement which the Roman soldiers crushed violently.

Jesus lived in a dangerous time. Not only had he to deal with living under brutal foreign rulers but the Israelite people, like Christianity today, was divided into different denominations who interpreted the scriptures differently.

The Pharisees were into the details of the Old Testament laws, and Jesus chastised them for being focused on the letter of the laws instead of the spirit of the laws.

The Sadducees were a smaller group but were more wealthy and powerful because they were influential political leaders. They disagreed with some of the beliefs of the Pharisees. The division between the Pharisees and Sadducees is similar to the division today between Conservative and Liberal Christians.

The Essenes were a group who lived in a monastery in the desert and felt they were the true forerunners to prepare the way for the coming of the Messiah.

One thing that all these Jews had in common was that they did not see Jesus as the Messiah. The Pharisees, for example, envisioned their savior as a warrior-Messiah who would lead them to battle and crush their enemies. When Jesus appeared, claiming to be the Lord, they all rejected him. God works in ways that completely baffle the vast majority of people. Mankind is fallen and ruled by Satan who manipulates people to go against the champions that God sends.



God had hoped that the Israelites would have been different than most people. He had hoped they would know his suffering heart because of their suffering; that they would have been trained by the saints and prophets who God had sent. But Satan influenced the people to see Jesus as a dangerous criminal who was a threat to the family and nation. Jesus, the greatest man who ever lived, was seen as a kook—someone of the lunatic fringe in society.

Many Christians today feel that the Lord is coming to them. Like the Israelites, Christians are a minority in the world. Like the Israelites they are divided into different denominations who interpret the scriptures differently and yet all are confident that when the Lord returns they will see him.

The *Divine Principle* teaches that Christianity has not fully understood who Jesus really was and what God's will is. The next chapter reveals the true view of Jesus. It is God's view, not man's view. Nothing is more important than understanding Jesus' words and life.

## *Chapter 4*

### *Jesus of Nazareth*

At Madison Square Garden in New York City Sun Myung Moon spoke to an overflowing crowd of 30,000 on September 18, 1974 saying that God is determined to save this world by sending the Messiah:

God made His determination clear in the Bible: 'I have spoken, and I will bring it to pass; I have purposed, and I will do it.' (Isaiah 46:11) God did not say He might do it. He said He will do it, showing His absolute determination to restore man and the world to the original design.

How? By the Messiah. To restore mankind, God sent His only son, Jesus Christ, into this world as the Savior – as the Messiah. Two thousand years ago, Jesus Christ came into our world as the author of life. He came to transform all sinful people into Christ-like people. He came to restore the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Therefore, Jesus Christ proclaimed as his first gospel, 'Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.' (Matt: 4:17) With the coming of Jesus Christ, people were truly at the threshold of the Kingdom of Heaven.

#### **Preparation for the Messiah**

However, before God could send His Son to restore the world, He had to prepare the way step by step, starting with one individual and expanding to a nation, in order to establish a foundation of faith upon which the Messiah could come.

After all, this world had been Satan's world. If the Messiah were to come to this earth without a prepared foundation, the satanic world would destroy him. So God worked diligently and carefully to establish one nation, one sovereignty over which He could have control. The nation of Israel was the result of that preparation for the Messiah. God prepared the nation of Israel as the "landing site" for the Messiah. Upon Israel's foundation of faith, God could send His ultimate champion, the Messiah.

Two thousand years ago, people were awaiting the coming of the Messiah, but for very self-centered reasons. They thought that the Messiah was coming as a sort of military conqueror to avenge them and defeat the Roman Empire, and to reward Israel with great glory and power in an earthly sense. And they simply missed the whole point.

What is the Bible, more precisely? The Bible has been a book of mystery. However, the Bible contains God's message to you and me. The Bible does not use plain language, but is written in symbols and parables. Do you know why God has presented the Bible in symbols and parables? Why did He not speak the truth clearly? God has had to deal with the world of evil. Throughout the ages, God has hand-picked His workers, or champions, out of this evil world. Abraham was such a champion. Noah was such a champion.

### **The Bible Is a Coded Message**

And God's champions were always in the utter minority in the evil world. If God revealed His strategy too openly or plainly, the enemy would use that information against God's champions. Thus, the Bible was written as a coded message, so that only God's agents or champions could decipher it.

Let me make an analogy. To protect her security, America sends out many agents overseas to collect vital information concerning potential enemies. When the home headquarters is communicating with these agents overseas, particularly in enemy territory, would they communicate openly and plainly? No. No one would be that naive. They would communicate in coded messages — secret messages — so that the enemy could not decipher them.

Throughout history, righteous people have faced nothing but suffering on this earth, simply because they were in enemy territory, and Satan did not want to have God's agents prosper. Whenever Satan's forces discovered God's representatives, they tried to destroy them. We must realize that God has had to give His instructions in coded messages. Thus the Bible is written in symbols and parables. In a sense, the Bible is intended to be mysterious. Then how can we know the true meaning of those symbols and parables?

It is simple, in a way. If you are an agent dispatched by your headquarters, and you want to decipher a coded message, then you must either have a code book, or communicate directly with your home headquarters. By the same token, the meaning of the symbols and parables in the Bible can only be clear when we communicate with our "home headquarters" — God. This is truly the only sure way we can know the ultimate meaning of the Bible.

Two thousand years ago our Lord Jesus Christ brought the blueprint for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. However, he could not speak plainly about his plan even to his own disciples. Jesus spoke in figures and parables. Why? Jesus knew the adverse circumstances in which he had to work. There was political pressure from the Roman Empire. There was the ruling monarchy, who opposed any change. And

there was a strong religious system and tradition. These could all be directed against the building of the Kingdom of God.

Jesus came to kindle the fire of revolution in people, which would in due course change the structure and the life of the entire nation. But he could not speak plainly of any of this even to his own disciples. Instead, he had to speak in figures and parables, saying, “He who has ears to hear, let him hear.” (Luke 14:35)

If you attempt to interpret the Bible literally, word for word, letter for letter, without understanding the nature of the coded message of the Bible, you are liable to make a big mistake.

In the *Divine Principle* and in other revelations given to Sun Myung Moon we can now know “the coded message of the Bible.” Father Moon received amazing revelations about what happened to Jesus. Up till now we didn’t know very much about the historical Jesus. The most we know is written in the *New Testament*. The *Old Testament* and the *New Testament* comprise the *Bible* which has become the most printed, most studied and most influential book in human history. Even though all Christians accept the Bible as the word of God, there have been many disagreements over passages and there has been division over how we should apply the teachings of the Bible to our practical, everyday life. There are many different views of Jesus and interpretations of his words and those of the other writers of the *New Testament* such as St. Paul.

We have learned in the *Divine Principle* that God worked over 2000 years to raise the nation of Israel to be the nation that would protect and follow the Messiah. It has been 2000 years since Jesus was born. Hundreds of millions, if not billions of people, celebrate his birth on December 25 in a holiday called Christmas. In a speech Father Moon gave on January 3, 2004 titled “The Birthday Celebration for Jesus” he said, “Today is Jesus Birthday. The world thought that it was December 25th but it is really January 3rd.”

## **TESTED**

We learned in the previous chapter on Israelite history how God worked to save mankind by having his Central Figures re-enact the Fall and instead of them deceiving God they deceived Satan, the angel Lucifer. They had to be tested. Jesus' family was likewise tested. Let's begin with Jesus' birth. Christianity wrongly believes that Jesus was born miraculously by a spirit.

## **BIRTH OF JESUS**

Mary was chosen to be Jesus' mother. God did His best to guide her and her family to unite and create a safe community for Jesus to grow up in. At first, things went well. Mary did as God told her to do and got engaged to a man named Joseph. We read in the New Testament that during her engagement she followed God's call to go to be with her relative, Elizabeth, who was married to the high priest, Zachariah.

In the book of Luke we read that the priest, Zachariah (also spelled Zechariah), and his wife Elizabeth "were righteous in the sight of God, observing all the Lord's commands and decrees blamelessly. But they were childless because Elizabeth was not able to conceive, and they were both very old." We read that once when Zachariah was performing a ceremony at the Temple:

An angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing at the right side of the altar of incense. When Zechariah saw him, he was startled and was gripped with fear. But the angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard. Your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you are to call him John. He will be a joy and delight to you, and many will rejoice because of his birth, for he will be great in the sight of the Lord. He is never to take wine or other fermented drink, and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit even before he is born. He will bring back many of the people of Israel to the Lord their God. And he will go on before the Lord, in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers

to their children and the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous—to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.”

Then Zechariah asked the angel, “How can I be sure of this? I am an old man and my wife is well along in years.” The angel said to him, “I am Gabriel. I stand in the presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to tell you this good news. After this his wife Elizabeth became pregnant and for five months remained in seclusion. “The Lord has done this for me,” she said. “In these days he has shown his favor and taken away my disgrace among the people.”

Then we read that the angel Gabriel goes to visit a relative of Elizabeth named Mary:

In the sixth month of Elizabeth’s pregnancy, God sent the angel Gabriel to Nazareth, a town in Galilee, to a virgin pledged to be married to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. The virgin’s name was Mary. The angel went to her and said, “Greetings, you who are highly favored! The Lord is with you.”

Mary was greatly troubled at his words and wondered what kind of greeting this might be. But the angel said to her, “Do not be afraid, Mary; you have found favor with God. You will conceive and give birth to a son, and you are to call him Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over Jacob’s descendants forever; his kingdom will never end.”

“How will this be,” Mary asked the angel, “since I am a virgin?”

The Angel Gabriel told her that her relative Elizabeth was pregnant: “Even Elizabeth your relative is going to have a child in her old age, and she who was said to be unable to conceive is in her sixth month.” Then we read that Mary immediately goes to visit Elizabeth, “At that time Mary got ready and hurried to a town in the hill country of Judea, where she entered Zechariah’s home and greeted Elizabeth.” When Elizabeth saw Mary the baby she was carrying “leaped in her womb.” Her baby would grow up to become the famous evangelist, John the Baptist. Then we read how Elizabeth became spiritually open and realized that Mary was given the mission to bear the Messiah:

When Elizabeth heard Mary’s greeting, the baby leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit. In a loud voice she exclaimed: “Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the child you will bear! But why am I so favored, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? As soon as the sound of your greeting reached my ears, the baby in my womb leaped for joy. Blessed is she who has believed that the Lord would fulfill his promises to her!”

Then we read that “Mary stayed with Elizabeth for about three months and then returned home.” Elizabeth was in the position of Cain and Mary was in the position of Abel. Jacob had two wives—the elder Leah and the younger Rachel. Leah was in the position of Cain and Rachel was in the position of Abel. Leah hated Rachel. She was jealous of Jacob’s attention for Rachel. Thankfully, Elizabeth restored Leah’s mistake by offering, with a good heart, Mary to Zachariah. Father Moon teaches:

Within Jacob’s family there were two sisters, Rachel and Leah, and there was always conflict between them. At the time of Jesus Christ, the relationship between Elizabeth and Mary was reversed. (1-1-96)

In Jacob’s family, Leah hated her younger sister Rachel and she completely dominated Jacob and



produced ten children, whereas Rachel had only two children. However, Elizabeth, the wife of Zachariah actually volunteered to introduce Mary to Zachariah because of her revelation from God. She allowed Mary to stay in her family for three months. A woman doesn't become pregnant through staying overnight. If you really research into the Bible you will see this. Therefore, after three months of staying in Zachariah's household Mary became pregnant. Mary had the responsibility to indemnify the failure of Eve as well as the failure of Rachel and Leah. Therefore while she was pregnant she had to deceive her husband figure (Joseph) as well as her father figure. (2-13-97)

Mary stayed in their home for three months and became pregnant with Jesus by Zachariah. Initially these three re-enacted the Fall correctly. They were spiritually moved and saw what they were doing was what God wanted them to do. But then they weakened. Satan was able to intervene and influenced them to not completely fulfill their mission. Just like so many people's New Year's resolutions fade away, Zachariah and Elizabeth's understanding and commitment faded away. Zachariah counseled Mary to tell Joseph the Holy Spirit was the father of her child. Then he sent her back home to Joseph and sadly, Zachariah and Elizabeth abandoned her.

We are not told why they did not continue to help Mary. Perhaps Elizabeth began to feel like Leah and resented her husband's attention he gave Mary. Perhaps Zachariah and Elizabeth became afraid of what they were doing. They were in great danger because adultery at that time in Israel brought the death penalty. Father Moon teaches:

#### **MARY RECEIVES SURPRISING MESSAGE**

Mary, when she was engaged to Joseph, received from the Archangel Gabriel the surprising message that the Messiah would be born through her. (Luke 1:31) In those days, if an unmarried woman became pregnant, she would be killed. But Mary accepted the will of God with absolute faith, saying, "Behold, I am

the handmaid of the Lord; let it be to me according to your word.” (Luke 1:38)

Mary consulted with the priest Zechariah, who was her relative and was highly respected. Zechariah’s wife Elizabeth, with the help of God, was pregnant with John the Baptist. She said to Mary “Blessed are you among women and blessed is the fruit of your womb. Why is this granted to me that the mother of my Lord should come to me?” (Luke 1:42-43) With these words she testified to the coming birth of Jesus. In this way God let Mary, Zechariah, and Elizabeth know about the birth of the Messiah before anyone else. All of them had the absolutely crucial mission of following the will of God and serving Jesus. Zechariah’s family let Mary stay in their house. Jesus was conceived in the house of Zechariah.

#### **NOT COMMON SENSE OR LEGAL**

Elizabeth and Mary were cousins on their mothers’ side. But according to God’s Providence, they were considered sisters, with Elizabeth as the elder (Cain) and Mary as the younger (Abel). Mary received Elizabeth’s help in the presence of Zechariah. Through this cooperation, Zechariah’s family, on the national level, indemnified the lack of unity between mother and son with Leah and Rachel in Jacob’s family (Genesis 29-30). This allowed Jesus to be conceived. For the first time in history, there could be born on earth, free of satanic accusation and through a prepared womb, the seed of the Son of God—the seed of the True Father. In this way, the only begotten Son of God, the owner of the first love of God, was born for the first time in history. Mary had to achieve something that could not be understood by common sense, nor easily tolerated under the law of those times. Mary, Elizabeth and Zechariah had been spiritually moved. They followed the revelation that came from God and unconditionally believed that it was the will and desire of God.

## **WALL OF PROTECTION**

Although the Son of God could be born on earth, he needed a wall of protection to grow up safely in the satanic world and fulfill the will of God. God had hoped that these three people in the family of Zechariah would establish that protective foundation. There are many points to consider with regard to how seriously the three had to dedicate themselves to protecting and serving the Son of God, and how long they should have been united with each other.

In the Bible it is recorded, "And Mary remained with her [Elizabeth] about three months, and returned to her home." (Luke 1:56) After that, there is no biblical record of any further communication between Mary and Elizabeth and Zechariah. From the time Mary left Zechariah's house, difficulties began for Mary and Jesus. The family of Zechariah should have been the wall of protection for Jesus until the very end. (4-16-96)

Adultery is one of the worst things in God's eyes but in the providence of restoration sometimes extraordinary things have to be done. Eve deceived Adam and to restore that some central figure women had to be successful at deceit. Mary successfully deceived Joseph, Joseph's father and her family when she returned home pregnant. "Mary deceived Joseph and Joseph's father as well as her own parents. This was to restore the deception of Eve." (4-18-96)

Joseph was upset like any man would be when he found out Mary was pregnant. He knew if he told anyone that he was not the father, Mary would be stoned to death. God helped Joseph by speaking to him in a dream. He taught him that this was God's will and he should marry her. Joseph felt the spirit of God and did not tell the truth. He married Mary but in time his understanding waned until he became distant to Jesus. God had wanted Zachariah, Elizabeth, Mary, and Joseph to live together and raise Jesus but they all failed to unite.

Why did God have Mary, Elizabeth and Zachariah commit adultery and deceive Mary's intended husband, Joseph? God works in a

principled way. We learned earlier that God is saving the world by restoration—by re-creation. Central Figures of God often have to re-enact the Fall in some way and then do the opposite, the reverse—go 180 degrees the opposite direction.

God's hope was that Zachariah, Elizabeth and Mary would be successful in following God's commands and showing they had the character to be humble to the Second Adam and follow him at the risk of their life. In the beginning Zachariah, Elizabeth and Mary did as they were told but quickly they lost their way and in the end failed their mission.

We learned earlier how Central Figures were sometimes successful and sometimes failed. They did not all do the same things but there was a formula God was using in his Providence of Salvation. Abraham was not required to build an Ark like Noah, and Jacob did not have to offer animal sacrifices like Abraham. Central Figures throughout history do not do exactly the same things any more than they dress alike, but their actions do follow a similar pattern. The stories in the *Bible* are different because they deal with different people at different times in history but the pattern of their behavior is the same.

Eve deceived and seduced her husband, Adam. Then later she rejected even God. Therefore, through the history of restoration through indemnity, human beings had to pay indemnity to restore the negative consequences that occurred in the process of the fall.

### **PROVIDENTIAL SECRETS**

In the process of God's providence for restoration, as seen in the Old and New Testaments, there were many episodes which we cannot understand in terms of simple human ethics. No one could explain the providential secrets that are hidden in these scriptures. Sometimes we see conflicting content between the Old and New Testaments.

## STORIES CONNECTED

Sometimes it's hard to tell this is Holy Scripture. There seems to be no relationship between the stories in the Old Testament and those of the New Testament, and sometimes there seems to be a lack of historical consistency. In spite of all this, the Old and New Testaments are actually connected as one. This is the secret of God's providence. After the completion of the providence, all these secrets will be revealed. So far no one has revealed God's providential secrets, which explain how the Old and New Testaments are connected as one. (*Way of Unification Part 1*)

Father Moon reveals how the stories in the Bible are connected. He teaches that God used the deceit and lies of Mary in the same way he used the deceit and lies of Rebecca and Tamar we read of in the Old Testament. God was behind other women like Rahab and Bathsheba who are also judged as being immoral but were really doing God's will.

## GENEALOGY

Young Oon Kim writes in her book *Unification Theology*: "But what was the chief purpose of including a family tree in the Gospel? Matthew and Luke were interested in legitimizing the messianic claims made for Jesus. Hence, Matthew traces the Messiah's ancestry back to King David and the patriarch Abraham, while Luke goes even further back to Adam, the first son of God.

"Nevertheless, an equally important purpose behind genealogies is to show how all Hebrew history and even the whole history of mankind since Adam and Eve aimed at the realization of God's kingdom on earth. The two New Testament genealogies reveal how carefully God laid a spiritual foundation for Jesus' messianic mission.

## UNCONVENTIONAL MEANS

"Matthew includes the names of four women among Jesus'

ancestors: Tamar, Rahab, Ruth and Bathsheba, the wife of Uriah the Hittite. Ordinarily only males are mentioned in a family tree when the society is as rigidly patriarchal as that of ancient Israel. Why then did the evangelist think it useful to mention these particular women? To answer that question one must figure out what they had in common. First of all, Tamar, Rahab, Ruth and Bathsheba achieved some notoriety because of their sexual immorality. Tamar pretended to be a prostitute in order to get pregnant (Gen. 38:26). Rahab was a harlot in Jericho who helped the Israelites conquer her city (Josh. 2:1-11). Ruth invited Boaz to lay with her (Ruth 3:6-9) and Bathsheba committed adultery with King David (II Sam. 11:4). Does this not imply that there would also be some sexual irregularity connected with Jesus' birth? ...all four were rather extraordinary instruments of God's providence: Tamar had dared to scorn the social proprieties in order to perpetuate the family line of her deceased husband. Rahab enabled the Israelites to enter the Promised Land. Ruth had taken the initiative in a marital union which ultimately produced King David. And Bathsheba's adultery led to the birth of Solomon. Consequently in post-biblical Jewish piety these four women were praised as illustrations of how God can use unexpected and unconventional means in order to carry out His providence."

Father Moon says this about Bathsheba: "The mother of King Solomon was Bathsheba, originally the wife of Uriah before King David stole her. Then how could the child from that union become King Solomon? Bathsheba was in the providential position of Eve in the Garden of Eden, before the fall. David was in the position of Adam, and Uriah was in the position of the archangel.

"The archangel distracted the spouse of Adam with love and stole her away, making her fall. A reversal course is needed in order to indemnify that; therefore a person in the position of the archangel's wife had to be restored to the position of Eve. Therefore, the child who was born on the foundation of that reversal could be born as a child of heavenly love, a child of glory. Solomon was such a child of glory." (10-13-70)

With whom did Tamar have a relationship? Perez and Zerah, whom she bore by having a relationship with her father-in-law, became the direct lineage blessed by God, the ancestors of Jesus—right? Also, in what circumstances was King Solomon born? Solomon was the child David got by killing his loyal retainer Uriah and taking his wife Bathsheba. Since he had enticed his loyal retainer's wife, he should have been punished, and his child should have been one who ruined the world. Then how could Solomon, a glorious king, be born from them? How did it come to be like that? In the gospel of Matthew, Rahab appears in Jesus' lineage. What kind of person was Rahab? She was a prostitute, right? But then whom did she help? She helped a spy. It is realistic for a prostitute to sympathize with an enemy country, but she risked her life to do that. For the sake of heaven's will, one has to risk one's life. It means to deny one's life, environment, and everything that has to do with one's privileges. History progresses from that point of self-denial. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

\*\*\*\*\*

### **TAMAR**

Judah was the fourth son of Jacob, and Judah's son married a woman whose name was Tamar. According to Jewish tradition, if a son died without leaving sons, his brother must act as a husband to the dead brother's wife so that the dead brother's lineage would be continued. Tamar did not have children when her husband died, and when the next brother refused to fulfill his responsibility, he died. However, the third brother was not given to Tamar when he became old enough, and Tamar saw that she had no hope to bear children. (4-18-77)

Tamar had married Er, the eldest son of Judah. (Genesis 38) But Er displeased God and he died. According to the custom of that time, Judah gave Tamar his second son, Onan, that they might bear

a child for Er. But Onan, knowing that Tamar's child would not be his own, spilled his semen on the ground. This was a sin in the eyes of God, for which Onan died.

Then Tamar wanted Shelah, the third son of Judah, for a husband, but Judah did not give him to her. Judah thought that his two sons had died because of Tamar, so he was afraid that Shelah would die and end the family lineage. (4-16-96)

She knew that her mission was to continue the family of her husband and Judah, his father, and she finally decided to sacrifice even her honor and prestige in order to fulfill. Disguising herself as a prostitute, Tamar enticed her father-in-law to have a relationship with her. Without knowing she was his daughter-in-law Judah consented. At that time adultery was punished by death. In order to save her life for the sake of her child, Tamar asked Judah for his signet and staff as a pledge for payment, and then confiscated them.

Three months later when it became obvious that the widow Tamar was pregnant, she was brought before Judah to be judged. You can imagine Judah's horror, "Bring her out, and let her be burned!" But she answered, "By the man to whom these belong, I am with child," and she brought out the things that Judah had given her in his pledge.

### **FALL WAS FORNICATION**

Man fell through fornication, and Tamar was one example of how God frequently used women of most unusual character in restoration. Why would God use adulterous women in the dispensation? They are in a satanic position, but if they completely deny their satanic nature when summoned by God, then they can be restored from one extreme to the opposite extreme.



God selected His champions from the most miserable situations. Tamar was a righteous woman, and though she was originally in a sinful position, she completely dedicated herself to God's mission, risking her life, honor, and prestige. Paralleling the way Eve lied to God and her husband to bring the fall, Tamar deceived her father-in-law and her husband-to-be, the third brother of her original husband. She was in a position to reverse the position of Eve by reversing Eve's actions, but the significant thing is that she risked her life to do God's will.

Tamar had conceived twins and in this case, the struggle of Cain and Abel began within her very womb. The *Bible* records how Rebecca's twins also struggled within their mother's womb. She had prayed to God to understand what was happening, and God answered her, saying, "Two nations are in your womb, and two peoples, born to you, shall be divided; the one shall be stronger than the other, and the elder shall serve the younger." Ultimately Jacob did gain the birthright from his elder brother, Esau.

When the time came for Tamar's children to be delivered, the struggle ensued directly within her womb. The first child started to come out and the midwife tied a red thread around his wrist. That sign foreshadowed the emergence of communism in the Last Days. However, before the first child could be born there was a struggle, and the younger brother pulled the other back inside and was himself born first. That son was named Perez, and the other named Zerah. The result of this struggle is that for the first time the restoration of Cain and Abel took place inside the mother's womb, the younger brother having subjugated his elder brother even prior to birth. Tamar's extraordinary action cleansed Judah's

lineage and rendered it intact from satanic invasion from the time of conception.

Through this victory at the time of Tamar and also Jacob's earlier victory, God could claim a foundation that spanned man's entire life. Jesus was born in the lineage of Judah, and Satan had no way to invade his life because the cleansing process was already completed. (*God's Warning to the World - Reverend Moon's Message from Prison*)

### **SECRET OF THIS STORY**

Tamar set the condition to restore fallen Eve's position by reversing the process of Eve's fall. For thousands of years up until now, no one has ever known the secret of this story except God. Yet now, you can understand this hidden mystery clearly. (*The Way of Restoration* April 1972 Paris, France)

### **GREAT MOTHER**

Satan sowed the seed of false love within the womb of Eve, which gave birth to evil life. Therefore, God needed to purify a mother's womb from which the heavenly Son could be born. The great mother who assumed the responsibility to meet this condition was Tamar. (4-16-1996)

God's third providence started once again from mother's womb, which was where the fall originated. The first mother Eve fell because she did not believe in God's words, so Tamar, who was supposed to restore Eve's position, had to demonstrate absolute faith in God. She had to forget her self-esteem and pride and, furthermore, she had to determine to risk her life. Eve's faithlessness made her abandon her father, God. Instead, she accepted Satan as her father and put him in God's position. Therefore, Tamar, on the

contrary, had to talk directly with God. Eve was not able to be united with her father, so Tamar had to be united with her father. (*The Tribal Messiah*, section 3, chapter 1)

If you can understand about Tamar, you can understand the whole Principle. (October 13, 1970)

### **MARY**

There was another girl who regarded the historical significance of her actions to be more important than her own dignity or her own social environment. She regarded God's will as the highest priority. That girl was Mary. Mary maintained the standard of victory and Satan could not accuse her. So on the foundation established by Mary, Jesus was conceived. It was that victorious foundation which qualified Jesus to be born from God. Without coming on such a historical foundation, nobody could be qualified to be the Messiah. (10-13-1970)

Jesus came years after the dispensation of Jacob and Tamar because God had to wait for the national foundation to be established. Conditions were all fulfilled on the family level at the time of Jacob, Tamar and Judah, but God needed to create a foundation to receive the Messiah within a nation, that he might gain victory among the satanic nations.

Finally after 2,000 years, God chose one more woman whose name was Mary. Mary was a revolutionary woman in faith who could follow God's revolutionary tactics. Because the fall of man came through the archangel, an angel was needed to assist Mary by bringing her God's revelation. Mary completely believed what the angel told her of her mission; the angel told her that she would conceive, and the child would be

great and holy, and that his name should be called Jesus.

Mary's situation paralleled Eve's in the Garden of Eden before her blessing. Mary and Joseph were engaged but not yet married; Adam and Eve were also in an engagement period as they were growing up. An angel brought Eve to the fallen act, but an angel brought Mary to the fulfillment of the heavenly dispensation. Mary was also in a position to deceive her husband and her father. Do you think Mary could discuss with her father or Joseph about how she had conceived her baby? She was risking her life because in those times an adulterous woman was stoned to death.

Mary was the third woman to be picked by God. Through the previous victories of Rebecca and Tamar all satanic conditions had been cleared from Jesus' lineage, and even though Mary conceived Jesus outside of marriage, Satan could not accuse her. Even inside his mother's womb Jesus was already the only begotten son of God, and after his birth everything he did was with the authority of the son of God.

### **LOGICAL EXPLANATIONS**

The events recorded in the *Bible* have always puzzled the world. For instance, in the genealogy of Jesus the names of four adulterous women are recorded: Tamar, Ruth, Bathsheba, and Mary. Another puzzling question was why the elder son was often in the position to be cursed by God. Without understanding the depths of the *Principle* there are no logical explanations for these things. (4-18-77)

One believer of the *Principle* wrote on the Web:

There are many instances in the Bible of sexual acts which appear immoral by the literal interpretation of

the law. Tamar had intercourse with her father-in-law, yet was said to have great faith, because she perpetuated the lineage of the Messiah at the price of her life. Ruth laid down with Boaz to whom she was not married in order that he would claim her as a wife. She was the grandmother of King David. Sarah pretended to be Abraham's sister and was taken as the wife of the Pharaoh (Gen 12:10-20) and later by the King of Gerar, both times with the agreement of her husband.

So, there are instances when God has allowed or even commanded someone to have a sexual relationship with someone other than their spouse. Since no marriage born out of the evil world is sanctioned by God, then He can do that. But we are not to break our promise to God and our spouse by committing adultery as it is an abomination under heaven and it breaks the hearts of many people, especially if it results in offspring, or divorce.

### **SEXUAL IRREGULARITIES**

You may notice that each of the women mentioned in Jesus' lineage in Matthew's gospel did something against the law in regard to adultery, yet were honored by God. They are Tamar, Rahab, Ruth, Bathsheba and Mary." Because the Fall of Man is about sex, then we have to understand that when God works with Central Figures in history there may be "sexual irregularities". The Bible speaks strongly for sexual purity. God abhors deceit, fornication and adultery. But God works in a principled way and to reverse the Fall his Central Figures may do what looks like immorality and they look like they are doing everything but what a godly person should do. Only they are able to be the exception to the rule.

This is a difficult question to deal with, and the truth cannot be understood in a simplistic way, but only

with heartfelt prayer and repentance and a pure heart.

— ([www.unification.net/faq/uniffaq21.html](http://www.unification.net/faq/uniffaq21.html))

Father Moon teaches:

Just as in the fall, when God the Father was deceived, in this family the father, Isaac, was deceived. So Rebekah deceived for a good purpose and restored the fall. Jacob then did the work of a true Abel and subjugated Cain. From that point, the true restoration course started.

However, Esau and Jacob were grown men; the restoration they accomplished did not take place in the womb, at the root. Therefore a subsequent stage, one of restoration in the womb, took place with Tamar, Perez and Zerah. Tamar deceived her father-in-law, Judah, and his son, her husband, and then gave birth to the twins, Perez and Zerah. Thus within the womb, restoration took place. He who was to be the elder son became the younger son, and he who was to be the younger son became the elder son, perfectly restoring the elder sonship in God's eyes. We see restoration by indemnity took place.

### **GOD'S PLAN**

Tracing it back to the womb, the elder sonship was restored. From this point Israel, the victor, comes. Even today these puzzles have not been solved. Many scholars today say they were just immoral. But from there, from Judah, Jesus' lineage came. No one knew God's plan, but now we can see it so clearly. That was a restored lineage, God's lineage. From there began the real history of the Israelites. They grew into a large nation. How did Israel become a victor? By

clearing his lineage; his blood was purified. Israel means victor.

For 2,000 years, history flowed. In order to end evil and restore goodness, you need clean blood, God's blood. Two thousand years later, Mary conceived and gave birth to Jesus. Mary was in Eve's position, Rebekah's position and Tamar's position. But she was on a national level, instead of a family or tribal level. Mary, in the same way, deceived her father-in-law and her husband. For Mary, it was hard to understand why she had to deceive her husband and father-in-law and conceive a baby. But she gave birth to Jesus. That was not a simple thing. At that time what she did called for death by stoning. Joseph was righteous enough to protect her. That means that Adam protected her. So when Jesus was born, Satan had no claim on him, because of his lineage and these conditions of indemnity. So we know what Jesus is called as a result of this: the first begotten son. He is the first begotten son, because through him, for the first time in history, all blood can be cleansed and all people can be reconnected to God. It took 4,000 years for God to do that, in ways so mysterious to us. (1-19-93)

Because of Mary's success in reversing the course which had failed at the time of Eve, Rebecca and Tamar, now the son she had in her womb at the national level was sanctified. That is why she was able to give birth to the Holy Son of God, Jesus. Jesus was born completely free of Satanic accusation. God controlled everything concerning his conception and birth. (2-13-97)

### **RESTORATION THROUGH INDEMNITY**

In order to become the victor who can establish the realm of the chosen nation, centered on Jacob, the

blood lineage had to be changed. Therefore, the Bible contains stories about the providence of restoration taking place through women such as Rebecca, Tamar, and Mary. In the Garden of Eden, when Eve deceived Adam and God, she fell. Likewise, Rebecca had to delude her elder son and her husband. This is restoration through indemnity. Restoration through indemnity is a necessary principle.

Then what did Tamar do? Since Tamar was the wife of Rebecca's grandson, she could observe his grandmother Rebecca. Even though she did not know the deep providential meaning, she came to have a strong determination that if she received a revelation from God she would fulfill it at the risk of her life.

Tamar did not know that God's will would be fulfilled through her. Nevertheless, she absolutely obeyed God's direction. She showed absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience to God. Even though she did not know God's providence, she placed the right of the chosen people of Israel before her faith and love for the grandfather and grandmother. She absolutely loved and obeyed the God of Abraham and Isaac. There was no self-consciousness in her. Because she served the grandmother with absolute obedience, she was influenced by Rebecca's tradition. Through God's providence, her husband died; both the first and second husbands passed away. According to the tradition of Israel, the third son ought to have been given to the daughter-in-law, but he was not given to her. The only way to preserve the blood lineage was through her father-in-law, but since that was not permitted, she had to seduce him at the risk of her life.

### **PURIFICATION OF BLOOD LINEAGE**

What kind of position did Eve have in the Garden of Eden? She was both daughter and wife. Therefore, if



the third son, who was supposed to be an object partner of the daughter-in-law, was not permitted to do so, she had to turn to the father. Therefore, Tamar put on make-up like a prostitute and seduced her father-in-law along the road. She bore twin sons, who became the first ancestors of Israel. This was the purification of the blood lineage.

### **CHOSEN PEOPLE**

Because Eve deceived the elder son and the father in Adam's family, this had to be restored through providential history. At the time of their birth, one of the twins, Zerah, stretched out his hand to be born first, but he pulled it back into the womb, and the second son, Perez, was born first, taking the position of the elder brother. In reality, this was when the people of Israel received the right to be chosen people. The blood lineage was restored in the mother's womb.

### **ABSOLUTE OBEDIENCE**

Because Zechariah and Elizabeth knew this providential fact through revelation and through Mary's explanation, Elizabeth welcomed Mary. Elizabeth's attitude was the reverse of that of Rachel and Leah, who tried to kill each other out of jealousy. Mary received the revelation that she would conceive the Messiah. Elizabeth also knew about Mary's situation and helped her accomplish God's will. Elizabeth guided Mary to her husband's room. Do you understand? She surrendered her husband to her younger relative.

What did Mary do in Zechariah's house for three months? They all lived together. It was difficult to conceive in just one or two days. When Mary returned to her house, she was pregnant. Since Elizabeth loved her younger relative, she handed over her husband to her. Even though her mind and heart were terribly painful and her body was like

death, Elizabeth could overcome such a situation with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience.

Mary also had absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. These were the contents which God had revealed in Adam's family. Unless the tradition of absolute faith, love and obedience is established, God's will cannot be realized. Do you understand?

Thus, with absolute faith and love, Mary also loved her elder relative, Elizabeth. As Mary loved Elizabeth, she came to love Elizabeth's son and Elizabeth's husband. So, Mary deserved to be loved by Zechariah, Elizabeth and John the Baptist. However, John the Baptist did not fulfill his responsibility.

All of them seemed to be enemies of love. For Elizabeth, Mary and Mary's son were enemies of love. For Mary's husband, Zechariah and John the Baptist were enemies. However, restoration cannot take place based on enemy feelings. Thus you should know that if you have enemy feelings, the realm of Unification will disappear. In Zechariah's family, Elizabeth would have enemy feelings toward Mary, who deprived her of her husband. How much she must have suffered! In the end, she could not overcome this difficulty and maintain her love towards Mary. (1-2-1997)

### **JOSEPH CONFUSED AND UPSET**

Father Moon teaches about how hurt Joseph was when Mary returned from Zachariah's home:

When she returned she was pregnant. Automatically Joseph asked whose baby was she carrying. It is natural that he would. God

intervened by giving Joseph a revelation in a dream not to be afraid to take Mary as his wife. Therefore Mary and Jesus were protected.

Because Joseph took this kind of action the Bible refers to him as a righteous man. (April 18, 1996)

Mary went through such a severe course after her relationship with Zachariah. She experienced much persecution from the environment. If this union had been publicized, people would have stoned her to death. If Joseph had not declared that her baby was his son, Jesus and Mary would have been stoned to death. Joseph was the savior of Mary and Jesus Christ. If Mary had confessed who her child's father was, there would have been a problem. (2-7-95)

After Joseph saved Mary's life and they became officially married, don't you think that Joseph kept on asking Mary whose son Jesus really was? Yet Mary could not reveal the secret, because once she would then the entire family, including Zachariah and Elizabeth would be condemned by the society of Israel at that time. Therefore she could not do that. The entire family might have been stoned to death. (12-25-1994)

### **Joseph's Lonely Decision**

Now, do you think Joseph could have discussed this matter with his parents by saying, "Mother and Father, my wife-to-be, my betrothed, has conceived a child, but an angel said that this is the will of God, so I must take her as my wife and care for her"? What would Joseph's parents have said? There are many older couples in our audience. Put yourselves in the position of the parents of Joseph. You would not have believed Joseph if he spoke such things. Again, Joseph had

to make a lonely decision. Without discussing the matter with anybody, he took his fiancée off to some secret hiding place.

I am sure Joseph went through a most difficult period in which he was full of suspicion about Mary. Joseph must have asked his wife-to-be, “Mary, we are close and have no secrets from one another. Now tell me what really happened to you. Who is the true father of the baby in your womb?” I am sure any husband would be very curious about this matter. If I had been in the position of Joseph I would have asked Mary this question. But Mary was telling the truth when she said, “I really do not know who is the father of this child. It was conceived by God.” How many of us could believe this statement? It is easier to believe now, because we know who Jesus is, but this was not the case during the lifetime of Jesus.

### **Emotional Turmoil in Jesus’ Family**

Therefore, Joseph had certain suspicions and injured feelings in his heart. He thought, “My wife is not truly honest with me.” Because of these circumstances there was emotional turmoil and upheaval in Jesus’ family even after he was born. (“God’s Hope for America” 1974)

Joseph’s father pressured his son to reject Mary: “Joseph’s father approved of his son’s matching to Mary. He hoped to make a new family and peace centering on the father and son. But Mary conceived Jesus before the marriage took place. Once this happened Joseph’s father didn’t want Joseph and Mary to marry. Even though Joseph did nothing.” (4-18-96)

In another speech Father Moon says this about Joseph’s reaction when he discovered that Mary was pregnant:

How great must have been his shock at that moment! Mary, his beloved fiancée, without having had any relationship with him, had become pregnant after a three-month stay in another place. It was natural for Joseph to question Mary about who the baby in her womb belonged to. What would have happened if at that time Mary had explained everything candidly? If she had exposed everything, it could have been the end of a clan. So Mary simply responded that she was pregnant by the Holy Spirit.

### **INDESCRIBABLE LONELINESS**

Mary's pregnancy began to show, and the people of the surrounding area became aware of it. What would have happened if Joseph had declared that he didn't know anything about it? But Joseph was a righteous man. He believed in the revelation of God and defended Mary, saying the pregnancy was his responsibility. Mary may have been ridiculed for becoming pregnant during her engagement, but she had avoided death by stoning. Joseph, who loved Mary, protected her this way in the beginning. However, there was a great deal of anguish deep in his heart. Once Jesus was born, Joseph's suspicions about the father of Jesus only increased and his heart ached. As Jesus grew older, the two became more and more distant in heart. And because of this, family problems frequently arose. Jesus was viewed as an illegitimate son, and lacking the protection of Zechariah's family and the love of Joseph, he grew up with an indescribable loneliness in his heart. (4-16-96)

### **ROMANTIC VIEW OF JESUS' BIRTH**

Christianity does not have a realistic view of Jesus' birth. For thousands of years they have romanticized his birth as a sanitized nativity scene instead of the horrible reality of a filthy, stinking barn. The truth was that it was harsh and sad that the Messiah had

to come to this world with so little love. The Wise Men who came to him should have taken care of him, but like everyone in Jesus' life they deserted him. The story of Jesus is the saddest story of human history, next to Adam and Eve.

Jesus received his mission to be the Second Adam from God when he was a boy. He spent years secretly communicating with God and saints in the spirit world. He became one with God's heart and learned the truth that could save mankind. As a boy Jesus lived in a miserable, unhappy home. Joseph and Mary created an atmosphere of bitterness, emotional turmoil and upheaval. Jesus seldom spoke to his disciples of his life as a boy because it was so painful.

### **Sad Story**

You have read the biblical record that Jesus went to Jerusalem for the Passover when he was 12 years old. Joseph and Mary took the child to Jerusalem. After the festival the parents returned home, but only after 3 days did they know that the child was lost, and went back to look for him. It is a simple record, but behind it there is a sad story. We read that Jesus was such a wise and clever child as he discussed biblical passages with priests. But still he was 12 years old. If it were you, would you not have looked for the child to bring him back? There can be no such parents. Also Joseph and Mary knew that the child was lost, but Joseph had a hurt heart. He did not mind and did not talk about it. Mary, even though she was so deeply wounded in her heart, could not utter a single word about getting the missing child. So, in silence, she came back and spent three unhappy days. But after the three days, Joseph might have thought that it was too much for him. What would the neighbors think? I can enumerate many more such examples. With those things hidden in his heart, the child grew up to the age of adulthood. (12-25-71)

Nobody knew who Jesus' father was. Since they had no evidence one way or the other, people just talked behind Jesus' back. Joseph asked Mary who Jesus' father was. Don't you think he asked her? He asked many times. Of course Mary couldn't say, she just answered, "The Holy Spirit." Do you think Joseph really believed that? Therefore, Mary was always in a defensive position. She really did not have a secure position. It is another reason why she didn't worry so much about Jesus. The Bible does not disclose this, but it is so easy to trace it back. Mary and Joseph were disharmonious, fighting and quarrelling all the time. They quarreled so much that young Jesus' mother even forsook him and left him. Three days later she came and found him with the priests. Jesus was very angry saying, "Where else would I be but in my Father's house?" which was the temple. Today both Christians and Catholics say that Jesus is such a great person so he stayed in his father's house. How can you go to heaven with that kind of interpretation? He was there because he was forsaken by his mother and father! (9-20-92)

It is likely that Joseph asked Mary many times whose baby she carried because he was curious and because he tried to understand. But remember that at that time an unmarried woman who became pregnant was required by Mosaic law to be stoned for committing adultery. At first Joseph probably thought he would understand, but in the long run he could not accept the situation. Do you think that their relationship was happy for very long? It is probable that they quarreled and distrusted each other rather than fully understanding and cooperating in love in the sight of God.

Once Jesus was born the rift became even greater and Joseph looked upon Jesus as something which was not wanted and which had ruined his relationship with Mary. This was the realistic situation that existed all through Jesus' life. Because of their parents' attitude towards Jesus, even his own brothers and sisters did not respect him, much less think that he was the son of God. They even treated him worse than they would other children because he was different.

Whenever parents respect a child then his brothers and sisters will also, but when the father and mother are indifferent or hostile then the chances are that the other children will treat him the same way.

Jesus was mistreated and persecuted by his own family because they completely lacked any understanding of who he was. Even without his being king of kings and the son of God, was he even treated as well as the son of a common family? (12-25-1977)

More children were born to Mary and Joseph, and they all knew that somehow Jesus was different. The *Bible* does not speak directly about this, but the fact is that when Jesus was a boy there was a great deal of tension, and even Mary was distant with him at times because she was a victim of the everyday situation. Jesus was lonely as a child and often left the house to be alone. Once his parents even left him behind in Jerusalem for three days, only coming back to look for him later. How could parents leave a young boy behind that way? There were not many happy days in that family.

I'm sure many of you have grown up with a step parent, and even in an open society like



America's today there is tension between a step parent and step children, so imagine how much more difficult it was 2,000 years ago. In this sense Americans are in a position to be sympathetic with Jesus' position; more young people are experiencing the same kind of suffering Jesus went through. (10-3-79)

His brothers could sense that there was some untold, entangled story centered on Jesus. That's why even his brothers could not trust or believe in what Jesus was doing.

There he was, working as an assistant to his carpenter father, while inwardly preparing for his mission. He knew he was going to do a great mission under God's guidance. Sometimes Jesus felt like asking his mother, "Why, why am I treated like this? Who is my father? What is your problem and how does it fit in?" Mary could never answer Jesus. Then there was a sort of emotional distance between Mary and the child. As time went by, Jesus came to know what to do and what direction he was headed. He must have been told on some occasions, but he himself knew that he was different from other boys. More than that, he was told by God about his mission. In carrying out his mission, he had to pass through a period of preparation; and he had to prepare a good environment to help him. He could not expect people to receive him without that foundation. Jesus always wished that his own parents, brothers, and relatives could help him in the mission. If his parents had not been able to help him, then who else would help?

Jesus was the central figure, the personage of divine mission whom God sent after a preparation of 4,000 years. There were people prepared to receive him. In order for him to be able to establish the Kingdom of God on earth he must have been able to establish the Kingdom right in

his own family first. He knew the heavenly law of the divine family, so his own family had to be placed under that law. According to that divine law, Joseph should have loved and ministered to Jesus, not to speak of his mother Mary. Jesus had even to educate his own parents and brothers and sisters; they had to love him more than anyone else, ministering to him and helping him in his mission.

But we find that Jesus had told his mother about his mission several times. We can imagine that he has done that, his mother being somewhat closer to him. The boy knew his mission and looked for a helper who could cooperate with him. Would he not have told her? But the people around him looked at things from a different angle, so he could not openly talk about his mission. How could he have explained it? He could not help feeling that his mother, at least, would be obedient and cooperative with him. He had told his mother that she should love him more than Joseph and more than any of his brothers according to the divine will. Jesus thought that his mother had to love him more than anyone else and that she was responsible for making her husband love him and influencing his brothers and sisters to love him. Jesus came as the master of love, the prince of love, and the center of love. He should have received more love than anyone else in the world: from his parents, from his brothers and sisters, from his relatives and neighbors. But we cannot say that he had received such love from anyone. On Jesus' part, he could not love his parents as a single example of parenthood, he could not love his brothers and sisters more than anyone else. Now God, seeing all those things take place, must have grieved. How grievous must have been Jesus' heart! The Kingdom of God was supposed to be the Kingdom of love. Jesus, who came as the center

of love, should have established that kind of family first of all. But it seemed hopeless to him, so he had to flee from his home. He was then 30 years old. (12-25-71)

### **JESUS WANTED TO GET MARRIED**

“Since Eve fell at the age of 16, Jesus talked to mother Mary about his marriage at the age of 17.” (1-2-97) When Jesus turned 17 he told his mother that she should help him get a wife. It was normal for 17 year olds to marry then. Everybody married young. We know that Jesus never married. Why? Because Mary and Zachariah’s family blocked the way. The Messiah must marry and restore Adam and Eve’s failure by creating a true marriage and becoming true parents. World salvation hinged on Jesus getting married. Jesus told his mother that God wanted his wife to be the younger daughter of Zachariah and Elizabeth. This girl was Jesus’ half-sister. They had the same father. Mary and Zachariah’s family thought he was insane for wanting to commit incest. God’s commands are often very difficult to fathom and do. But there was method to what seemed Jesus’ madness. Father Moon explains why it was principled for Jesus to marry the younger daughter. Their families were central families that were called to be God’s champions by restoring the fallen actions in the Garden of Eden.

In the Garden of Eden, Adam was in the position of Abel and the Archangel was in the position of Cain. The meaning of the Fall is that the Archangel took away Adam’s younger sister, Eve. In order to restore that relationship, Jesus was supposed to take Cain’s younger sister, who was John the Baptist’s younger sister and make her his own bride. Who was the younger sister? It would have been Jesus’ stepsister. According to the law of Israel at that time it was not permitted to marry a close blood relative. . . . Suppose Jesus had married John the Baptist’s younger sister, restoring the phenomena in the Garden of Eden. Even John the Baptist knew that Jesus was his stepbrother. Even though Jesus wanted to marry his own stepsister, Mary could not allow that

because she knew what the consequences would be. Even if Mary had agreed Elizabeth would not allow that. If Elizabeth agreed then Zachariah would refuse. It would create so much trouble with all of the family. It was a doubly difficult situation at that time. Do you understand this clearly? You have to understand this hidden secret clearly. This is the truth Father is proclaiming to you.

If everything could have happened according to God's will, Jesus could have married his stepsister with the agreement of Mary, Elizabeth and Zachariah, and then the family and tribe would have been established. This would have been the beginning of the Kingdom of God on earth. (12-25-1994)

“This is an unimaginable thing. But this was supposed to have happened” (January 1, 1996).

So Mary in a most concrete way should have arranged Jesus' marriage quickly. Who was to be Jesus' bride? It was to have been the sister of John the Baptist. Mary had to get the woman from the Cain side and bring her to Jesus. There was no woman available on the Abel side, so she had to get the woman from Cain's side. If Mary had worked with all her might to accomplish this, she would have been successful. Then purified blood and a new lineage could have come into existence. Restoration would have been very quick.

By doing that, the mother and son would have come into unity and restored Eve's failure. If Abel had united with Cain, then the mother would have been restored to the original position. That is the tragedy of the Israelite history. There were two options; one was the mother uniting Cain and Abel, and the other

was Cain and Abel uniting and restoring their mother. They could have done it either way. The Jewish religion was in Abel's position, the nation of Israel was in Cain's position on a national level; these two should have united. Then Cain and Abel on a national level would have restored a national level mother. The mission of Israel was to bring Cain and Abel into unity, to restore the mother's position. Restoration must reverse the fall. (1-19-93)

At the time of Jesus, the law was such that if any unmarried woman were to become pregnant she was supposed to be stoned to death. In such a strict society, how could Jesus even think about demanding a younger sister to become his own bride? Let us imagine ourselves in that time when the younger sister Mary actually took away Elizabeth's husband and became pregnant. Then she gave birth to Jesus. As Jesus grew up he was requesting to marry the younger sister from Elizabeth's family. Can you imagine that? It was virtually impossible, because if it had become known to the general public then the families of Zachariah and Jesus would have been destroyed.

When Jesus was desirous of such a marriage, Zachariah, Elizabeth and John the Baptist all knew who Jesus was and whom he wanted for his wife. In the mind of John the Baptist Jesus was his half-brother, born from his father's concubine. Therefore, for John it was unthinkable that his younger sister would marry Jesus, so John the Baptist refused and denied Jesus. Because Zachariah and Elizabeth had denied him, even Mary herself, because of the surrounding environment, refused Jesus' request. At the age of seventeen, Jesus had desperately tried to convince each of these people to give one of the younger sisters to him in marriage. But they would not listen to him. At the age of twenty-seven, exactly ten years later, Jesus tried again to convince them

with all of his effort. But once again they refused to listen to him. He waited for another three years, and at the age of thirty, in a final attempt, he again challenged each one of them.

### **NUMBER 13**

Within the Western tradition nobody wants to deal with the number thirteen. This is because Jesus waited for ten years, from seventeen until twenty-seven, and then another three years until the age of thirty. These years make up the number thirteen which was the number of failure. At the age of thirty the number thirteen was finally lost due to the opposition of Jesus' relatives. Had that thirteenth year become successful in Jesus' life, the world would have been changed right away. That is why the number thirteen is considered the worst of numbers.

### **JOHN DENIED JESUS**

At the age of seventeen when Jesus, for the first time asked his mother Mary to find his bride from the younger sisters of John the Baptist, don't you think that Mary discussed this issue with Zachariah and Elizabeth? She certainly did. Don't you think that John the Baptist found out about it? John the Baptist then came down so hard on Jesus, referring to him as a bastard who wanted John's younger sister when John himself was not even married. He accused Jesus of destroying his family. In the eyes of John the Baptist his half-brother requesting John's sister for a wife meant incest.

### **NEW FAMILY**

This was the miserable position that Jesus found himself in. In that miserable situation he lost his mother, his father, and he became like an orphan in the wilderness. That is why, out of desperation, Jesus began to gather fishermen and other humble people as his disciples. He expected them to become true disciples who would understand him and form his

new family. But none of them were able to do so. They were always in disharmony with one another. Finally, he decided to go to the cross and sacrifice his life in order to form the spiritual family which became Christianity in the spiritual sense. (4-19-1996)

### **HORIZONTAL VIEWPOINT**

Father Moon teaches that we should always try to see things from God's viewpoint—with a vertical viewpoint: "Jesus and John the Baptist were brothers. This has not been revealed before, but they were brothers." (Cheon Seong Gyeong p. 1172) "If Jesus had married the younger sister of John the Baptist that would have been incest from a horizontal viewpoint. But due to the failure of those around him this did not occur." (4-19-96)

This talk about incest is difficult but wasn't the Fall in the Garden of Eden a kind of incestuous relationship between Lucifer and Eve? He was her adult guardian. He was like a father to her. There is a precedent in the Bible for this. Abraham, a founding patriarch honored in Christianity, Judaism and Islam, was married to his half-sister, Sarah.

Here are some more insights Father gives about Jesus wanting to marry his half-sister:

#### **Jesus Needed a Bride**

Jesus was aware of his path as the Messiah, and he lamented by himself these lonely circumstances and the serious obstacle they presented to fulfilling the will of God. The Messiah is the True Parent, and to fulfill that mission he needed to receive his substantial bride. Jesus had to reverse, at the very root, the false love by which the Archangel had caused the fall of Eve, who was growing up as the sister of Adam. Consequently, Jesus, in the place of Adam as the Son of God, should have received as his bride the younger sister of someone in an archangelic position. That bride was to have been none other than Zechariah's daughter, the younger sister of John the

Baptist. To fulfill this in a world where Satan plays the role of owner and lord, Jesus needed a foundation of protection formed by absolute faith. Tragically, the entire foundation ended up collapsing around him.

This would not have happened if Zechariah and Elizabeth, who had received the revelation and spiritual support from God, had maintained absolute faith. If they had fulfilled their responsibility Mary would have been in contact with them continually, even after her three-month stay at their house. God chose Zechariah's family as the foremost representatives of the entire world, so that even after the birth of Jesus they would protect, serve and witness to him as the Messiah. They not only should have served Jesus as the Son of God and Messiah with utter devotion, but they should have learned the will of God through Jesus and followed him absolutely. Also, John the Baptist was born to serve Jesus and should have fulfilled his responsibility to guide everyone he led to repentance, to believe in Jesus and receive salvation.

But unfortunately, although Zechariah, Elizabeth and John the Baptist testified at first to Jesus as the Son of God, there is no evidence that they served him as such. The respected priest Zechariah was simply a spectator. John the Baptist stood separate from Jesus. These circumstances blocked the people from following Jesus and made his path very difficult.... this family lost faith in Jesus. Looking at him through human eyes, there was no room for them to help him receive his bride.

### **Jesus Seen through Human Eyes**

When someone is invaded by Satan, he loses all spiritual support and inspiration. Trust in God, as



well as a sense of gratitude to Him, is lost. One begins to see everything through human eyes.

Faced with the opposition of Mary, Zechariah, Elizabeth, and finally John the Baptist, Jesus gave up hope for their protection as he sought to fulfill his mission. Therefore, Jesus left his home in search of a new spiritual foundation to restart the Providence of Salvation.

In the end, as people disbelieved and the disciples lost faith, Jesus endured Satan's attack. And as his foundation crumbled, he went the way of the cross. Originally, Jesus came to the earth as the Messiah to give blessings to his disciples and all humankind. He was to build the sinless Kingdom of Heaven. But because of the lack of faith in him, he could not receive his bride, he could not become the True Parent, and he could not accomplish his mission. This is why he promised to return. (4-16-96)

“God created Jesus as a man; therefore, Jesus desired to marry through the Blessing of God. Jesus also wished to have a family and desired to be called a husband and a father.” (1-2-97)

## **JESUS NEEDED TO GET MARRIED**

Zachariah's family should have restored Jacob's family; they had exactly the same course. Elizabeth should have restored Leah's position and then introduced Mary to Zachariah. The result of the relationship between Zachariah and Mary was the birth of Jesus Christ. With Mary and Jesus united as plus and minus, a greater plus and minus would have been created by the unity between the two wives and two sons. If this process of unity had taken place, all of history would have been completely restored. Everything would have been completely restored. Everything would have been solved if Jesus Christ had been safely married.

Why could Jesus Christ not get married even by the age of 33? Jesus Christ is the true Adam, isn't he? As the completed Adam, he was connected to the true love of God. If one such man and woman are united in marriage, they would have the position of royalty on the national level. If this marriage had been completed, everything would have been accomplished.

Why couldn't Jesus get married even by the age of 33? Restoration is accomplished through indemnity. The Fall involved a relationship between the archangel, Eve and Adam, culminating in the birth of Cain and Abel. Lucifer's betrayal involved taking away Adam's sister, Eve. Jesus' position was Adam's position, and John the Baptist's position was the archangelic position. All these historical events led up to John the Baptist's younger sister being in the position to become Jesus' wife. With Jesus destined to be in the elder son's position, John the Baptist's younger sister would have become Jesus' wife and all of history would have been restored.

When Jesus Christ was seventeen years old, he told Mary whom he should marry. Jesus Christ spoke strongly about the necessity for this marriage, no matter what sacrifices might need be made, but Mary could not accept it.

Thus Jesus and John the Baptist's sister had the same father, but different mothers. They were half-brother and sister. John the Baptist knew very well that Jesus Christ was an illegitimate child. When John the Baptist received the revelation that Jesus was God's beloved son, he could not accept that an illegitimate person was the Messiah. Under these circumstances, for Jesus to marry John the Baptist's younger sister was unacceptable. Although they had different mothers, they were both children of Zachariah. How could people accept such an incestuous relationship? (2-7-95)

Zachariah's family and Jesus' family ... should have united and become one. These two tribes, Zachariah's tribe and Joseph's tribe, should have gotten together and found a good bride for Jesus. That is what they should have done. In order to do that they had to unite. John the Baptist, in the archangel's position, was outwardly accomplished. ...Jesus was truly handicapped and frustrated when this did not come about. (9-20-92)

You must remember that Jesus stood before Mary and pleaded in tears three times. Jesus' mother, Mary, did not listen, so Jesus had to leave his home when he turned thirty, starting his public life course.

Mary was to pick a bride for Jesus and prepare a holy wedding for him. However, this dissipated as if it had been a dream. Mary was tied up too much with her living concerns and her own problems with her husband. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

As I said before, the life of Jesus was miserable. He had a mother but no father. Even though he had a mother, he could not talk with her. Jesus came to make a family, but there was no foundation to be able to discuss the Blessing. (1-2-97)

Mary did not help Jesus with the wedding he desired. She even opposed it. This was the direct reason that Jesus could not receive his bride, and could not become the True Parent; and this forced him to go the way of the cross. (2-7-95)

## **RELIGIOUS FANATIC**

When Jesus left his home and started his ministry Mary and his brothers thought he had lost his mind in becoming a religious fanatic upsetting people by being an outrageous heretic who led a crazy, nonconformist lifestyle. We read, "As Jesus was saying these things, a woman in the crowd called out, "Blessed is the mother who

gave you birth and nursed you.” He replied, “Blessed rather are those who hear the word of God and obey it” (Luke 11:27-28). He said, “Blessed rather” instead of “Blessed also.”

## **MARY FAILED**

Jesus’ mother Mary was successful in her mission of bearing the Second Adam. Unfortunately, she was not successful in understanding and supporting him. Jesus was kind to prostitutes but he was harsh with his mother because she, unlike the prostitutes, did not believe in him. Once at a wedding feast in Galilee, Mary told Jesus they were out of wine. He called to her saying, “O Woman, what have you to do with me? ...” (John 2:4). He did not say “Mother,” but instead “Woman.”

Jesus’ words to Mary during the wedding at Cana, “Oh woman, what have you to do with me?” (John 2:4), reveal a reproachful heart to a mother who helped in the weddings of others but neglected to help Jesus receive his bride, the most important requirement of the Providence. With this perspective, now we can understand why Jesus asked, “Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?” (Matthew 12:48)

In the Bible there is an episode when there was a wedding ceremony in Galilee. Mary went there to serve people and Jesus went there, too. Jesus’ mother said something like, “We don’t have wine” and Jesus became very indignant, saying, “Woman, what do you have to do with me?” She was not worried about Jesus’ wedding, which was her responsibility to arrange. She was more worried about a wedding that didn’t have any meaning.

Jesus knew this and he felt so indignant, saying, “Your son, the center of God’s whole dispensation should go this path, getting married to restore all mankind, and you don’t even think about that. You are worried about another

person's wedding. What are you anyway?" That is what Jesus said to his own mother.

Now we know that clearly. What is your guess? Do you think that was Jesus' heart at that time? (Yes.) Jesus was thirty-three years old, and the relative who happened to be getting married that day was not even twenty at that time. And Mary had to get Jesus involved, worrying that there was no wine? What kind of mother is she, Jesus wondered.

The fact that Jesus could not get married was directly due to the failure of responsibility on Mary's part. How can Mary be a great woman? (9-20-92)

We should also consider the influence that Joseph and Mary's relationship had on Jesus. Mary had to restore the positions of Eve and Tamar through indemnity, so she should have remained as only the fiancée of Joseph. Providentially, they could not be husband and wife. It was God's desire that they not have sexual relations either before or after Jesus' birth. Joseph still loved Mary after Jesus was born, but Mary should have wanted to separate from Joseph to raise Jesus as the Son of God.

But the real circumstances did not make this easy to do. Even though Mary's original mind told her that she should not do so, she had sexual relations with Joseph. They had children, which was a repetition of Eve's mistake. With this condition, Satan invaded them." (View of the Principle of the Providential History of Salvation 1996)

"Mary was supposed to bring Jesus and John the Baptist into unity, which would signify Cain and Abel becoming one. That was Mary's mission. John was in the Cain position and Jesus was in the position

of God's son. But we know what has actually happened. Did they unite into one? No, they failed to do that. If Mary had achieved that, certainly Jesus would not have had to die. He would have gone on victoriously to complete his mission. But he did not. Instead he was crucified and there came into being the division of the world into left and right. That means throughout the world, Cain and Abel continued to be separated. Cain's religion, Islam, and the Abel religion, Christianity, have fought many times." (1-19-93)

Father Moon reveals that Jesus' half-brother, John, was a key player in this providence of restoration. If John had helped him marry his sister Jesus would have become a true husband and then a true father. His wife would become the first true mother who would restore Eve's failure. If Jesus could have gotten his family and Zachariah's family, including John, to follow him then this would have created a powerful force enough for Jesus to be able to begin the process of converting not just Israel but the Roman Empire to his teachings. Father Moon explains:

### **Human Viewpoint**

From a human viewpoint, John the Baptist felt unable to recognize Jesus as the Messiah. Also Jesus spoke of having to marry within one family. In Eden Satan took Adam's younger sister. In the course of restoration, the true Adam, Jesus, had to take back that younger sister. Same situation only 180 degrees different. John the Baptist was in the position of Cain and his younger sister was to be Jesus' bride. She stood in the position of Eve, younger sister. Whilst Jesus stood in the position of Adam, elder brother. John stood in the position of the Cain side elder brother. Jesus was the first true father to appear on the earth. Jesus' wife would have been true mother. Once the true father and true mother embrace as one then the true tradition would have been established.

Had Jesus' family established such a foundation then automatically it would have expanded to the tribe, nation, world and cosmos. Adam's position

is that of the king. Through the true Adam God would have dominion over the whole universe. Centering upon God such a foundation could have easily over turned the Roman Empire. (4-18-96)

Because of the failure of those around Jesus he was unable to go to Rome and see his teachings begin to cover the earth. Tragically this resulted in mankind living a hell on earth for the last 2000 years.

Because Jesus was never protected by his family he had to leave home at the age of 30 and start again.

Now without a family and household, Jesus lamented, “foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man has nowhere to lay his head.” (Matthew 8:20) With his family-level foundation lost, Jesus sought to replace it. That was his three-year course. (April 18, 1996)

Faced with the opposition of Mary, Zechariah, Elizabeth, and finally John the Baptist, Jesus gave up hope for their protection as he sought to fulfill his mission. Therefore, Jesus left his home in search of a new spiritual foundation to restart the Providence of Salvation. (4-16-1996)

### **REALISTIC JESUS**

“Christians say, ‘Reverend Moon is teaching that Jesus had to marry. Reverend Moon is a heretic.’ If Jesus was a man he would have had the feelings of a man, wouldn’t he? To deny the physiological Jesus is to say that Jesus is the same as the invisible God, and is not a realistic Jesus. Believing this, Christianity is a false religion and it will regress, while the Unification Church will develop because it is a practical religion.

“If a Christian minister is here, he must be surprised to hear this. I myself also once believed in the Presbyterian Church and its view

of Jesus. However, when I solved the questions of the *Bible*, I realized these facts. I was persecuted because I told these stories. However, they are facts, so I cannot deny them.” (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

### **JESUS BAPTIZED BY JOHN THE BAPTIST**

Everyone around Jesus betrayed him so he had to leave his family and relatives and find followers who would become his new family and community. When Jesus left home to start his public ministry, he immediately went to see John the Baptist. John was the greatest evangelist of the day. He traveled the countryside barefoot, wearing a camel skin, living on locusts and wild honey and begging for food. He spoke with such authority that many people came from miles around to hear him and be baptized by him. He attracted large crowds and gained many disciples. He preached, “I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, ‘Make straight the way of the Lord,’...” (John 1:23). When John saw Jesus, John had a spiritual experience. A dove descended on Jesus, and God said, “This is my Son with whom I am well pleased” (Matt. 3:17). Tragically, after this spiritual experience, John began to doubt that Jesus was the Messiah. So he took his disciples and went down the river, continuing to baptize. Only two of John’s disciples followed Jesus. John should have gone with Jesus too. He should have been Jesus’ disciple and been the forerunner who introduced Jesus to Israel. Just as Jesus was the mediator between God and mankind, John was to be the mediator between Jesus and the Israelites, the chosen people. It is proper for a speaker to be introduced. John should have been the one to introduce Jesus. On his authority, few would have rejected Jesus and the many who accepted would have begun the Messianic movement that would have ushered in the Kingdom of God. An ideal world.

Because of John’s failure Jesus now had to witness for himself. He had to find people who would accept him and go out and prepare the people for him. He found 12 disciples to follow him and we read in the *Bible* that they traveled from town to town. The disciples witnessed for Jesus. They asked people to come hear him preach of the ideal world on earth. Matt. 9:35 states, “And Jesus went about all the cities and villages ... preaching the gospel of the kingdom.” Jesus was intoxicated with God and his mission to proclaim God’s



will that we must fulfill the great blessings of being fruitful, multiplying and having dominion over creation by restoring the Garden of Eden on earth.

### **ELIJAH WAS SUPPOSED TO RETURN**

A basic belief of the Jewish people at that time was that not only would the Messiah come to them but that Elijah would return before the Messiah and introduce him. The Jewish *Bible* ended with the book of Malachi and the very last lines prophesy that Elijah will come again. Elijah was a prophet who lived 900 years before Jesus, and the *Bible* tells the amazing story of how Elijah had ascended up into the sky. Many Israelites felt that Elijah would return from the sky.

The Israelites did not know that God had given Elijah's mission to John the Baptist. While God was working with Jesus, quietly and alone, Elijah and spirit world were working with John to guide him to prepare his people for the Messiah—the Anointed One. The angel had told John's father, Zachariah, the great mission John would have: "And he will turn many of the people of Israel to the Lord their God, and he will go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to their children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord." (Luke 1:16-17)

When Jesus' disciples went witnessing the people asked, "How can Jesus be the Messiah? Elijah is supposed to come out of the sky and introduce the Messiah." The disciples didn't know what the people were talking about. The disciples were not educated and had not led a devout life like John the Baptist and the religious leaders of Israel. Just because the Messiah was born in a humble manner in a humble country that was poor and unknown to the empires of the world, this doesn't mean that God wanted the Messiah to always live like this.

God had worked to prepare Israel to immediately accept Jesus. God especially had worked with the religious leaders and most of all John the Baptist. They were rich in spirit, knowledge and position. It was extremely difficult for Jesus to have to work with his ignorant and crude disciples.

## **JOHN THE BAPTIST IN POSITION OF ELIJAH**

So when the people asked about Elijah they went to Jesus and asked him, “Who is Elijah?” Jesus said, “For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if you are willing to accept it, he is Elijah who is to come.” (Matt. 11:13-14)

This was difficult for the Jewish people to believe. So they went to John and asked him, “Are you Elijah?” He said, “I am not” (John 1:21). The people had to decide. Jesus said John was Elijah; John said he wasn't. Who do you think the people believed?

Who would you believe? What if Billy Graham, the Pope, Jerry Falwell and every minister in every town did not follow a man who had only a few lowly and uneducated followers and who said he was the Messiah? How easy would it be for you to follow him? In the eyes of the Israelites Jesus was lying, so they continued to wait for Elijah and therefore rejected the Messiah.

Was John the Baptist Elijah? Yes, Jesus said so. But the people were never convinced. They said, “Outrageous!”

Let us imagine we can transpose these events to our time. John the Baptist of 2,000 years ago was a person of tremendous influence, enjoying great prestige all over Israel as a great man of God—just like Billy Graham of today, a great Christian leader.

Let us say some unknown young man suddenly appeared and began proclaiming himself to the world as the Son of God. As a student of the scriptures, you would ask him, “If you are the Son of God, where is the promised Elijah?” If this man said, “Do you not know that Billy Graham is Elijah?” what would be your reaction? You would undoubtedly say, “Impossible! How could Billy Graham be Elijah? He did not come out of the blue sky. We all know he came from North Carolina!”

You could not accept that, could you? Precisely this same kind of unbelief confronted our Lord Jesus Christ. People could not accept John the Baptist as Elijah, simply because he did not come from the sky. The people of 2,000 years ago were stubborn in their belief that the prophecy of Elijah's return must be fulfilled literally, that he must come from the sky. They were the victims of the letter of the Old Testament.

John the Baptist represented the consummation of the Old Testament, the law and the prophets. He was the prince of the old age. Jesus Christ came as the prince of the new age. Had he been supported by John the Baptist, he could have stood upon the firm foundation of the Old Testament Age. Then the new age could have blossomed in the fertile soil of the accomplishments of the old age. The Son of God could have established his glorious kingdom at once. And John the Baptist would have been the cornerstone of that kingdom.

Had John the Baptist followed Jesus, the distinguished leaders of that society would have been the first to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Then who would have crucified the Lord of glory?

When God sent His only Son to this world to establish His kingdom on earth, don't you think He wanted to be followed by the most able people of his age? Do you think that God wanted only the outcasts of society to follow Jesus? Not at all! The simple failure of John the Baptist broke the link between the Son of God and the people. And as a result, only fishermen, tax collectors, harlots and lepers followed Jesus Christ. This brought great grief to the heart of God.

If the Lord is returning to the world today, is it not most logical that all the leadership of

Christianity—the bishops, the cardinals, the pope, and all the evangelists and great ministers of the world—should become the first group to welcome the Christ? If they followed the Lord and became his first disciples, the establishment of his kingdom would be infinitely easier.

You may say, “Reverend Moon, by what authority are you speaking? What makes you so sure?” I do have the authority to say these things. God showed me the truth. I met Jesus. Jesus himself showed me these truths. And I met John the Baptist, too, in the spirit world. He himself bore witness to the truth of this testimony. After these extraordinary spiritual experiences, when I returned to the reality of this world, the same *Bible* I had been reading took on a whole new meaning.

Even if you cannot accept these things as the truth now, you must at least suspend judgment. One day we will all know the truth. Eventually we are all going to die. Every one of us will end up in the spiritual world, where truth is like the sunlight. No one can escape it there. On that day we shall all see the whole truth.

However, blessed is he who can be humble enough to accept the truth while he has the opportunity here on earth. Your knowledge of the truth and of God here on earth will determine your eternal life. (9-18-1974)

John's disciples asked Jesus, “If you are the Messiah, where is Elijah?” Elijah was supposed to come first. Their presupposition was that the Messiah was to come on the clouds. They were waiting for someone to come from the sky. So even though God sent Jesus as King of Kings, because Elijah hadn't come and because Jesus was illegitimate, do you think it was easy for people to follow him? No. Look at how

history goes; you be the judge. Even today, the Jewish people don't recognize what happened. Only 8% or 10% of the Jewish people became Christian. Jesus was a perfect heretic to them, and remains so even to this day. If 2,000 years after he came they cannot believe in Jesus, how could they have believed at that time? If Jesus had been accepted when he came, restoration would have taken a mere 40 years. History would have been very different. But he died, and he has to come again. (1-10-93)

### **JOHN THE BAPTIST FAILED**

John couldn't see Jesus as the Messiah because he was ignorant of God's providence. He interpreted the teachings of the Old Testament as did everyone else. Malachi said Elijah was coming out of the sky. Therefore, how could he be Elijah? What John didn't know was that God had no intention of sending Elijah out of the blue sky.

What Jesus meant was that the mission of Elijah would return. John the Baptist was to continue the mission of Elijah. John didn't know that Elijah was working with him from the spirit world urging him on to prepare the people.

The prevailing expectation was for the Messiah to come in an apocalyptic manner. They were expecting the Messiah to act dramatically to save them. Some thought he would make a supernatural appearance as Daniel had prophesied: "I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man, and he came to the Ancient of Days and was presented before him. And to him was given dominion and glory and kingdom, that all peoples, nations and language should serve him." (Dan. 7:13-14)

The people once said to John, "Rabbi, he (Jesus) who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you bore witness, here he is, baptizing, and all are going to him" (John 3:26). Then John answered, "He must increase, but I must decrease." (John 3:30)

John's response has always been interpreted as John being humble. But this is not an expression of humility. John should have joined Jesus and shared his destiny. If Jesus increased so would John and so would anyone who follows the Messiah. If he really believed in Jesus as the Messiah he could never decrease as Jesus increases. John was confused and separated himself from the Messiah. John was imprisoned and later killed because of some insignificant problem of King Herod. He should have lived and died for the Messiah.

While he was in prison John wondered about Jesus and sent a messenger to Jesus to ask him, "Are you he who is come, or shall we wait for another?" (Matt. 11:3). Jesus didn't answer him directly or straightforwardly that he was the Messiah. He answered in a roundabout way, saying: "Go and tell John ... the poor have good news preached to them" (Matt. 11:4-5). This statement is an expression of the sorrowful heart of Jesus. The "poor" does not mean people who are economically poor. Jesus is saying that the only people who are listening to his message are people who have not led a spiritual life. Rich people, to Jesus, were John the Baptist, priests, scribes and the leaders of the Jewish people who were devout and trying to lead a religious life. Jesus wanted these people to first hear his message of truth—his revelations—but when they rejected him Jesus had to wander about the seacoast of Galilee and through the region of Samaria to find ordinary people or those of the lower class who would listen to him such as ignorant fishermen and tax-collectors. God wanted the religious leaders to be Jesus' disciples. It was a secondary course for Jesus to have to go to those who were not so able and well prepared: "'The wedding is ready, but those invited are not worthy. Go therefore, into the main streets, and invite everyone you find to the wedding banquet.' And those servants went out into the streets and gathered all whom they found, both good and bad." (Matt. 22:8-10)

Jesus went to the religious people first and it was tragic that they rejected him and persecuted him. He was forced to witness on the streets to common people. And then when he did gain a few followers, how impressive did Jesus look with these people? Try to imagine yourself living at the time of Jesus. You see Jesus, an ordinary looking man, who has followers that are ordinary

looking—even less than average. He says the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand, and that everyone must follow him and then the *Bible* will be fulfilled!

It was a terrible blow to Jesus that John the Baptist was not beside him. After John continued his ministry separate from him, Jesus said of John, “Truly, I say to you, among those born of women there has risen no one greater than John the Baptist; yet he who is least in the Kingdom is greater than he” (Matt. 11:11). Everyone is born of a woman and out of every human being John was the greatest because he was chosen to stand as Jesus’ main disciple.

If John, as Jesus says, is the greatest person ever born, why would he say he is the least instead of the greatest person in the Kingdom of Heaven? All the prophets in the past testified to the Messiah who would come in the future. John the Baptist had the mission to personally testify to the Messiah. Therefore his mission was the greatest. He was to have the honor of personally standing next to Jesus and bridge the gap between the people and the Messiah. God raised John to be that person. But when he did not follow and serve Jesus as the Messiah he became the least one.

It was an enormous task to start a messianic movement in first century Palestine and without John consistently testifying to Jesus’ status it was vastly more difficult. If John had become one of his chief disciples it would have opened the way easily for Jesus. John could have brought unity between the chosen people of Israel and Jesus. John himself had disciples and if they too would have joined it would have been a tremendous boost for Jesus. God’s dispensation is to have the Messiah come and be protected. God has repeatedly tried to create a safe place for the Messiah to come to but those chosen people who God has prepared keep failing to fulfill their responsibility.

Jesus eagerly searched for followers. He sent seventy of his disciples “in pairs to every town he intended to go. He said to them, ‘The harvest is plentiful, but the laborers are few’” (Luke 10:1-2). John was a pathetic failure. It broke Jesus’ heart. Soon afterwards,

John was beheaded by King Herod. The Cain and Abel foundation for the Kingdom of God was not accomplished.

Because of John's failure to unite with the Messiah, Jesus had to restore this Cain/Abel failure and so went to fast for 40 days which laid a preparation for him to start the new and more difficult mission of being both the Messiah and John the Baptist. He now had to start at the bottom all alone and find enough people to protect and help him.

### **KINGDOM OF HEAVEN ON EARTH**

Jesus took his 12 disciples and traveled from town to town preaching. He was a powerful speaker. God's spirit was in him, and he spoke with passion. The people were compelled to listen to him.

Jesus was asked how we should pray and he gave an example of a prayer which today is called the Lord's Prayer. In it he says, "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven" (Matt. 6:10). Jesus gave every ounce of his energy to proclaim, "Repent, for the Kingdom of heaven is at hand" (Matt. 4:17). Jesus was filled with God's desire and heart to save this world and restore it to the Garden of Eden. The essence of all his teaching was the building of the kingdom—the ideal world on earth.

Jesus was questioned by a skeptical lawyer who asked him what are the laws, and Jesus said we are to honor the laws of the past such as the Ten Commandments, but he said love was higher than laws: "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the greatest and first commandment. And a second is like it: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments depend all the law and the prophets" (Matt. 22:37-40).

Jesus had come for the whole world. Jesus wanted to tell God's testimony to everyone. He had so much to say, to teach. He barely was able to say anything before he was cut down. He was a clear channel for God to speak. God had raised the Jewish people and the rest of the world to a level He hoped where they could simply understand the truth.



## **PARABLES FOR SIMPLE PEOPLE**

Jesus quickly discovered that the people were so primitive and simple that he could only introduce deep concepts of God and his will by telling parables. But even his own disciples had to ask him sometimes what he meant. It was frustrating for Jesus.

He tried to explain the concept that God works through a central point from which the ideal world would come: “The kingdom of heaven is like a grain of mustard seed which a man took and sowed in his field; it is the smallest of all seeds, but when it has grown it is the greatest of shrubs and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and make nests in its branches” (Matt. 13:31-32). If Adam and Eve had been successful then billions of people who followed them would have lived in the ideal world. Likewise if the Israelites could see that Jesus is the seed, the humble small beginning of God’s attempt to build the kingdom of heaven then billions of people in the future would live peacefully in the ideal world on earth and in spirit world.

In the parable of the lost sheep Jesus tries to explain that God loves every human being and will not rest until each and every person is found and restored to him: “If a man has a hundred sheep, and one of them has gone astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine on the hills and go in search of the one that went astray? And if he finds it, truly, I say to you, he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine that never went astray. So it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven that one of these little ones should be lost” (Matt. 18:12-14).

In the parable of the prodigal son, Jesus explains that God is our loving parent who suffers to see His children—all mankind—living a terrible life away from him. And God rejoices when we return home. God cannot force us to return to him anymore than the father can force his son to return in the story. Each of us is a prodigal son or daughter who must return voluntarily to God.

## **JESUS KNOWS GOD’S SUFFERING HEART**

Jesus was the first person in history to fully know God’s grieving and anxious heart. Jesus felt the same feelings that God has for

everyone. Jesus was in a hurry and desperate to save this world. He reflected God's heart and truth and was the first true man on earth.

God and Jesus have unconditional love for every person. But God is also a God of principle. Mankind left God and became a mixture of good and evil. God must abide by the *Principle* and allow each person to separate himself from all that is evil and come back to God. God must judge evil. God's love is also conditional in that a relationship with Him can only be in the boundaries of goodness. When Adam and Eve fell Satan became the ruler of this world. Jesus wanted to explain this to the Jewish people. Satan rules by lies. Jesus spoke only the truth. Jesus had to not only speak of God's love, but he had to criticize all the false beliefs that people lived by. Jesus said, "The truth will set you free." Mankind is in bondage under Satan. Jesus' words of truth show us how to be free. Because each person has an original mind of goodness, when the truth is spoken ultimately it penetrates the mind and everyone sooner or later will unite with it.

The whole world will be united as one family when every person accepts the truth. Eventually the truth will be heard by every person. As the truth is spoken some accept it immediately and begin to change their life while others reject it. This doesn't mean they will never accept it. It just takes some people longer to understand. Eventually all mankind will hear and accept the truth. The kingdom of heaven on earth is inevitable. Truth cannot be suppressed forever. It is like grass growing underneath cement. In time it destroys the cement. The world will be restored. Because human history has always been tragic it is easy to be cynical and reject the idea of a perfect world. Jesus' disciples were excited to hear him speak of God's love and the dream of an ideal world about to become a reality. They tried to understand his words of love and his absolute hatred of evil. Unfortunately, they were often confused. And the Jewish people became more and more confused too as Jesus tried to explain the difficult task of changing our lives and restoring this world.

### **JESUS SEEN AS HERETIC**

He angered the religious leaders when he said things that to them was outright heresy. To them he was a blasphemer of God. Jesus

said their understanding of God was wrong. The religious leaders who studied and revered the *Bible*, the Old Testament, now heard this young man, a carpenter, tell them he had a New Testament and it was his teachings which were from God, and he was the living truth. The truth was more than books, and God's ultimate truth manifested in a perfect man—the Messiah.

Jesus told everyone they had to become perfect: “You must be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect” (Matt. 5:48). He didn't say a few people had to be perfect. He said clearly every single human being in the world “must” be perfect. Jesus did not say outright that he was the Messiah. That was the job of those in the John the Baptist position—in this case, his disciples. Jesus spoke of himself in figurative language explaining his role as the first parent on earth. He had to be followed. To follow him is to follow God. Jesus told the religious leaders that they had to give up their *Bible* which does not have all the truth about God. Rather than clinging to the, Jesus said he was the living truth. The *Bible* only gave partial truth. This is why he said to them: “You search the scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; and it is they that testify on my behalf. Yet you refuse to come to me to have life” (John 5:39-40). And he said sorrowfully, “I have come in my father's name, and you do not accept me.... If you believed Moses, you would believe me, for he wrote of me” (John 5:43-46). Even though this truth seemed ridiculous and dangerous to the people, Jesus kept proclaiming the truth. And the truth hurt.

Mankind was to originally get life from Adam and Eve. We lost our spiritual life when Adam and Eve fell. We became sons and daughters of Satan in a pseudo-four-position foundation centered on Satan. Jesus said, “But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for baptism, he said to them, ‘You brood of vipers!’” (Matt. 3:7).

Jesus said his father was God and everyone else's god was Satan: “They said to him, ‘Who are you?’ Jesus said to them, ‘Even what I have told you from the beginning. I have much to say about you and much to judge; but he who sent me is true, and I declare to the world what I have heard from Him.’ They did not understand that he spoke to them of the Father. So Jesus said, ‘When you have lifted

up the Son of man, then you will know that I am he, and that I do nothing on my own authority, but I speak these things as the Father taught me. And he who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone, for I always do what is pleasing to him.”

“Then Jesus said to the Jews, ‘If you continue in my word, you are truly my disciples, and you will know the truth, and the truth will make you free.’ They answered him, ‘We are descendants of Abraham and have never been slaves to anyone. What do you mean by saying, ‘You will be made free’?’”

“Jesus answered them, ‘Very truly, I say to you, everyone who commits sin is a slave to sin. The slave does not have a permanent place in the household; the son has a place there forever. So if the Son makes you free, you will be free indeed. I know that you are descendants of Abraham; yet you look for an opportunity to kill me, because there is no place in you for my word. I speak of what I have seen in the Father’s presence; as for you, you should do what you have heard from the Father.’”

“They answered him, ‘Abraham is our father.’ Jesus said to them, ‘If you were Abraham’s children, you would be doing what Abraham did, but now you are trying to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God. This is not what Abraham did. You are indeed doing what your father does.’ They said to him, ‘We were not born of fornication; we have one father, God himself.’ Jesus said to them, ‘If God were your Father, you would love me, for I came from God and now I am here. I did not come on my own, but he sent me. Why do you not understand what I say? It is because you cannot accept my word. You are of your father the devil, and you choose to do your father’s desires. He was a murderer from the beginning and has nothing to do with the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks according to his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies. But because I tell the truth, you do not believe me. Which of you convicts me of sin? If I tell the truth, why do you not believe me? Whoever is from God hears the words of God. The reason why you do not hear them is that you are not from God’” (John 8:25-47).

## **JESUS SEEN AS BLASPHEMER**

When the leaders of the Jewish people treated Jesus unkindly he chastised them by saying, “Truly I say to you, the tax collectors and the harlots go into the kingdom of heaven before you” (Matt. 21:31). The people began to hate Jesus for what he said. He seemed a blasphemer of God. He said he could forgive sins on earth. He seemed a heretic, a destroyer of the Mosaic laws, when he told people: “Do not think that I have come to abolish the law or the prophets; I have come not to abolish but to fulfill them” (Matt. 5:17). He said he was greater than the holy temple which the Jewish people esteemed as the most holy: “But I say unto you, that in this place is something greater than the temple” (Matt. 12:6).

Jesus called himself the lord of the Sabbath. He did whatever he wanted to on the Sabbath, which violated Mosaic laws. This angered the religious leaders, who accused him: “... Look, your disciples are doing what is not lawful to do on the Sabbath...” (Matt. 12:2).

There was even tension between Jesus’ and John’s disciples over a dispute over fasting: “Then the disciples of John came to him saying, ‘Why do we and the Pharisees fast, but your disciples do not fast?’ And Jesus said to them, ‘Can the wedding guests mourn as long as the bridegroom is with them?’”

Jesus couldn’t teach all that he wanted. We read, “We speak of what we know, and bear witness to what we have seen; but you do not receive our testimony. If I have told you about earthly things and you do not believe, how can you believe if I tell you heavenly things?” (John 3:11-12)

It was frustrating for Jesus that he couldn’t even explain the simplest concepts to the people—let alone deep ones. Ultimately Jesus was able to give only a tiny fraction of the truth he knew. Let’s look at some examples of how the Jewish people had a difficult time understanding Jesus.

There was a group of people living in Israel in the region of Samaria, called Samaritans. Some of the Samaritans were descended from

Jews who had been from the northern kingdom of Israel. When the Assyrians had conquered them, they married foreign people and came back to their land after the Assyrian conquest. Because they were not of pure Israelite blood they were considered to be non-Jews or Gentiles, as they were called. The Jews despised the Samaritans. Some Jews would not even travel though the district where the Samaritans lived. Jesus, of course, went there and even won some followers.

### **JESUS AGAINST RACISM**

When Jesus told the story of the Good Samaritan it was very offensive to many Jews. Jesus tried to elevate the Jewish people to love all mankind. He didn't come to just give the Jewish people glory but the Jews were to love the entire world. He praised the Good Samaritan who helped a person in need. Jesus was trying to elevate Judaism to its mission of reaching the world with God's message that he loves everyone in his boundless love and wants everyone to be his son and daughter regardless of their race, nationality or culture. Jesus was totally unprejudiced. Jesus came to end bigotry and racism. He came to unite all races.

Jesus lived in a society with a severe rigid social caste system. To openly eat with outcasts was horrible to the average Israelite and the leaders. Jesus was sociable. He had a well-rounded personality. He spent time with every level of person. Many Jews were upset to see him associating with those of society that most Jews would never associate with. Jesus was accused of being not a spiritual person but a materialist who enjoys food and drink: "The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, 'Look, a glutton and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners.'" (Matt. 11:19)

Jesus related to different classes of people. Jesus astonished people by fellowship with social outcasts like tax collectors, prostitutes, Roman soldiers and Samaritans. He associated with women and children.

### **JESUS JUDGED AS BEING IMMORAL**

Jesus also appeared to everyone as a destroyer of morality. Jesus was a bachelor and this was unheard of (there are no words in Jesus'

native language for being single because everyone married young). Jesus was around 30 years old. Many people thought he was destroying the family system. The Jewish family was extremely close and strong. He seemed to be breaking up the family unit when he said, "If anyone comes to me and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be my disciple" (Luke 14:26). Jesus was not saying that he wanted to destroy families and have people hate one another. He wanted them to hate the evil that is in all of us.

Sometimes Jesus spoke in a military, warlike manner. Jesus was fighting evil. He is fighting Satan. Jesus is not a warmonger, but he is calling everyone to fight for God. This is why he said, "Do not think that I have come to bring peace on earth; I have not come to bring peace, but a sword. For I have come to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; and a man's foes will be those of his own household. He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; and he who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me. He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for my sake will find it" (Matt. 10:34-39). To the Israelites with their close families these were fighting words. Did Jesus carry a sword? No. He doesn't want peace? No. He wants families to hate each other? No. He wants people to die? No.

"Jesus proclaimed the greatest revolution. There have been many revolutions in the last 2,000 years, but he brought a revolution of life and love. Jesus made statements that made it almost certain he would be crucified. He said that anyone who loved his family more than Jesus was not worthy of Jesus, and that meant denying everyone. So everyone opposed him for encouraging division of families. People said Jesus was destroying the family bond and social ties.

"Today the Unification Church is receiving the same criticism, but actually we are in an entirely different situation. In Jesus' time the family system was much stronger; today American families are breaking down anyway, yet still they are blaming me for disrupting families making me the scapegoat!" (3-18-79)

When Jesus said that, “a man’s foes will be those of his own household” he was speaking from experience. His own mother and his brothers thought Jesus was crazy. Jesus is teaching that when anyone dramatically changes from being a secular person to being a religious person or when someone changes their religion that person’s family will likely be against it. Both St. Francis and Thomas Aquinas were locked away by their families. Their parents used force against them because they objected to their son’s choice of religious faith. Aquinas was a teenager who was witnessed to at college by a new branch of Catholicism. His mother thought it was a cult. She was ashamed and sent her sons to kidnap their younger brother. They locked him away for a year before he was able to escape. He was very bitter about this experience and wrote of it later in his life advising parents to not do such a terrible thing.

“Now when Jesus was at Bethany ... a woman came up to him with an alabaster jar of very expensive ointment, and she poured it on his head, as he sat at the table, but when the disciples saw it, they were indignant, saying, ‘Why this waste? For this ointment might have been sold for a large sum, and given to poor.’ But Jesus, aware of this, said to them, ‘Why do you trouble the woman? For she has done a beautiful thing to me. For you always have the poor with you, but you will not always have me.’” (Matt. 26:6-11)

The disciples failed to understand two things here. First, they were upset that Jesus talked to a woman. The disciples “marveled that he was talking with a woman” (John 4:27). Jesus was a bachelor and not only was it not proper to talk to women the behavior of the woman towards Jesus would seem strange and unacceptable in today’s society, let alone in Jewish society. We would say this person is mentally unstable. Jewish society had strict ethics—so strict that adulterous women could be stoned to death. Nevertheless, Jesus accepted her and reproached his disciples who had rebuked the woman. He praised her. Jesus was above everyone. The Messiah tries to pull us up to a higher level of thinking and feeling.

The second thing they did not understand is how to serve the Messiah. They understood from Jesus that he taught a sacrificial life. They mistakenly thought that Jesus was to always live in poverty because he and they would give everything away to others.



Jesus tried to explain to them that literally poor people would be with them in their lifetime. The ideal world would not be built immediately. It would take time. In the transition the Messiah should be honored and served with material things. When he said the poor would always be with them he did not mean forever—just in their lifetimes.

### **HIS DISCIPLES COULDN'T UNDERSTAND HIM**

Even though Jesus praised his disciples and tried to make them feel pride in being his disciples they were constantly confused. Once a man walked up to Jesus and his disciples and asked Jesus for advice on how to live properly: “Jesus said to him, ‘If you would be perfect, go, sell what you possess and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me. When the young man heard this he went away sorrowful; for he had great possessions.’” (Matt. 19:21-22)

The disciples were depressed to hear this. It seemed that Jesus was irrational and asking too much of people by asking everyone to become perfect and that they had to do this by sacrificing. After the wealthy young man walked away we read, “When the disciples heard this they were greatly astonished, saying, ‘Who then can be saved?’ But Jesus looked at them and said to them, ‘With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.’”

But we read that the disciples keep asking him to explain. Peter speaks for all of them by saying that he and the other disciples have given up everything they had and what would they get for their hard work in witnessing and being persecuted.

### **FIRST WILL BE LAST**

Jesus said that anyone who gave up their families and wealth to follow him would be rewarded a hundred times over. And he ended by saying that the “first will be last, and the last will be first” (Matt. 19:30). In other words he says that although they appear to be the last in society they will eventually be the first; and the first in society such as John the Baptist and all the leaders of Israel would end up last.

The Messiah comes to revolutionize people from being self-centered to being altruistic. Jesus was righteous. He used severe language with violent imagery to express his abhorrence of evil. He said, "... if your hand or your foot causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away; ... And if your eye causes you to sin; it is better to pluck it out and throw it away" (Matt. 18:8-9). He was speaking symbolically, not literally. He was trying to make a point of the seriousness which we should view sin and evil.

The *Bible* says every person is a wild olive shoot that must be grafted into Jesus, the true olive tree, in order that we may become true branches (Rom. 11:17). To graft a plant means we have to cut the plant. It hurts the plant. And it hurts us to give up our arrogance.

Jesus pleaded with the people to believe in him. People asked him what they must do: "What must we do to be doing work of God?" Jesus answered them, "this is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent" (John 6:28-29). But the people wouldn't believe in his words. His teachings were too advanced for them. They looked at Jesus with fallen, physical eyes—not true, spiritual eyes. They listened to Jesus with sinful, earthly ears—not pure, heavenly ears.

### **JESUS JUDGED AS BEING UNEDUCATED**

Jesus tried to teach them that words, ideology, and truth would set mankind free. The people would not listen to him because he looked so humble. They knew he had limited formal education. We read heartbreaking passages in the *Bible* in which Jesus was judged as being a simple, uneducated man who had no right to speak so boldly. They even took offense at him for not having more education. In John 7:15 we read, "How is it that this man has learning, when he has never studied?" In Matthew we read that when Jesus taught, the crowds were always "astonished" at Jesus and said, "Where did this man get this wisdom and these mighty works? Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary? ... Where then did the man get all this? And they took offense at him." (Matt. 13:54-57)

## **THE TRUTH HURTS**

As a final attempt to gain their attention, Jesus performed miracles. He should never have had to do that. “The Messiah has his roots in God, and comes as the Second Adam, who wipes away all that was committed by the first Adam. This is the reason God cannot send a superman Messiah who will work only through miracles.” (4-16-96)

Jesus came not only to give God’s love but God’s judgment of evil. God is at war with Satan and therefore each of us should see that too and hate evil in ourselves and everywhere else. Jesus doesn’t come to just talk of the positive. He confronts evil and judges it.

## **JESUS IS NOT A PACIFIST**

The ultimate war against Satan is the war of words. But there are also times when evil must be fought with force. God and Jesus are not pacifists. For example, it was God’s will that America defend itself and fight for freedom in World War II. It was God’s will that America fought communism in the Korean War.

In the *Sermon on the Mount* Jesus said, “To him who strikes you on the cheek, offer the other also” (Luke 6:29). Some Christians have mistakenly interpreted Jesus’ statement about turning the cheek to mean we should be pacifists. Pacifism is defined as: “Opposition to war or violence as a means of resolving disputes. Such opposition demonstrated by refusal to participate in military action.” Jesus was not a pacifist. The concept of “just war” is correct. There are times when those on the side of good should use force against those on the side of evil.

Dennis Prager writes this about the liberal bumper sticker, “War is not the answer”:

Aside from the idiocy of this claim—war has solved slavery, ended the Holocaust, destroyed Japanese Fascism, preserved half the Korean peninsula from near-genocide, and saved Israel from extinction, among other noble

achievements—the claim offers no support to those who do engage in war.

I know of no comparable conservative bumper sticker that is so demonstrably false and morally ignorant. Almost every great evil has been solved by war—from slavery in America to the Holocaust in Europe. Auschwitz was liberated by soldiers making war, not by pacifists who would have allowed the Nazis to murder every Jew in Europe.

Father teaches:

Why did Jesus teach his people to love their enemies? At that time no foundation had been laid and no one had the ability to stand up to unrighteous enemies, but once the necessary foundation is laid you can exercise full power and give them love. Jesus did not mean to tolerate sin and not get involved. To love your enemy means to try to save him by bringing him to the truth, by force if necessary. That is loving him, and that was the true meaning of Jesus' words.

People often have their own wild ideas about the meaning of Jesus' teachings. When Jesus said to turn the other cheek did he really mean for you to offer your other cheek to be slapped by your younger brother? No, you should really shake him up and say he has to listen to you. Will God not be able to help smiling at that scene, or will He call you a cruel man for forcing your younger brother to hear the truth? Would God say your smiling tolerance showed that you were living up to His teaching? God will get angry if you let your brothers and sisters beat you when you are the one who knows the righteous way.

Would a parent allow his child to slap one cheek and then turn the other for him? Would God say those were good parents? We must deeply know the principle of endurance. Jesus meant that you need to endure until you have a strong foundation; he never meant for you just to be slapped around by people. (8-27-78)

Jesus was the Tree of Life. He focused on teachings, on words of truth, not baptism or even faith healings. But they wouldn't listen. In desperation he turned to faith healings. But the Jewish people were so uneducated and primitive that Jesus went down to their level and performed magic tricks. He said, "Even though you do not believe me, believe the works, so that you may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I am in the Father." (John 10:38)

But they couldn't believe the works either. They even thought Jesus was the devil himself for exorcising people and performing other works. They said, "It is only by Beelzebub, the prince of Demons, that this man casts out demons." (Matt. 12:24)

When Jesus went to the synagogue in his hometown of Nazareth and proclaimed who he was, the people pushed him out of the temple and towards a cliff at the edge of the city in an attempt to kill him. But before he was thrown off the cliff he spiritually parted the mob and walked through them. We read, "And he came to Nazareth where he had been brought up; and he went to the synagogue, as his custom was, on the Sabbath day, and he stood up to read" (Luke 4:16). He read a passage and we read, "And he closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant, and sat down; and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fixed on him. And he began to say to them, 'Today the scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing'" (Luke 4:20-21). When he saw they did not believe him, he said, "Truly I tell you, no prophet is accepted in the prophet's hometown." (Luke 4:24)

"When they heard this, all in the synagogue were filled with rage. They got up and drove him out of the city, and led him to the brow of the hill on which their city was built, so that they might throw

him off the cliff. But he passed through the midst of them and went on his way.”

### **JESUS HEARTBROKEN**

It broke Jesus’ heart that the chosen people would not listen to him. There are passages that tell of his agony and pain when Israel rejected him: “O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning those who are sent to you! How often would I have gathered your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is forsaken and desolate.” (Matt. 23:37-38)

### **COMPASSION**

Jesus is reflecting God’s feminine and motherly heart towards His children. The essence of Jesus is true love. He feels deeply and passionately for each person. When the word compassion is used in the *Bible* it means much more feeling than the English word gives. Two of the most famous parables of Jesus have the word “compassion.” In the Parable of the Prodigal Son we read that when he returned home his father “saw him and was filled with compassion; he ran and put his arms around him and kissed him” (Luke 15:20). In the Parable of the Good Samaritan we read that “when he saw him, he had compassion on him” (Luke 10:33). When God and Jesus use the word compassion the translation into English does not give the exact meaning. In the original Greek the word used to express his feelings is connected to what we would say is guts or entrails or intestines to show the depth of Jesus’ love and pain that came from deep inside.

As you know, the 4,000 years of preparation in biblical history were for only one thing, the coming of the Messiah. The Israelite nation was staked out by God and Judaism was built. Upon that foundation, God’s goal was to send the Messiah and have him be received. The ideal situation would have been that Judaism and the Israelite nation had embraced Jesus and centered upon him completely, accepting his direction absolutely. They should have said, “We are your children and you are our parent. You are our central figure and we will follow you completely.”

That should have been the cry of the people of Israel then.

But what actually happened? Did such obedience occur? No, the Israelite people said, “Who are you? We follow Moses. We don't know you. You are a man with demons” and then they rejected Jesus completely. That was the equivalent of the children going against the parents. How could Jesus possibly install the Messiah in the midst of such a situation? Thus because of the total rebellion of the chosen people and the chosen faith, the inevitable consequence came: the crucifixion of Jesus. (5-1-1984)

Jesus became desperate. He ached and wept because the people would not listen to him tell of the revelations of God he had received. After three years of preaching Jesus found himself alone. God's heart was broken again. God could see that Satan had turned the people against Jesus so much that it was now inevitable that Jesus would be killed by his own people. Some didn't like his message; some were critical of his lifestyle; some disagreed with his political attitude; some were angered by what to them seemed arrogant authority. Jesus had to tell his disciples: “Then he strictly ordered the disciples to tell no one that he was the Messiah” (Matt. 16:20). Jesus said those who follow him will be “hated” as he is hated now.

God told him on the Mount of Transfiguration that his mission must change, and he must now go to the cross and give only partial salvation to mankind in the spirit world. Moses and Elijah appeared to him. Peter was excited to see this but Jesus surprised them by changing his approach. Jesus asked his disciples, “... who do you say that I am?” Peter answered him, ‘you are the Christ.’ And he sternly ordered them not to tell anyone.” (Mark 8:29-30)

The disciples had barely known him. They were simple, uneducated and not so religious. When Jesus told Peter he would betray him, Peter denied it and swore he would never betray him. Peter said, ““Though they all fall away because of you, I will never desert you’ and so said all the disciples” (Matt. 26:33).

## **JESUS SEEN AS A CRIMINAL**

Jesus was finally considered a national criminal who threatened the security of the state by trying to be King of Israel and was chosen over the robber Barabbas to be crucified: “Now the chief priests and the elders persuaded the people to ask for Barabbas and destroy Jesus. The governor again said to them, ‘Which of the two do you want me to release for you?’ And they said, ‘Barabbas’. Pilate said to them, ‘Then what shall I do with Jesus who is called the Messiah?’ They all said, ‘Let him be crucified’” (Matt. 27:20-22).

## **MESSIAH BETRAYED**

All his disciples deserted him. They literally fell asleep when he prayed at Gethsemane. Peter denied him three times. Why? After living with Jesus day and night for three years they had not grown enough and Jesus had not been able to explain enough. Jesus said to one person to let the dead bury the dead. We do not like to hear anyone criticize our family. The truth hurts. We can't see our situation. We only know the kingdom of hell, not absolute love and goodness. Satan was effective in possessing the people, and he personally entered Judas. He clouded the minds of the other eleven disciples at the moment Jesus needed them.

Satan could attack. Jesus found no faith and was not protected. God had worked 2,000 years to educate and raise the people to a level He felt they would protect the Messiah but the chosen people along with everyone else did not protect the Second Adam. Jesus explained how alone he was in a parable. He said he was a bridegroom and there was no wedding guests so he couldn't have a marriage. (Mark 2:19)

Because Israel was like Cain who killed his brother, God had to move on to a new Adam and a new nation for him to be born in. Jesus couldn't go on because even though he was a successful Abel he needed Cain to unite. When Israel failed then God had to find another Abel. And not only Israel but everyone did not unite with Jesus. The whole world rejected him.

“There are several passages in the Gospels in which Jesus spoke of his suffering on the cross as if it were necessary for salvation. For



example, when Peter heard Jesus' prediction of his imminent crucifixion and tried to dissuade him, Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Get behind me, Satan! You are a hindrance to me." (Matt. 16:23) Why did Jesus chastise Peter so harshly? In truth, when Jesus spoke these words, the disbelief of the chosen people had already frustrated Jesus' efforts to complete the providence of salvation both physically and spiritually. By that time, Jesus had resolutely determined to accept the fate of the cross: as a condition of indemnity to open the way for at least the spiritual salvation of humankind. Peter's dissuasion could have hindered Jesus from paving the way for spiritual salvation through the cross. For this reason, Jesus rebuked him.

"A second example is Jesus' last words on the cross, "It is finished." (John 19:30) Jesus did not utter these words to mean that through the crucifixion he had completely accomplished the providence of salvation. After he realized that the people's disbelief was unalterable, he chose the path of the cross in order to lay the foundation for spiritual salvation, leaving unfulfilled the task of achieving physical salvation until the time of the Second Advent. Hence, by the words, "It is finished," Jesus meant that he had finished laying the foundation for spiritual salvation. By this time, it had become the alternative goal of the providence." (*Exposition of the Divine Principle*)

The Jewish people were the chosen people and lost their status. The Romans represented the rest of the world and crucified him—a Roman torture and death—not a Jewish means of death. And the disciples represented the future Christianity. Because of these failures the Jews, Christians and the rest of the world would suffer for the death of Jesus. He was murdered by everyone and for 2000 years mankind has paid for that crime.

Jesus then began to speak of a Second Coming of Christ. He did not mention this at the beginning of his ministry. He started talking of a Second Coming only after it became apparent that he would not be accepted by the people. Jesus at the end of his ministry said, "Go therefore and make disciples of all nations" (Matt. 28:19). He was preparing the world for the second Messiah. The chosen people

would be those who followed him and the foundation would be worldwide. True followers of Christ are those who have a burning desire to witness the Good News —to proselytize —to convert.

God saw that everyone was not going to accept Jesus as their savior. Jesus' primary mission of building the kingdom of heaven on earth would have to be accomplished in the future by a Third Adam. At the Mount of Transfiguration, Jesus took three disciples, Peter, John and James to pray. During his prayer Moses and Elijah appeared to him: "And behold, two men talked with him, Moses and Elijah, who appeared in glory and spoke of his departure, which he was to accomplish at Jerusalem." (Luke 9:30-31)

### **CROSS WAS SECONDARY COURSE**

The cross was not God's primary will; it was a secondary course that gives man a spiritual sanctuary for those who die believing in Christ.

Just before the crucifixion, Jesus wept and prayed three times in the garden of Gethsemane. He pleaded with God that he not be crucified. He asked God three times to live. We read of Jesus' grief and anguish: "And taking with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, he began to be sorrowful and troubled. Then he said to them 'My soul is very sorrowful, even to death; remain here, and stay awake with me.' And going a little farther he threw himself on the ground and prayed, 'My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; yet not what I want but what you want.'" (Matt: 26:37-39)

Many Christians have interpreted this incident as an example of Jesus being like an ordinary human being who would not want to die. But Jesus did not pray from fear, timidity or selfishness. There have been many imperfect men and women who have willingly died for a cause they believed in. The first Christian martyrs and many martyrs from Christ who followed were not afraid to die. The early Christians sang songs as they held hands with their children as the lions came at them. Yet they did not die praying, "Let this cup pass from me." In American history, many men have given their lives for their country. One such man was Nathan Hale, a young officer in the Revolutionary War. He was captured by the British army and

sentenced to be hanged. His last words were, “I only regret that I have but one life to lose for my country.” He did not say, “Let this cup pass from me.” Jesus is far greater than Nathan Hale. Jesus was not afraid to die. He prayed asking if there was any chance to continue and complete his mission as the second Adam. Jesus was in anguish because he knew the consequences of his being murdered.

“When Jesus was crucified, did Jesus loathe God and loathe the world? No. He could not do that. This is why Jesus said, ‘If you let this cup pass from me, please do so.’ It means that he could not bear to stand God’s aching heart. It was not a weak prayer.” (2-17-91)

Jesus was the first person in history to know God’s sorrowful heart. Jesus wanted to comfort God—to relieve His grief. By being crucified God’s divine will would be frustrated again. Jesus knew God’s heart would be broken to have to see not only his son murdered, but He would have to endure watching mankind continue to be tortured in Satan’s prison on earth with even greater terror and pain because they killed their savior.

### **MANKIND PUNISHED FOR KILLING OF JESUS**

Those who commit crimes bring punishment upon themselves. He knew that for the crime of killing him there would be terrible punishment for mankind. He knew that his countrymen, the Jewish people, would be punished for thousands of years. Israel had suffered for 2,000 years in preparation for the Messiah and now all that would have been in vain and they would suffer even more in the future generations to come. History has shown the terrible suffering of the Jewish people for the last 2,000 years. Jesus deeply loved his people, and it was agonizing for him to know the bleak destiny facing them.

While he was carrying his cross, some women followed him crying in anguish to see him suffering, but Jesus turned to them and said, “Daughters of Jerusalem, do not weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children” (Luke 23:28). He said, “... your enemies will ... dash you to the ground, you and your children within you, and they will not leave one stone upon another in you;

because you did not recognize the time of your visitation” (Luke 19:44). We all know the tragic history of the Jewish people and the terrible persecution of Christians especially the early church in Rome in which they tried to hide in the catacombs but were hunted down and slaughtered. Jesus also knew that his followers would suffer. He was walking the path of the cross and their fate would be the same. Around 40 years after Jesus was murdered on 70 A.D. the Jewish temple was destroyed and the Jews lost their nation. God had given them the name of Israel that means “victor” and after a 40-year period they were the loser. Israel lost its nation because it rejected the Messiah. Serious consequences happen to a people who reject God’s truth and cling to what is false.

And finally Jesus knew that the whole world would continue to be ruled by Satan. For thousands of years billions of people would have to continue to live in this hell on earth.

God saw how hopeless Jesus’ situation was. Even Jesus’ disciples slept when he prayed in Gethsemane. Jesus was alone. When the Roman guards came and took him away, he knew it was hopeless, too.

Because Israel didn’t give their lives to help build the Ideal World, Jesus gave his life on the cross. Because of this full sacrifice for God, Satan couldn’t claim Jesus. And based on this condition of giving, God could try again and have Christ return.

Jesus prayed at Gethsemane, asking God if it were possible to stay on earth and bring complete salvation, both physical and spiritual, but he could not do this. His mission changed.

If Jesus had not gone to the cross mankind would not have received spiritual salvation—a spiritual sanctuary. Jesus had to lay a foundation for the Third Adam to come by loving God and mankind. He showed total absolute love on the cross.

This change in Jesus’ mission happened so fast that Jesus didn’t have time to explain it to his disciples. They were shocked. Jesus’ chief disciple, Peter, was so upset he exclaimed, “God forbid it,

Lord! This must never happen to you!” (Matt. 16:22). It is obvious he was so upset because what Jesus was saying was in complete opposition to everything he had been teaching up till then. Jesus was firm with Peter and said to him when he tried to stop Jesus from going to the cross, “Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; for you are setting your mind not on divine things but on human things” (Matt. 16:23). This was confusing to Peter. He didn’t know that the Kingdom of Heaven on earth was now *not* at hand. He didn’t know that world salvation would have to be postponed.

Jesus said, “He who rejects me and does not receive my sayings has a judge; the word that I have spoken will be his judge on the last day” (John 12:48). We judge people in society by our court system. The judge pronounces judgment according to the law. In the universe, God is the judge. Jesus was the attorney defending mankind. Satan was the prosecutor. The earthly court and the heavenly court are the same in that they judge by words, not fire.

Jesus came to judge Satan’s lies and false teachings. Jesus said, “Very truly, I tell you, anyone who hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life, and does not come under judgment, but has passed from death to life” (John 5:24). Jesus said the truth will set you free.

## **JESUS LOVED HIS ENEMIES**

Two thousand years ago the first perfect man walked the earth. He was born unknown, and he died unknown. He was accused of being a criminal. Pontius Pilate could find nothing wrong with him, but the Jewish people shouted, “Crucify him. Crucify him!” Jesus loved his enemies. As he was dying on the cross he looked at the crowd below and said, “Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do” (Luke 23:34).

The tragic history of Christianity is reflected in one simple fact: the relationship between the Israelite nation and Jesus Christ. The Israelites were looking forward to the Messiah coming to their nation. They should have had a palace ready in which to welcome their Messiah. But instead,

the Messiah was born in a stable. Later the Christian church developed a proud tradition centered around that tragic, shameful fact. They erect manger scenes every year reenacting that sad and shameful time when the Messiah was born in a dirty stable.

The most incredible shame of traditional Christianity is their insistence and proclamation that Jesus came in the first place to die on the cross. Instead, Judaism was supposed to accept the King of Kings. If they had, how could they have killed him? They should have been united with the commander-in-chief of spirit world and moved together to Rome with the living Jesus in the center. If they had been united, then the entire world would have been united around them. Jesus did not come primarily and solely as the “Lord.” Rather, Jesus came as the Father of all mankind, the true ancestor for human beings. He came as the personification of True Love, the center point of True Love. That was the purpose of the coming of Jesus Christ. Thus Jesus would have become the True Parent, as well as the King of Kings of the Jewish world.

### **NO ANTI-SEMITISM**

This kind of statement is not made in order to attack the Jewish people, or from even the slightest bit of anti-Semitism, although that is what some Jewish people have thought. I am not against the Jewish people or the Jewish religion. All I am speaking is the truth. Because of the crucifixion, those people, that nation, have been paying the most incredible, terrible price, including all their tragic bloodshed throughout history, including the loss of the Jewish nation.

If Judaism had united with the Israel nation and together had accepted the Messiah, what would have happened? They would have become the center of the rest of the world to bring salvation

to the world. By making unity with the living Jesus, they truly would have become the central nation and group in the world. But the tragedy is that they never realized this fact. That is why that nation eventually was totally demolished.

John the Baptist was to take the position of minus to Jesus, who was the big plus. John should have served Jesus. But because he failed to take that minus position and unite with Jesus, his entire mission failed. This is another point upon which today's Christianity is totally wrong. They do not understand the failure of John. (4-25-93)

## **PREDESTINATION**

Christians believe that Jesus' death was predestined because of the prophecy in Isaiah 53: "Surely he has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed him stricken, struck down by God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; upon him was the punishment that made us whole, and with his stripes we are healed" (Is. 53:4-5). This has been interpreted as a prophecy of a Lord of Suffering. But the Jewish people did not think the Messiah would suffer, have to die and then return later as a Lord of Glory. The cross was not predestined anymore than Adam's fall was predestined.

If the crucifixion was predestined, why didn't the disciples understand this and be happy? If the crucifixion was the only way Jesus could save mankind, why were the disciples angry and say it was a mistake? Peter said, "You rejected the Holy and Righteous one, and killed the author of life" (Acts 3:14-15). Stephen told a crowd of religious leaders, "You stiff-necked people, uncircumcised in heart and ears, you forever opposing the Holy Spirit, just as your ancestors used to do. Which of the prophets did your ancestors not persecute? They killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous One, whom you have now betrayed and murdered." (Act 7:51-53)

Later, St. Paul said, "None of the rulers of this age understood this, for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory" (I

Cor. 2:8). Jesus' disciples understood Jesus far better than the Christians of today. They knew Jesus wanted to build the Kingdom of heaven on earth in their lifetimes. They knew he didn't come to die.

And if the crucifixion is the predestined will of God then Judas would be helping God. But this is preposterous. Judas himself realized his terrible mistake and committed suicide. We don't honor Judas today. People who commit serious crimes are often led by an evil angel or an evil spirit man. After the crime takes place the spirit often leaves the person who then can only say he was out of control. Satan personally worked with Judas: "Then Satan entered into Judas called Iscariot ... he went away and conferred with the chief priests and officers of the temple police about how he might betray him to them" (Luke 22:3-4). Judas later threw the 30 pieces of silver back and hung himself. He was possessed. Satan is powerful. Judas' crime was so great that Jesus said of him: "the Son of Man goes as it is written of him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would be better for that man if he had not been born." (Matt. 26:24)

If God had wanted Jesus to be killed, why would he have prepared the Jewish people to accept the Messiah? God had spent 2000 years trying to raise Israel to accept Jesus as the Messiah, not kill him. God laboriously and painstakingly had the Israelites center their faith on the Ark of the Covenant, then the temple. He sent prophets to keep the people on course. He tried to teach them to be like sheep and to be humble so that when the shepherd or Messiah came they would unite and support him. If God had wanted Jesus to be killed, He could have sent Jesus to a land of barbarians, and they would have killed him sooner.

The Christian churches say, "God sent Jesus Christ to die on the cross. The crucifixion was the predestined will of God from the beginning."

Then let me ask those Christians, "What will you do when Jesus Christ returns to you today?" All Christians undoubtedly will answer, "We will receive him! Welcome him! Unite with him!"



Follow him!” Let me further ask, “Will you crucify Christ when he appears?” Your answer must be, “No!”

If that is so, then what about the people of 2,000 years ago? If they had accepted Jesus—as you would today—would they still have had to crucify him? No! It was a mistake! It was in ignorance that we crucified Jesus Christ.

Not Logical

It was God’s will that His people accept the Messiah. But we crucified him instead. And then Christians “passed the buck” by saying that was the will of God. Ridiculous! This is not acceptable to our logic. Something must have gone terribly wrong.

If they had only known who he was, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. It was a mistake. It was ignorance and blindness that killed Jesus Christ!

Christians of the world have not realized the truth about what actually happened in Jesus’ time. If God’s only purpose in sending His Son was to have him nailed on the cross, then why would God spend the time to prepare the people in the first place? It would have been much easier for God to send His son among the disbelievers, or even among savages. They would have killed him more quickly, and salvation would have come faster.

These historical truths have remained hidden from the Christian world. Today, for the first time, all these circumstances of Jesus’ ministry are being brought to light.

Yes, our Lord Jesus Christ came to fulfill the mission of bringing God’s kingdom to earth. But we did not understand him. We committed the

great tragedy. Then later we claimed that was the will of God. How ironic!

The conviction that Jesus came to die on the cross has become the very foundation of Christianity. But this mistaken belief has been piercing the heart of God again and again for the last 2,000 years. God's heart was broken when Adam rebelled against Him, and again when His Son was nailed to the cross on the Mount of Calvary. We have sadly misunderstood both God and Christ.

Why, then, has this truth been revealed at this particular time? Because the time of the Second Coming of Christ is near. And God does not want Christians to commit the same mistake made at Jesus' time.

Only with the revelation of the clear truth from the Heavenly Father can all the Christian churches become one. Yes, truth makes us one. If we know the truth, that truth will liberate us from our mistaken beliefs and disunity. And the plain truth of God has now been revealed. ("The New Future of Christianity" September 18, 1974).

Finally, Jesus himself said that he did not have to be crucified to save mankind. In the parable of the vineyard Jesus tells the story of a "householder" who is symbolic of God who planted a vineyard which is symbolic of Israel and "let it out to tenants" who symbolize the Israelites. The tenants kill the householder's servants and then his son. The owner expected them to "respect" his son and was sorrowful when they killed him. Jesus is explaining that God wanted the chosen people of Israel to respect Jesus—not kill him.

Once a disciple asked Jesus, "What must we do to be doing the works of God?" Jesus did not say "Crucify me on a cross so I can give you salvation." Instead, Jesus said, "It is the work of God that you believe in him whom he has sent." (John 6:29)

For sin to be forgiven, the people simply had to believe in him. Jesus said that, “The Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins” (Matt. 9:6). He didn’t say he had to die to forgive sin. He could forgive sin on earth.

If the chosen people of Israel had accepted Jesus they would have been saved. Jesus pleaded with the Israelites to believe in him: “And when he drew near and saw the city he wept over it saying, ‘Would that even today you knew the things that make for peace. But now they are hid from your eyes because you did not know the time of your visitation’” (Luke 19:4-44). Jesus wept. Can you picture Jesus crying? Jesus cried more than any person who has ever lived, and he didn’t cry for himself. He cried because he knew he could end all suffering, but his fellow countrymen would not listen to him. Jesus said, “The truth will set you free” (John 8:32). But the people wouldn’t hear him. He never said the crucifixion would set anybody free. Mankind is still living a hell on earth. Obviously the crucifixion has not stopped Satan from being the ruler of this world.

The cross was a victory for Satan, but the resurrection was a victory for God. Because Jesus was killed before he could establish the kingdom of heaven on earth there is no kingdom of heaven in the spirit world. Through Jesus’ victory of his perfect life and death he was able to open up spirit world to a higher level that he called Paradise. The first person to go there was a thief. On the cross Jesus turned to him and said, “Today, you will be with me in Paradise” (Luke 23:43). Complete salvation would have to be postponed until the Second Advent. Another man must be born as Jesus was and gain total victory by showing us the way to totally liquidate evil from the earth and establish the kingdom of God. Jesus died too soon. He didn’t have enough time to teach us how to do this. He did not fail; everyone else failed.

We are the master of our fate. God emphasizes that man’s effort can bring results. We read in Matt. 7:7, “ask, and it will be given you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be open to you.” If everything were predestined, of what use would be man’s efforts to change his life or the world? God gave us Free Will.

Calvin was wrong when he thought that everyone was either predestined to go to heaven or to hell. In general God does not know what anyone is going to do anymore than you know what someone is going to do. The *Divine Principle* shows us that partial predestination is true. God's will, his dream of an ideal world will become a reality someday. Satan's reign of terror is only temporary. The reason Satan has continued as long as he has is because of the constant failure of God's chosen people to fulfill their portion of responsibility. The Israelites failure slowed God's Providence of Restoration. God's goal of an ideal world is predestined. The formula to reach that ideal is predestined, but the process of history to reach that goal is not.

“Christianity today has maintained the traditional view that Jesus came simply to die on the cross. This is how Christians have rationalized the murder of the Son of God!”

“God worked unspeakably hard to bring this one son of His to the world, guiding a course of incredible history. After all His effort, do you think His Messiah came only to die on a cross at the age of 33? Was that God's will?”

I am sure there are many devout Christians among you who have various opinions on the life of Jesus. How would you visualize Jesus' appearance? What was Jesus doing for the 30 years before his public ministry? Was he in a college studying? The Bible doesn't say he even went to elementary school. He was a laborer, an assistant to a carpenter. There is so much to know, so many hidden truths within the Bible which are not written explicitly. If I revealed some of those secrets I am sure you would be amazed. Even though I know these things, I could not tell you those stories lightly. For you would then ask, “How do you know such things?” I learned them from Jesus. Yes, and I learned from God. Remember, at the time of Noah nobody could believe Noah. At the time of Abraham, nobody could believe Abraham. By the same token, even

though I will honestly tell you what actually happened at the time of Jesus, no one will easily believe me.

### **Jesus' Life of Sorrow**

Jesus suffered great anguish within his own family. There are many hidden stories not yet revealed. Many of the facts about his suffering are unknown. The Bible leaves a scanty record of the 30 years before Jesus' public ministry. If this were a glorious record, we can be sure that God and Jesus' disciples would have revealed it. But Jesus lived in sorrow and grief; he was an obscure figure for 30 years. People were therefore shocked one day when they heard him say, "I am the fulfillment of the law" and "Moses wrote of me." He proclaimed, "I am the Son of God" and "The Father in heaven has sent me." "I am the way, the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but by me." How many of us could have accepted such extraordinary statements if we had lived in those days? Jesus just bewildered people, he sounded so outrageous. Even John the Baptist had difficulty seeing Jesus as the Son of God, and John was supposed to come to prepare the people and make straight the way of the Lord.

### **HERETIC**

Today it is very easy to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God because for 2,000 years Christianity has been glorifying him as God. But in those days, the elders did not accept him. And the priests did not accept him either. They were no less intelligent than we are today. In fact, we would probably have compounded their mistakes if we had lived in the days of Jesus of Nazareth. They saw only an outcast, a blasphemer, and an outrageous heretic. They simply could not see the Son of God.

Jesus had been long awaited. The Messiah was expected for 2,000 years. But when he finally appeared, there was no reception for him. The faith of the Jews at that time was no less powerful, no less devout than the faith of Christians today. Yet we know that the people Jesus associated with were not on a par with the rest of society that he mixed with harlots, tax collectors, and fishermen. We know the story that one day a young woman poured precious ointment over Jesus' body, then washed his feet with her hair. If we had seen these things, how many of us can say in a pious manner that we would have accepted Jesus as the Son of God?

### **SINFUL EYES**

The three years of Jesus' public ministry were a far cry from the anticipated messiahship. No one understood Christ's true mission. The people judged the Son of God with sinful eyes, according to their own earthly standards. And they treated him as they pleased. This sinful world can never be hospitable to the purity of Christ. He came to his own people but the people received him not.

### **GOD'S CHAMPIONS**

As I mentioned, all the saints and prophets and righteous men of history had first to deny themselves totally and give themselves up to God. When He summoned them, they gave up their homes, their fortunes, their families and their nations. God wants His champion on the individual level, on the family level, tribal level, national level and worldwide level. He has summoned His champions on each level. And the qualification for God's champion on any level always remains the same. He needs the absolute and untiring faith required to follow His command wherever it may lead. God needs total obedience to His will.

## **God Seeks World Salvation**

We must examine then, what is the will of God? Why does He give His people such a hard time? Individual salvation is certainly important in the sight of God. God does not neglect that. However, that is not the ultimate purpose of God's work. God's will is the salvation of the world! God needs an individual to be His champion for the ultimate goal of world salvation. God summoned one family to be an instrument for the salvation of the world. God summoned His people to achieve the salvation of the world. God wants to have a nation as His champion, for the ultimate fulfillment of world salvation.

People in the time of Jesus were anxiously awaiting the Messiah. But they were thinking only of their own national glory as Israel, the chosen people of God. They did not understand the universal mission of Jesus Christ. It was the purpose of God to send the Messiah to the chosen people of Israel so that the Messiah would unite with the chosen people. Then they could become soldiers of faith, to fight for and achieve the salvation of the world.

The foundation for the Messiah was laid through Jacob, the champion of the family, and through Moses, the champion of his people. Finally the Messiah came to the nation of Israel. He was to be the champion of the nation and the champion of the entire world. The purpose of God is not the salvation of one church or one nation alone. It is the will of God that He sacrificed the lesser for the greater. Therefore, He will sacrifice the church or the nation for the world. If Christians today think only of their own salvation, their own heaven and their own well-being, then they are not living in accordance with the purpose of God. If we are only concerned with the salvation of our

own families, we are not worthy of God's blessing. If people focus on benefiting their own people alone, or their nation alone, then they are absolutely going against the will of God.

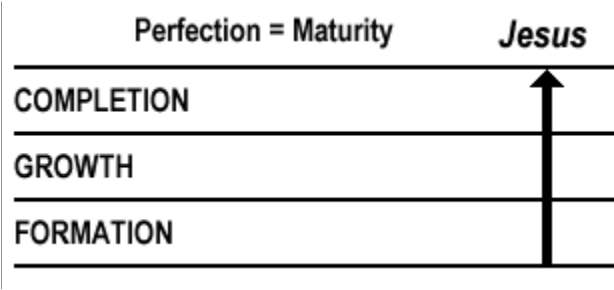
God will give you your own salvation. When you become God's champion for world salvation, your own salvation is guaranteed. Now, the Christian population is probably one seventh of the total world population. But among these, very few are devout Christians. And among devout Christians, how many of us really strive for the salvation of mankind? We must all devote ourselves to the salvation of the world!

God cannot be pleased with man if we live in a self-centered way. I met Jesus personally, and I received a revelation through which I learned that God's grief is great. His heart is broken. Today God is working ceaselessly for the ultimate salvation of all mankind. He needs His champion to succeed in this work. The purpose of God's church is to save the entire world. The church is the instrument of God, and it was this very fact that the chosen people of Israel forgot at the time of Jesus.

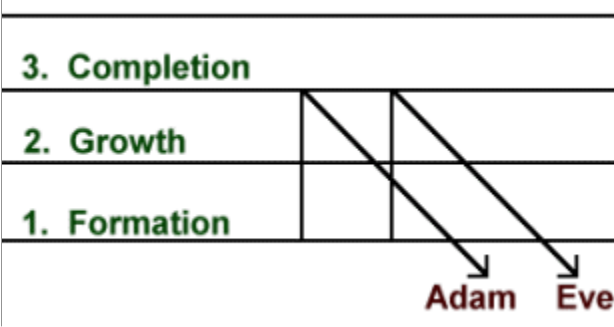
At the Fall mankind lost parents. We are born into a sinful world and raised by sinful parents. To restore this we have to be reborn. Jesus had the unique mission to be the first true parent. All mankind were to be "reborn" through him. Every person will eventually accept him as the first man who grew to perfection.

Jesus was unequivocal in saying that we too must reach the goal of perfection: "You therefore must be perfect as your Heavenly Father is perfect" (Matt. 5:48). The book of Matthew is written in Greek. The word "perfect" (Greek: *tellios*) means "end" or "goal". The goal of every person is to grow up to absolute maturity.



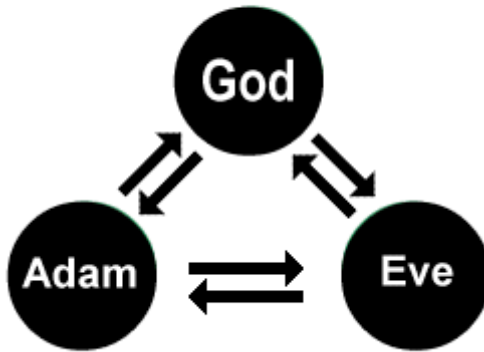


Adam and Eve were unable to do this. They fell at the top of the growth stage.



If they had not fallen and reached perfection, they would have formed the first trinity of God, Adam and Eve.

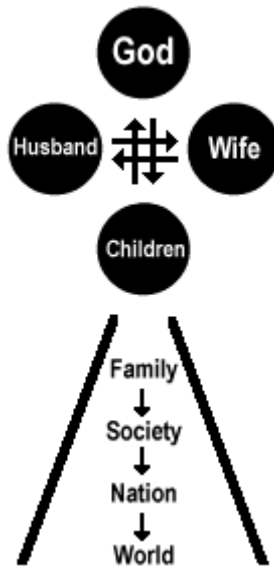
# Original Trinity



## IDEAL WORLD

God's plan was for Adam and Eve to grow into perfection and then marry and work to build a true marriage. Next God wanted them to multiply, to have children, and work to become True Parents who would work to build a True Family. Then God had the goal of those children of Adam and Eve to grow to perfection and they in turn would create true marriages and become True Parents. God wanted to fill the earth with perfect people working hard to become True Parents and raising their children to become True families. This would create true societies, nations and world. There would be world peace and every one on earth would live in absolute unity, harmony and true love. Everyone would be in the lineage of God. All mankind would be brothers and sisters to each other because we would be children of God.

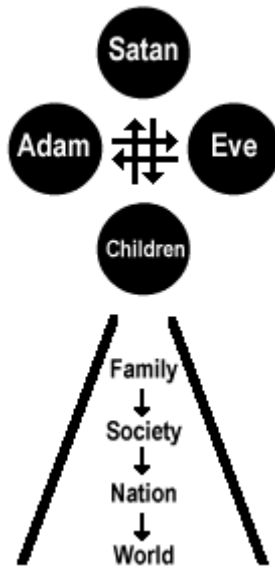
It would be a Kingdom of Heaven on Earth, an Ideal World.



## **FALLEN WORLD**

God's plan was for all His children, for all mankind, to live as one huge, happy family. Tragically, Satan usurped God's position. He stole Adam and Eve from God and has become their Father. Adam and Eve failed to become True Parents and their children did not become true people either. From Adam and Eve mankind has degenerated into false societies, nations and world. There is a world of war. Mankind has lived in disunity, chaos and false love.

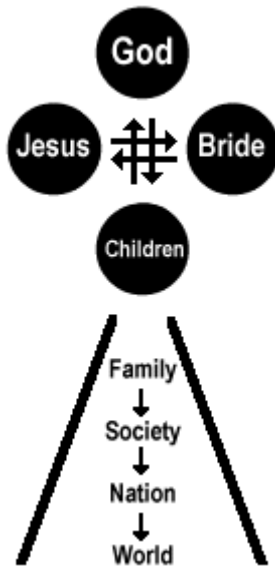
Everyone has been in the lineage of Satan. We are not brothers and sisters to each other because we are children of Satan. Mankind has lived in a Kingdom of Hell on Earth, a Fallen World.



God sent Jesus as the second Adam, and God had prepared a second Eve. If they had married they would have had children and from them God's deepest desire was for Jesus and his wife to build a true marriage and become True Parents and therefore restore the failure of Adam and Eve.

God then wanted their physical children and all mankind to learn from Jesus and his wife and build true marriages and become True Parents. Then God wanted every person thereafter to accept Jesus as the Messiah and marry and become True Parents as well.

And then the world would become an ideal world and everyone would be in the lineage of God.



Jesus was the first person in human history to reach perfection, to have absolute mind/body unity centered on God. God has worked to inspire mankind to accept him as the first True Adam. This is why he said, “I am the way, and the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me” (John 14:6).

Adam and Eve fell because they “loved” each other more than God. To restore their failure, Jesus said we must love God more than each other, even more than our own family. This was very difficult for the Jewish people because they had very strong families. Nevertheless, Jesus came to make them stronger. He said, “He who loves father and mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me” (Matt. 10:37). “If anyone comes to me and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be my disciple” (Luke 14:26).

The word “hate” is an unfortunate translation. Jesus meant that we are not to hate our family, but that we are to hate the fallen or satanic

part that exists in our family. He wants us to hate evil, not people. Jesus teaches love for people, not hatred.

Every person, he taught, must be “born anew” (John 3:3). Adam and Eve and all parents since are false parents. We need true parents to give us true life not the false life we have in this sinful world. Jesus was a true father.

Jesus’ disciples deserted him. Peter, the closest, denied him three times. They had lived with him day and night for three years. It was difficult. We are all immature, bad children. All we know is hell. We don’t know heaven or perfection. We are lost and arrogant like Satan. The Messiah comes out of nowhere and says he’s more important than anything. He asks us to join him on a crusade to spread the good news. He says he is first. He is the world’s leader. He even says everyone is dead.

One man wanted to follow Jesus but said he first had to help his relative bury his deceased father. Jesus not only told him not to go but that his other relatives were as dead as his father: “Let the dead bury their own dead, but as for you, go and proclaim the kingdom of God” (Luke 9:60).

Jesus is trying to say there’s a war going on and our primary mission is to witness the good news that the Messiah brings. Jesus was strict. He said that his followers must never go back but stay with him for the rest of their lives: “No one who puts a hand to the plow and looks back is fit for the kingdom of God” (Luke 9:62).

When the people heard this they did not follow him, and they killed him. This is Satan’s world, and God will be the reverse of this world. The Messiah is in a hurry. He has an incredible sense of urgency. Jesus had only a few years to accomplish his task. He wanted a mass movement in his lifetime. He wanted the entire nation of Israel behind him, and then he wanted to go to the world. “Jesus Christ came as the Messiah. He was the model of perfection upon every level: The individual, family, tribal, national, and worldwide levels. He came to establish a perfect world in his lifetime, not over a period of centuries.” (10-20-73)

If everyone had united, Jesus and his wife could have restored every family to be as God-centered as his family. Then Satan would lose his power over man, repent, pay for his crimes and be restored to Lucifer.

But Jesus was murdered before he could marry. He went into the spirit world and became the spiritual True Father. God created the Holy Spirit after Jesus was murdered. It is a feminine essence of God that took the place of the second Eve and became the spiritual True Mother.

### **SPIRITUAL TRUE PARENTS**

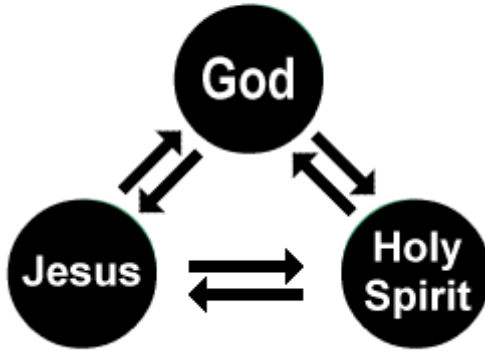
From the spirit world, Jesus and the Holy Spirit have been working as spiritual true parents for the last 2000 years. Christians have been reborn through them spiritually.

### **HOLY SPIRIT**

Soon after Jesus died a Pentecost occurred in which people were filled with the spirit and had spiritual experiences such as speaking in tongues. The Holy Spirit was given then. This is a feminine spirit to complement Jesus. To be reborn spiritually and enter a spiritual sanctuary called Paradise after we die we have to believe in Jesus. Father Moon reveals, "At this time only an intermediate place in the spirit world is open. That is called Paradise. Jesus and his disciples dwell in Paradise, and even they cannot actually enter the Kingdom of Heaven until it is established on earth. One reason for this is because the Kingdom of Heaven is prepared not for individuals, but for the family of God for the father, the mother, and God's true children." (10-28-73)

To have Jesus as a parent God gave the Holy Spirit, a special feminine essence, as the position of bride to Jesus. Originally the trinity was to be Jesus and a real woman on earth as his bride united with God.

# Spiritual Trinity



But that trinity was changed to a secondary one of Jesus and the Holy Spirit. Mankind has been allowed to be partially reborn. The Third Adam will come and give full salvation to every person on earth and in spirit world.

The Hebrew word for spirit (*ruach*) is feminine; the Greek word (*pneuma*) is neuter. In John's Gospel, the Holy Spirit is said to be a comforting spirit which can be seen as feminine. While some early Christians believed the Holy Spirit was a female spirit, most Christians thought of it as a masculine being. "Also, the Jewish tradition was on the whole extremely masculine-oriented and hostile to all feminine definitions of the Godhead. Consequently, at Nicea and Chaledon the ecumenical councils affirmed that God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit were distinct yet equal, consubstantial and all of the same sex" (*Unification Theology*, Young Oon Kim). The Holy Spirit is not a being. In Genesis the Spirit is God's breath, and the Fourth Gospel describes the Spirit as a "wind." God's essence is the polarity of masculine and feminine; and the Holy Spirit is a mother spirit—the counterpart to Jesus' masculinity and serves the maternal function of comforting, nurturing and nourishing Christians.

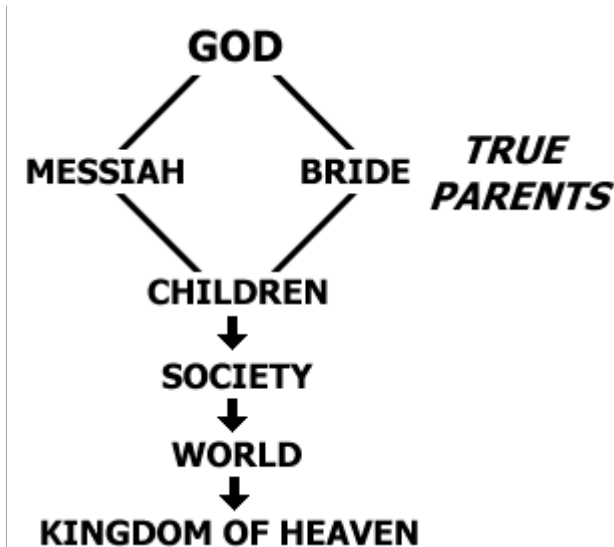


Forty days after Jesus' resurrection the Holy Spirit descended from heaven. What is the Holy Spirit? After Adam and Eve failed their mission as the True Parents of mankind, God's concept of the True Parents was confined to the spiritual realm. Jesus came as the manifestation of God's concept of true Adam, but no one was raised up to manifest God's concept of Eve. For this reason the Holy Spirit comes in the role of spiritual Mother. The Bible describes the Holy Spirit as being like fire or water or like a dove, because it was without form, but the role of the Holy Spirit is that of mother spirit.

The Holy Spirit has served as the womb of a spiritual mother, completely embracing and covering Christians and internally giving spiritual rebirth. Jesus' spirit as the Father, together with the Holy Spirit, can bring the power of rebirth to Christians. No spiritual resurrection can come about until one truly receives both Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

God never intended that physical birth and spiritual birth come separately, but Jesus could not establish full salvation 2,000 years ago and left only the power of spiritual salvation here on earth. He must come again to the earth to complete the portion of his mission left undone at that time. (4-18-1977)

The last book in the *Bible*, *Revelation*, speaks of the divine marriage of the third Adam as the Marriage of the Lamb. Mankind's ultimate hope for salvation.



### **JESUS AND BRIDE—TRUE PARENTS FOR HUMANKIND**

To be saved we ultimately need two people—a man and a woman to become the first True Parents on earth. Jesus wanted so badly to marry and with his wife lead the world into perfection. “Jesus was the second Adam. It was God’s will for him to be blessed in heavenly matrimony with the second Eve, his restored bride. God intended him to bring forth upon this earth his own sinless children. Then Jesus and his bride would have become the True Parents for humankind, and all humankind would have found life by grafting onto them.” (10-20-73)

Jesus spoke to the people in parables, but to his close disciples he revealed more. Jesus told them: “To you it has been given to know the secrets of the kingdom of God; but to others I speak in parables” (Luke 8:10).

Jesus could only reveal so much truth at one time. It is like teaching mathematics to a child. You do not start with calculus. There is a growth period and as the people grew in understanding then Jesus could reveal more. The disciples knew him better so he

could reveal more to them. But he had to hold back so many things even from them. Jesus knew the Fall, for example, but his disciples were not ready to hear it. Jesus did not have time to raise them higher.

The disciples did know that Jesus' mission was to build a one-world family. They saw Jesus' mind and body were one—that his words and deeds were one. But when they heard that he had an alternative course of the path of the cross they just couldn't understand. Traditional Christian thought says that Jesus was predestined to die on the cross. This is incorrect. It was a secondary mission.

Jesus' mission was to restore the failure of Adam in the Garden of Eden. Adam had a physical body and failed to marry after he was perfect. The mission of Adam was transferred to Jesus, but because Jesus was killed before he could start a perfect family, then his mission was transferred to another man who must come as a third Adam and like Adam and Jesus be born on earth. Sin came into the world on earth and sin must be erased first on earth. In the Lord's Prayer, Jesus said, "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven" (Matt. 6:10). He also said, "... whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven" (Matt. 16:19). When sin is erased from earth then sin will be erased from everyone in the spirit world, too.

## **RESURRECTION**

Christian theology is also incorrect in its teachings on resurrection. Some Christians believe they will rise up into heaven at the Second Coming. Christianity teaches that those who have died are asleep and will have their physical bodies miraculously put together again and float to heaven when the Second Coming happens. We learn in the *Divine Principle* that everyone who has died is not asleep but is living in spirit world. We read in the *Bible* that Moses and Elijah talked to Jesus.

First Thessalonians 4:17 says, "Then we who are alive ... will be caught up with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air." Some Christians believe they are going "up" into the sky. They interpret this passage literally. But it is symbolic. The key word is "up". When we say someone has advanced in life we say, "he has gone up in the world." When we say someone has gone up the ladder of

success we are using figurative language. The same is true in this quotation. When we unite our minds and bodies with the Messiah and live God's way of life then our value has increased.

Also, heaven is not a physical place in the universe. After our physical body dies, we live forever in the spirit world with our spirit body. The Messiah doesn't come to end physical death. The Messiah himself physically dies.

Many Christians incorrectly believe that there is no sex and there are no marriages in the afterlife. They believe this because of Matthew 22:30 that says, "At the resurrection people will neither marry nor be given in marriage; they will be like the angels in heaven." The term "until death do us part" is not true because every person will eventually live with their mate eternally in heaven. Some will be with their mate they had on earth and some will find their mate in spirit world.

First Thessalonians 4:17 says "caught up". This is a translation from a Greek word meaning to snatch away. Other synonyms would be: grab, seize, pluck, steal, kidnap. In effect there is often an abrupt change when people turn to God. Jesus' physical body did not go up into the sky. He did not have a corporeal resurrection or resuscitation. His spiritual body went into the spirit world, and Jesus cannot return with his physical body.

Man's spirit body goes into heaven imperfect. We are not living in an ideal world on earth and our ancestors are not living an ideal life in the spirit world.

We learned earlier that for our spirit man to grow, it must receive vitality elements from our physical body. People in the spirit world can never have their physical body again and cannot grow to perfection by themselves. Spirit men in the spirit world cannot perfect themselves unless they cooperate with people on earth. They can be resurrected or elevated and ascend the thousands of different levels of spirit world by cooperating with earthly people.

To grow they must come to earth and help men and women. In this way they can receive vitality elements for their spirit man. By doing this they can be resurrected. For example, Elijah grew spiritually because he helped John the Baptist by giving him spiritual guidance. In fact, though you cannot see them, people are working with you now from the spirit world.

The truth sets people free. And if you receive the truth you grow spiritually. And if you are growing, the people in spirit world can benefit as well in their spiritual advancement. God continually has brought higher truth to mankind throughout history. He has given truth in stages. God gave laws and asked for animal sacrifices from the early Israelites in the Old Testament. When Jesus came, God gave a higher truth of love and asked for faith in the New Testament. Jesus died before he could reveal the full truth. Today we have the complete truth in the *Divine Principle*, the Completed Testament, which can guide us to spiritually grow by living God's way of life.

Resurrection means to be raised from the dead. This doesn't mean that our physical bodies will rise into the air but that we will pass from spiritual death to spiritual life. God told Adam and Eve they would die if they ate the fruit in the Garden of Eden. They ate the fruit and lived many years afterwards. Obviously, God was not talking about physical death when he spoke to Adam and Eve. He told them they would die spiritually and they did. They lost their five spiritual senses and communication with God. This is true death. Sadly, we are born separated from God.

Everyone must be restored spiritually. When we accept Jesus we can begin the process of coming back to God. Nothing in our life is more important than that. Jesus came with the ability to restore our relationship with God. All mankind needs to be reborn. If we accept Jesus we begin to be reborn and restored. But mankind will become completely reborn when the third and final Adam comes.

Many Christians put exclusive emphasis upon being saved by the blood of Jesus. They do not know that Jesus forgave sin before he was crucified. The *Bible* tells the story of a prostitute who was about to be stoned to death. Jesus said to the people, "Whoever is without

sin, let him cast the first stone.” Everyone dropped their stones and drifted away in shame. Jesus then said to the woman, “Has no one condemned you? Neither do I condemn you. Go and sin no more.” Jesus offered forgiveness. No one had to wait for Jesus to die. Jesus wanted to forgive sin at that time. He did not give a rain check saying, “I will forgive you and save you, but wait until I am crucified on the cross.” Jesus did not have to die to save us. God’s original plan of salvation was for Jesus not to die. The crucifixion was a secondary course that gave only spiritual salvation.

If we examine Jesus’ Providence of the cross, we see that Jesus, the thief on the right, the thief on the left, and Barabbas sowed the seeds of history. The principle is that what is sown will be reaped. So the first to appear were the right wing world and the left wing world, that is, the democratic and the Communist realms, reflecting the “right thief type” and the “left thief type.” Centering on Jesus’ cross, Islam, the “Barabbas type,” appeared next. Reflecting Barabbas, who received good fortune because of Jesus, Islam originated as a force resisting Christianity.

If the democratic world is internal, then the Communist world is external. If the right wing is internal, then the left wing is external. For this reason, the Messiah who is to come has no choice but to appear upon the internal foundation of the democratic world, which respects God. He must carry out a movement that absorbs the external environment and unifies the various cultural spheres centering on the mainstream Christian cultural sphere. Such a movement is carried out at the end of history. Such a thing cannot be looked at as circumstantial. The nature of the original cause leads to such a result.

### **The Merit of the Thief on the Right**

When Jesus was crucified, he died along with the man on his right, who was not only a thief but also a murderer. If that thief had not been there, Jesus would

have lost his relationship with the Earth and humankind. Even though he himself was near death, the thief on the right defended Jesus. In human history, who took Jesus' side? It was not Peter; it was not Jesus' father or mother; it was not the nation of Israel and it was not Judaism. It was only one person: the thief on the right. One individual alone maintained this relationship. While facing death, he transcended death and placed all his hopes on Jesus. That was none other than the thief on the right. You need to know that were it not for the thief on the right, Jesus would not have been able to resurrect and resume his providence on Earth.

As Jesus was bringing to a conclusion four thousand years of history and the more than thirty years of his own life, there was only one person who connected with Jesus and attended Jesus as the one who embodied his most fervent hopes, even as he accompanied Jesus on the path of death. That was the thief on the right. The fact that the thief on the right has this position means that he surpassed the disciples. He was superior to Peter.

This is so because although he did not know Jesus' teachings, his nature directed and empowered him to attend Jesus at the moment of death, until he breathed his last. Peter, John and the others of the twelve disciples, by contrast, knew Jesus' teachings and even pledged to become new persons, but ultimately were not able to achieve it. You have to know that, for this reason, the thief on the right became a central character in human history, a man who represented the Earth and salvaged the future.

### **Only a Spiritual Foundation**

Until now, Christianity has not been able to pursue the Kingdom of Heaven both on Earth and in the spirit. Christianity has had no choice but to yield the physical world, attending Jesus as the spiritual Messiah and setting spiritual salvation and a spiritual Kingdom as its goals. The people of Israel had a

nation and possessed national authority as the chosen people, but worldwide Christianity today is in the position of the second Israel only as a spiritual nation; it has no national authority. Christians have no country. We stand in the realm of the second Israel with only a spiritual foundation, not a physical foundation. Because Christianity was not able to accomplish the original Will of God, who must bring about a Kingdom on Earth that is of both spirit and flesh, there is no other way except for the Lord to come again.

I want to make one declaration to you here today. The crucifixion was not God's victory. Instead, it was Satan's victory. You will remember that Jesus said to those who arrested him in the Garden of Gethsemane, "... this is your hour—when darkness reigns." (Luke 22:53) You need to know that the cross was the place where the nation that God had prepared for four thousand years was lost, the place where the religious faith of Israel was lost, and the place where the followers of John the Baptist, the twelve disciples, the thief on the left, and everything else was lost.

You need to know that Christianity was not there on the cross. When did Christianity begin? Jesus resurrected after three days and spent forty days meeting the disciples he had lost, who had turned against him. The Holy Spirit descended on the disciples, and you need to know that it was only then that Christianity began. Christians for the past two thousand years have believed in Christianity without knowing that it came into existence not by the principle of the cross, but by the principle of the resurrection. If you realize this fact, then you must repent. Because Christianity began on the foundation of Jesus' resurrection, Christianity has been strictly spiritual.

What would have happened if Jesus had not died on the cross? In that case, the nation of Israel would have followed Jesus' teachings, stabilized and endured.



Judaism also would have remained as it was. Jesus knew that if he were to die on the cross, multitudes of people in future ages would have to follow him on the way of the cross, and that they would not be able to do so without shedding blood. Many Christians would have to suffer, and even when the Lord came again he would have to go the way of suffering. You need to know that this is the reason that Jesus had to pray as he did in the Garden of Gethsemane. Christians today say that Jesus prayed for deliverance because he had a physical body and feared the pain of death. But was Jesus such a trivial Messiah? Certainly not.

### **Meaning of “It is Finished”**

What, then, did Jesus mean by saying, “It is finished,” when he committed his spirit on the cross? Jesus had come with the mission to save both spirit and flesh, but he realized that he could not completely fulfill God’s Will in a world in which there was no foundation. So, he offered himself completely in order to establish a condition for spiritual salvation and allow that providence to begin. Having completed that, in the end he said, “It is finished.”

You probably have never featured this even in your imagination. Christianity and Judaism should realize even now that the Lord, who tried to demolish Satan’s nation and do away with Satan’s kingship, and to accomplish God’s will and restore humanity, died a tragic death. When they realize this, they should repent and become one. They should become one and prepare to receive the Lord on his return.

### **Truth Conforms to Reason**

Truth must conform to reason. The time has come for all Christians to throw off the age of blind faith and move ahead into a new age united as one, to sort out this world and bring it to salvation. You need to know that the time has come in which the term “unification” is essential.

### **Jesus' Three-Day Suffering Course**

What does it mean that Jesus suffered pain during the three days following his death? Heaven, Earth and Hell all remained in the realm of death. For Jesus to gain authority over Heaven and Earth, he needed to encompass the depths and heights of this realm of death. For this reason, in order to pursue the connection of life and go the path that could comfort God, Jesus needed to prevail, even if it meant descending into the lowest environment such as Hell and suffering pain. Because Jesus passed through Hell, he prepared a path by which it was possible to make a new beginning toward Heaven. Though he was cast out and isolated on Earth, and finally forced to go the way of death, he was able to leave a path of hope for future generations. That is the reason Jesus had to go on his three-day course.

Jesus did not go to Hell for three days just to look around. He already knew about Hell. He needed to go there, pass judgment and pave the way to go from the world of death to the world of life. In this way, he laid a foundation of victory on Earth, which is the world of death and Hell, and established a starting point from which it is possible to reach Heaven.

### **Jesus Rejected**

In the eyes of the religious establishment, Jesus was a heretic, and in the eyes of the nation, he was a destroyer of the religious law. His own clan rejected him and chased him out of his home. The group surrounding John the Baptist rejected him. So he went into the wilderness, but there Satan pursued him. That was not all. Eventually, the entire country mobilized to force him to go the way of death on the cross, the path of Golgotha.

Jesus, though, shed tears for the nation that was rejecting him as a traitor. The Jewish establishment treated Jesus as a heretic, but he shed more blood and tears for them than did any priest. Not a single person of that age would stand on his side, but Jesus was a

friend of that age. He was rejected as a traitor, but he was the greatest patriot. He was rejected as a heretic, but he was the most faithful believer.

Jesus walked a wretched path, the path of the cross, where people ripped his clothing, drove him on, and forced him to the ground. That was not all. Evil men whipped and beat him. In this situation, if Jesus had been like Elijah, he might have said to the people, "I am the only one of the Lord's prophets left." (1 Kings 18:22) But when Jesus left his disciples in the Garden of Gethsemane and went to pray, he said, "My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt." (Luke 22:42) This was his greatness. He understood that his body was a sacrificial offering for the nation, a sacrificial offering for humanity and a sacrificial offering for Heaven's Providence.

Because he understood this, Jesus, while not denying his own sorrow, was more concerned about how great a sorrow God must have felt. Jesus had appeared for the sake of the nation and he was concerned how great God's sorrow was to see him rejected as a traitor. Jesus was the prince of Heaven, the central personage of the entire universe, and the Messiah. If he chose, he could have fallen prey to self-pity and asked why he should go the miserable way of the cross. He could have set the entire universe in motion to breathe a deep sigh of despair with him. But he understood that his position was not to sigh in despair. Instead, he even went so far as to feel apologetic toward Heaven for having been rejected.

Jesus bore the responsibility to rally the religious establishment, rally the nation, build the Kingdom of Heaven and return the world to the Father's bosom. Yet when he was forced to abandon that mission and walk the way of the cross, he did not feel enmity toward anyone. He did not pray, "Let this cup pass from me," out of a fear of death. Rather, he prayed

this because he knew that his death would add to the grief of the nation and to God's grief.

Jesus knew that if he died on the cross, there would be an even heavier cross remaining for the future generations of humanity. It would mean that the sorrowful history would not end. He knew that the path of Golgotha would not end with him. He knew that the path of death would not end. And he knew that if he went the way of Golgotha, those who followed him would also have to go the same way. Jesus knew that an even more difficult course lay beyond the cross.

As he was made to wear a crown of thorns, and the nails were hammered into his hands and feet, and his side was stabbed with a spear, Jesus knew that these events would have impact far beyond his own death. When he turned to Heaven and said, "It is finished," he did not mean that the path of the cross for the world was finished. He meant that Heaven had received his heart's tearful plea of concern over the cross. We need to know that Jesus comforted Heaven by taking upon himself all the mistakes committed by the prophets and patriots and offering himself as a living sacrifice.

And even beyond that, as he neared death Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." (Luke 23:34) God had a mind to pass judgment immediately, judgment that was even greater than that of Noah's time. But Jesus died clinging to the nation, clinging to the religious establishment and clinging to the cross. For this reason, God could not abandon humanity but held on to us. Because this bond of heart existed between Jesus, the future generations of humanity and the remaining people of Israel, God has been unable to abandon the religious organizations and people of succeeding generations who have turned against Him. Instead, He has clung to them.

### **Meaning of the Bread and Wine**

I am sure you are well aware that God, who had been carrying out His Providence of restoration for four thousand years, could not complete His Will in Heaven and on Earth simply by the Providence of having Jesus resurrect. So He established a new testament in His word, and through it He has worked His providence to bring together His will in Heaven with that on Earth and establish the promised original Garden.

If we look in the *Bible*, we see that Jesus said the wine and bread that he gave us were the promise and new covenant. After Jesus was on Earth, we received his flesh and blood, and these represented the life of the perfected whole that must be accomplished. At the same time, they represented the providence in its entirety.

What does the fact that we received Jesus' blood and flesh symbolize? This is not just the flesh and blood of Jesus as one individual. In a larger sense, these signify Heaven and Earth and, in a smaller sense, they signify the core and the individual body. Also, the flesh symbolizes the truth and blood of the Holy Spirit. Jesus gave us all this without condition.

What has been blocked between God and human beings? Heaven's Will should be manifested on Earth and everything on Earth ultimately should be connected to Heaven's Will. In this way, Heaven and Earth will move toward a single goal. This is what is blocked. Jesus established a new promise before he departed. So, after his death the necessity of human beings, that is, the disciples who followed Jesus, connecting the spiritual and physical worlds remained as a condition. Had Jesus not died, Heaven and Earth would have been connected through him. Because he died, Jesus came to represent the conditions in Heaven and the Holy Spirit came to represent the conditions on Earth.

Respected guests, the time now has come. Heaven's time, for which God has been waiting six thousand years and Christians have been waiting two thousand years, has come. It is the time to build the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth and in Heaven on an inter-religious, international and inter-organizational footing. Heaven's fortune has finally arrived. Jesus, Peter, John and the other disciples, plus thousands and even tens of thousands of religious leaders in the spirit world are now of one mind and one body and they are descending freely to the physical world to attend True Parents. Without a doubt, the Unified Cosmic Nation of Heaven's Will and the Kingdom of Heaven in which Heaven and Earth can be as one in eternal peace will settle on the Earth.

Now is the time for America, the Christian country representing the Second Israel, to stand in the forefront. I declare to the world that America has the responsibility to guide all the world's people. But it must not do so with weapons; it must do this in truth and love by living for the sake of others upon the foundation of true love, true life, and true lineage.

Thank you for your kind attention. May God bless you and God bless America. — (“The Life of Jesus as Seen from God's Will, and God's Warning to the Present Age, the Period of the Last Days—20th Anniversary of the *Washington Times* Banquet” May 21, 2002)

Who is the person God has been able to love the most in history? It is Jesus. Jesus presented a new direction for this conflict-ridden world. High walls are created between oppressor nations and oppressed nations, such as between Rome and Israel, by them viewing each other as enemies. Jesus' philosophy is that these walls need to be demolished. Jesus thought: You in Rome want to conquer me by force, but I will conquer you in the opposite way—with love. That is why he even sought blessing for his enemies when he was hanging on the cross.

### **Jesus Was Model Man**

We need to recognize that when Jesus said of the Roman soldiers, “Forgive them for they know not what they do”, he was expressing this kind of amazing philosophy. Because Jesus made this plea he became a model and archetype for all nations of the world to transcend the way they see each other as enemies, and also a model for transcending the borders between any two nations. (3-12-2000)

“It is believed that the crucifixion of Jesus was God’s plan. For this reason the miserable image of crucified Jesus on the cross is carved and put in the middle of the altar in the churches so that everybody can see.

“There is no religious group that worships such a miserable statue as Christianity. Don’t you feel bad when you see a dead body? Whether the dead person was good or bad, any dead body never gives us a good feeling. But they don’t feel bad even to see Jesus, who died an unnatural death, because they think his death was reasonable or, rather, that it was an expression of God’s love to forgive the original sin of human beings.

“Even though Jesus died because of Heavenly reasons, it is wrong to feel good looking at his dead body. No person wants to be stripped: do you like to be naked in public?” (Won Pil Kim “Father’s Course and our Life of Faith”)

### **Christians Naïve**

Christians are very naïve to think that believing in Jesus is all that is required for them to end up in heaven while they leave this world behind. Their idea of a guaranteed place in heaven is a crazy concept that could never enable man to fulfill God’s will. From God’s standpoint that is heretical thinking, not the principles of the Unification Church. (4-18-77)

### **Saved — Simply Believe in Jesus?**

Some Christians today may be puzzled when they hear about indemnity and man’s portion of

responsibility. They think, “Almighty God is a God of love with a soft heart, a God of love. What do you mean by such a cruel thing as indemnity? God is not cruel.” Often people would prefer to think that if they simply continue to believe in Jesus they would be saved. They think they don’t have to do anything else.

### **Belief in Jesus**

Let us examine what is meant by “belief in Jesus.” To what extent does someone believe in Jesus? Does a person believe in Jesus only as he relates to him as an individual, or Jesus within the family, or Jesus as he reigns over the society, nation, the universe, or the Jesus who is in God? That makes a lot of difference.

A favorite *Bible* verse of Christians today is John 3:16, which says, “For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him shall not perish but shall have eternal life.” Many Christians put the greatest emphasis upon the second part of the verse and forget the most important thing: that God so loved the world. God did not love the church or the individual so much that he sent his only begotten Son. It was because God so loved the world, the universe.

Thus Jesus is the one who came to save the world. When we believe in Jesus the world is very much in our minds. God is in Jesus and Jesus is in God.

### **Jesus Calls Us to Separate from Satan and Sin**

When you say you believe in Jesus, do you only believe in those things, which make you feel good? Do you reject those things about Jesus, which make you feel painful? We should accept what Jesus taught and do those things which Jesus himself would want us to do. We must not take part in things that Jesus would not like. What are those things, which Jesus would not like? They are, simply, Satan and sin.

### **Vague Belief in Jesus**

We are to separate ourselves from Satan and sin and



believe in Jesus from that position, rather than from a position in which sin, Satan, and Jesus are all mixed together in our lives. Jesus wants to rule over a world from which Satan and sin are eradicated, not a world in which sin is mixed together with everything and in which people have just a vague belief in Jesus. This is why Jesus said, “Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.” For what should we repent? We must repent of the fact that we have been living together with Satan and sin throughout our lives. Then we can serve heaven.

Where are the faithful believers in Jesus and where are the righteous churches that can publicly proclaim proudly that they are absolutely separated from Satan and sin and that they are following Jesus exactly as he would have them do? Since no one can say they are living in perfect love in an ideal world with no suffering and tears, Christians who truly follow Jesus must be struggling to separate from sin and to love the world from the perspective of Jesus, the Savior who labors still to bring the world to God.

But sadly, we know that Satan exists within the churches as everywhere else; there is almost as much sin there as in the rest of the world. All too many Christian leaders are so compromised with the world that what they love and hate is no different from what the rest of the world loves and hates; there is very little difference between the world and those churches. Which would Satan find more pleasure in—the church or the world? Why would he like the sins of the church more than those of society in general? Satan likes the sins of the church more because then he can protest to God, “Look at those people in the church—they don’t love others; they even hate others! They are not faithful, either. This must be my church.”

The churches that remain this way must perish at the time of the last days along with the evils of the secular world. God has promised that he will destroy

all evil at the time of the last days. God would even destroy such churches before the rest of society.

What really surprised me when I first came to America was the way Americans used the names of Jesus Christ and God as an exclamation—not to praise them, but to put them in the worst position. I wondered what people meant when they said, “Jesus Christ!” and I realized that they were describing something bad. What led to this kind of custom? What do the best words imaginable have to do with the worst things that can happen to people? Have you sometimes observed that certain Christians may be worse than people of the secular world? Those who claim they believe in God may actually be worse than those who don’t—they are more egoistic, less loving and giving, etc.

This American nation is founded upon Judeo-Christian principles, yet Americans have become very individualistic. Was Jesus an individualistic person? How did Americans come to be so egoistic and individualistic when Jesus had nothing of an egoistic nature? We can come to the simple conclusion that if people really believed in Jesus they would not have become like that. Instead of believing in Jesus for Jesus’ sake and for God’s sake, some people believe in him for their own benefit. In other words, they use Jesus and God for their own sake. What do you think about this?

### **Belief in Jesus Brings with it Responsibility to Love the World**

Returning to our original point, God sent Jesus to humankind because He loved this world so much. Did humankind believe in Jesus the way God wanted them to, or did people generally believe according to their own discretion and desire? This is the most important determining factor of a person’s belief.

#### **Just Believe**

The greatest error occurs when people think that they

can “just believe” in God and Jesus and they will receive more and more blessings from God. Such people feel they can have everything they want, without doing anything in return. That is similar to the attitude of a thief, who just takes things without working.

Did Jesus believe in God in that way? Did he think that because God sent him as his only begotten son it meant he had all power? Did he feel that all he had to do was to keep on believing and claiming his faith in God, and then he could subjugate all the Roman Empire automatically? If Jesus couldn't do that, what is the justification for thinking that other people can do that? In other words, many people say that Jesus couldn't just believe in God and do nothing, but that we can. Jesus believed in God and we believe in Jesus. Jesus didn't just say, “God, I believe in You so You must bring all the people and all the Roman Empire under my domain.” It is clear that such a thing would not work for Jesus. If everything could have come to Jesus automatically, why did Jesus witness? Why did Jesus gather and train the 12 apostles, the 70 disciples, the 120 elders? Why did he have to do all that and endure so much persecution along the way? Jesus went the way of persecution and bloodshed according to God's dispensation; he had no other way to go. Jesus knew the suffering that lay ahead of him, but he also knew he had to go that way in order to accomplish God's will.

Do you think I am placing unnecessary stress on this or do you understand that this point is the most crucial one of belief? Jesus had to go the way he did because he knew what God wanted him to do—namely, to save the world and all mankind by loving them. Therefore, it stands to reason that everyone else who loves Jesus must also do God's will—to love the people of the world and save them.

Because God so loved the world He sent his only begotten son. Jesus had the obligation, the mission,

to make the world one which could receive the love of God. Jesus looked around and saw that the world was not lovable. Is the world lovable today? At this time, there are many different churches with great power and influence in the world. They embrace this world in their own ways. Can God look at them and be completely pleased with them? Communists have even infiltrated the churches and developed theologies to suit their own purposes, such as liberation theology. How can God love such churches? We can understand that the true, correct faith is not the way many Christians have been going, but rather it is the way Jesus tried to establish in his time—to gather the people, teach the people, and establish the kind of world which God could freely love. Jesus had to love the world in order to accomplish his mission. This was the work of God and also the work of Jesus—it was the purpose for which God sent Jesus. Jesus had to bring the world to God for God to accomplish His purpose of sending Jesus to the world.

Then what would have happened? When all people became worthy of receiving the love of God freely, everything would have been accomplished. God loved the world, so he sent Jesus. When the people of the world are able to freely receive the love of Jesus and God, they will be satisfied. These things have to be accomplished; it is very clear.

If groups of Christians emerge from this hopeless world who are loving others, thinking more of serving than being served, and doing as Jesus did, then God will be able to fulfill the promise he made when he sent His only begotten son. Jesus sacrificed himself and gave up his own life; he remained completely faithful to his mission of making the world lovable by God, making the people worthy of receiving God's love. If some new Christian group emerges at this time, following the path which Jesus

trod, then Christianity and the world will have hope for the first time in a long time.

### **Bear the Cross**

Look around and see which denominations would fit these specifications. What about members of the Unification Church? Why don't we do the same things that many other churches do and believe exactly the same way that they do? Why do we fight against communism? We do this because it is the germ which will destroy all religion if it prevails. Our movement is trampling down on Satan and sin and especially communism, destroying those germs, and on the other hand we are sacrificing ourselves as Jesus did and bearing our own cross so that God can give His love to the world.

Would God say he likes Unification Church members? Would God be ashamed that we work harder than other Christians? No. God would say, "How proud I am of the [Unification Church members]!" Are you sure he would say that? How about Jesus? When he looks at the Unification movement, would he say, "Oh, you should be ashamed of yourselves; my other followers don't work the way you do. You embarrass me.?" No, instead, Jesus would say, "You are my hope, my pride."

### **See Hope in Unification Church Members**

If God loves us and Jesus loves us, what about the people of the world? They might be saying, "We hate those Moonies," but as they say such things, they are watching us, and gradually they are discovering that there is nothing wrong with us. They are gradually coming to like us, and they will come to see hope in us. When other Christians have a real chance to see us and work with us, will they continue to hate us or will they love us?

Jesus sought to bring the entire world to God, and we are determined to do that. Jesus was to confront the

Roman Empire. I have been confronting the government of the U.S. and I have pledged to preach the Gospel in Moscow, as well. The most powerful effort of America to stop me has been to put me in jail, but will such a thing stop our movement?

### **Logical Understanding**

Since God so loves the world, I continue to push you out in order to make this a lovable world. When we undertake something worthwhile, it is important first to have a logical understanding of why we must do it. We must do the things we do because of human responsibility.

### **Inch by Inch**

Does God really love me or not? When you look at how hard I have worked and how I have been persecuted, don't you think God might have done something more on my behalf? You say that God really loves me, but I might argue with you and say, "If God loves me, what has He ever done for me?" At no time in my entire mission have I ever had a peaceful moment. Wherever I have gone, I was not readily welcomed at first; it was only after I had given much and taught many things that people would begin to understand. I have had to fight continuously to gain ground for God—inch by inch.

If God were to give me the power to work miracles and somehow retaliate against those who persecute us unrighteously and show them dramatically how wrong they are, they would not continue to mistreat us. Why does God allow these unrighteous things to continue? When Jesus was crucified, God was certainly watching the scene. Did God not have the power to stop the Roman soldiers and rescue Jesus from the cross? Jesus was God's own son. What kind of a father could bear to see his own son's blood being shed in such an unrighteous way and not do something? Can we call such a God a God of love and justice? Where was God's justice then? When

my court case was over and the judge pronounced my sentence, why didn't God do something? Was it because God did not have the power to do anything? Why did God seem to pretend not to know about it? That is a riddle. In this common yet very important issue comes the understanding of the human portion of responsibility.

### **Law of Human Responsibility**

The discovery of man's portion of responsibility is a cosmic discovery. Great discoveries have been made in science, such as Einstein's theory of relativity; however, the discovery of the law of human responsibility is the greatest of all. Without understanding this principle, the most fundamental issues in life remain as a puzzle. "Why do righteous people always have to suffer? Why is a great man's name only resurrected after his death?" The answers to these questions hinge upon the principle of human responsibility.

### **God's Grace**

The [Unification Church members] are the ones who are supposed to appreciate this fact of man's responsibility the most, but ironically you hate it as much as everybody else does. Have you accomplished your portion of responsibility or not? The heaviest consequence of this principle is the requirement that humans make effort to indemnify sin. How long the human indemnity period will last is not known by anyone—not God, not spirit world, not me, not anyone. We may keep asking why the misery in life must go on, but it is a fact that as long as there is sin in the world, we must take responsibility for it. If anybody, including God, were to remove the human burden of indemnity, people could no longer have the dignity of responsible beings. This is not to deny the reality of God's grace, but even grace comes for the purpose of assisting people in fulfilling their portion of responsibility.

Therefore God did not intervene when Adam and Eve committed the fall. God did not intervene because he would not violate man's portion of responsibility.

I have been persecuted in this country, yet I have not done anything evil or wrong. Many people are watching what has been happening to me and are curious about the source of the persecution. Many other well-educated people and scientists can see that even though the majority of the world is accusing Sun Myung Moon, I have been doing things that are worthy of praise and even assistance.

### **Separate from Satan**

Yet there is no more efficient way for people to go from the extreme of being unworthy of God's love to being worthy except by going through persecution. The first thing we must do is separate ourselves from Satan. Do we do that when our lives are cozy and comfortable? No, the best way to separate ourselves from Satan is when we are enduring tremendous persecution. After Satan has opposed someone so much then God can freely love that person, and Satan will have no chance to accuse him anymore. Thus, a way is created by which God can more speedily love all those who have been unworthy of his love. Quickly the conditions are made for God to embrace them.

Remember the reason why these things have been happening—everything begins from the point of human responsibility. After man's responsibility is accomplished, what happens then? Once an individual successfully fulfills his portion of responsibility, that person enters the realm of the direct dominion of God. Does God maintain that dominion over a person by giving him a lot of money, or what? It is only through love that God gains direct dominion over mankind. Once that direct dominion is achieved, people can lead the kind of life, for the first time, which God originally intended for them to live.



In the Garden of Eden there was no crime or sin. Adam and Eve could do nothing really wrong except to violate the commandment God gave them. Once Adam and Eve had come under the direct dominion that would have meant they had passed through the time of the possibility of the fall. The only thing that would have been left for them to do was to experience love. Nothing else would have been truly significant. Love is the most essential and important element of the world; unless someone had violated that, nothing would have been a sin. Therefore all a person must accomplish is to receive the “certificate” of God’s love. God can make the world a totally peaceful place. Satan will be unable to complain against God at all. When we finally possess God’s love, we never want to commit a crime or a sin at all. The reason why people commit crimes and sin is that they want something they don’t have. When God’s love is with us we are satisfied and have no need for anything more.

### **Long and Complicated Route**

Since the fall occurred, however, and since restoration efforts have consistently failed, we find that it takes a long and complicated route, step-by-step, to separate from Satan—from the individual level of indemnity, the family level, the clan, society, national, world level, to the cosmic level.

### **Law of Indemnity**

This is not something I made up; the principle of human responsibility has existed from the very beginning, although it hasn’t been so well understood. It existed when Adam and Eve were alive, but all they needed to do was simply keep God’s commandment and live for 21 years faithful to God. Before Satan existed, there was no additional indemnity condition to be met. But with the fall and with the multiplication of Adam and Eve’s fallen family into a society, nation, and world dominated by Satan, human responsibility became heavier. Now

we must separate from Satan on every level by fulfilling conditions of indemnity. This law of indemnity is applicable not just for specific individuals or just to Unification Church members but to everyone. Whether someone understands or believes this law or not, he must eventually go through these steps.

### **Welcome Persecution**

This is the reason why we go the path we go. This is why I have welcomed persecution and will not shrink from the course that lies before me. I never pray to smooth my way or to lighten my burden. I will fulfill my own portion of responsibility.

### **Cross of Indemnity**

Do you need restoration by indemnity or not? Do other Christians need it also? What about Jesus—did he walk the path of restoration by indemnity also? Clearly, that was the path he trod. What about Sun Myung Moon? Yes, no matter what, there is no way I can avoid that. No matter how almighty God is, there is no way even He can avoid the cross of indemnity. He must endure uncertainty and heartbreak as He watches His children stumble along the path. Therefore, we should march on to fulfill our responsibility well.

Jesus completely occupied the love of God, but He did not want to stop there. He knew why God sent him to the world, so he did everything possible to pass along God's love to other people. Jesus received the purest love from God, and he wanted to spread out that love to the whole world. He wanted to make all humankind into God's sons and daughters.

### **Jesus is our Brother**

Jesus wanted all the people of the world to be loved by God, just as he was. Jesus was the one who was first loved by God; all humankind was supposed to be those who were second-loved by God. Therefore, the relationship between Jesus and all humanity is

like that between brothers and sisters. How close you can feel to Jesus when you realize that he is your elder brother!

### **Jesus is not Distant**

Many Christians have believed that Jesus and God are the subjects of religion and we are their objects and that subject and object can never get close to each other. They are so high and omnipotent that we can't even think about being on the same level of relationship with them; if we do, that is blasphemy. But we can see that Jesus is not the distant subject of religious belief. He is a part of your daily life, just like brothers and sisters in a family, not like the teacher of a religion relating to his followers. Maybe the first step of relationship had to be distant like that, but eventually Jesus wanted everybody to be a part of the same family.

Remember, the world is God's goal. And just as Jesus willingly gave his life so that the world might live, God wanted all Christians to be willing to give themselves for the salvation of the world. However, today, most Christians are not even close to realizing this heart of God.

God seeks to build one family of humankind. Therefore, the family, church, and nation which God desires transcend all barriers of race and nationality. The people who are a unified blending of all colors of skin, and who transcend race and nationality, are most beautiful in the sight of God and most pleasing to Him.

I have been telling you Christians that you cannot remain idle or indifferent. You cannot just think about your own life and your own family and going to Heaven eventually. That attitude among conventional Christians is a problem.

### **Need a Spiritual Revolution**

Christianity must unite. The church must liberate herself from sectarianism. She must undergo a drastic

reform and achieve an ecumenical and an inter-religious unity. For this, we need a spiritual revolution, and it has come in the form of a new Christian movement. The Unification movement has been created by God to fulfill that mission. The new ideology, which the Unification Church brings, is Godism, an absolutely God-centered ideology. It has the power to bring Christians of all creeds, and other religions and conscientious people, into unity....

### **Build It with Our Hands**

[We must] build the Kingdom of God [on earth]. Then we shall all truly become brothers and sisters under one Father, God. This will be a world of love, a world of happiness. Our planet will be one home, and humanity will be one family. God's will, his long cherished desire from the beginning of time, will finally be fulfilled. This will be the eternal, ideal world of God. Indeed, it will be the Kingdom of God on earth. We will build it with our hands.

This is our supreme mission. It is truly our God-given, sacred mission. God is crying out to the world, and we are His instruments. The world must respond to His call. Listen to God's commandment. Initiate a courageous march towards the Kingdom of God on earth. Whatever the difficulty, let it not stop us. Our march is God's, and it will go on to the end.

Today let us pledge to God Almighty our loyalty and dedication to the fulfillment of this divine mission. In the name of God, let us unite, and together build the Kingdom of God on earth! (*God's Warning to the World, Book II: Reverend Moon's Message from Prison*)

### **REINCARNATION**

The theory of reincarnation is incorrect. God created each of us to have only one physical body and one spiritual body. When our physical body dies our spiritual body goes to the spirit world. Our spirit man cannot go into a mother's womb again and take on a new physical body.

The theory of reincarnation came about because of spirit men returning to earth to work with people on earth. Because no one has reached perfection on earth spirit men need to come down to earth and cooperate with people. A spirit man can get vitality elements for his growth from the physical body of the person in whom he or she is working with.

In some cases spirit men so dominate people on earth that they tell the experiences the spirit man had while he lived on earth. When outsiders look at this it appears to be the reincarnation of a passed away spirit man. Memories that some people believe they have of earlier lives they led when they were a man or woman living in the past are really those spirits sharing their lives with the actual person on earth. It is so real because it is the actual lives of another person or persons. In certain people spirits return to help transfer their mission to another. Elijah did that with John the Baptist although John didn't know it. Some people interpret the *Bible* by saying that John the Baptist was the reincarnation of Elijah. John and Elijah are two separate people.

Child prodigies are explained by understanding that spirit men are helping. It is not reincarnation. This also explains speaking in tongues, psychic healing, spiritual possession, multiple personality and some kinds of insanity.

Christianity calls the belief that the spirits of those who have died can make contact with the living on earth—spiritualism or spiritism. Many Christians interpret the *Bible* as saying that the dead “sleep” in their graves until a future resurrection takes place and their bodies will rise from the dead with a new body. All phenomena such as “ghosts”, séances, visions, etc. are only angels and other spirit men. But the *Bible* clearly says that the dead are not asleep and can communicate with those on earth. First Samuel 28 tells of an ancient “séance.” King Saul of Israel wanted to know about a battle with the Philistines he was about to have. In First Samuel 28:7 he orders his servants to find a medium, “Seek me a woman that hath a familiar spirit that I may go to her, and inquire of her.” They found the woman at Endor. Saul disguised himself and went to her at night and said, “I pray thee, divine unto me by the familiar spirit, and bring me him up, whom I shall name unto thee” (verse 8). The

medium asked who she should bring up. Saul said: “Bring me up Samuel” (verse 11) and she did. Samuel prophesied that Saul would be defeated. Christianity is wrong in saying this was just an angel. The clearest instance of communication with those who had died is Jesus talking to Moses and Elijah at the Mount of Transfiguration.

Each of us is influenced by people in the spirit world. Good spirits as well as evil spirits are constantly whispering in our ears. Satan himself will often work with key people to disrupt God’s effort to unify mankind. We read that “Satan entered into Judas” (Luke 22:3) and after Satan was through with him and left him then Judas realized what he had done. He took the 30 pieces of silver back and hung himself for betraying Jesus.

This world is a battleground between the forces of God and Satan, between good and evil. Satan has won most of the battles, but God will eventually win the war because mankind now has the *Divine Principle* that teaches us how to stop having give and receive with Satan and do as God wants us to do. The *Principle* is not just another theology that we can pick from. It is the absolute truth that will bring God’s culture. It is the truth that will unite this world under one ideology.

### **PASS THE TEST**

We should understand that each of us are influenced by spirit men and women and should not make the mistake John the Baptist did. Until we heard the *Divine Principle* we were ignorant of how the world works. After we hear the *Principle* we have the responsibility to do God’s will. What is God’s will? It is to live God’s way of life. When we do this we will raise ourselves spiritually and those men and women in spirit world that surround us. We now know that we are not alone. Good spirits work to help us and evil spirits work to hurt us. We are constantly being tested. When we deny a temptation we grow closer to God and help those spirits attached to us to grow also. It is the only way they can grow. God wants each of us to be strong and make the right decisions. When we succumb to temptations that hurt us we now know that we hurt others as well as ourselves. Dear Reader, never think that you are alone. There are many spirits with you all day long and their salvation from Hell depends on you. Also, when we make the right choices in life we

become an inspiration to others to live a higher life and therefore a happier life.

## **LOGIC**

If something is logical then it should be consistent from beginning to end. Christianity today is a worldwide religion, which has prospered for 2,000 years, yet today it is entangled in confusion and chaos. Why? Because the beginning and end of today's Christian thought are not consistent. Look at the contradictions in Christian thought and Christian practice: Jesus came to build one world, but contrary to Jesus' will there are now several hundred denominations dividing Christianity. Greater division has been brought about.

Today the followers of Reverend Moon are being accused and persecuted by the world, but in the sight of God and Jesus we are the true central religion, the orthodox of orthodox. Therefore, I proclaim today that Christianity needs to learn a direction and new way of life. My direction is now being supported by spirit world, Jesus Christ and God Himself. How do you know I'm not the greatest swindler in the world? If you use your own logical minds you can deduce whether what I am saying is true or not.

Why do we need Jesus? Why do we need the Messiah? ... We need a Messiah because we want to have God centered love, and only the Messiah can give us that love. ... We need Jesus in order to learn his way of life, so that we can inherit the tradition of unstained heavenly love. In order to do that, we have to follow his way of life, obeying his instructions.

Could Jesus completely exemplify the heavenly tradition if he were a bachelor? Because Jesus was always a bachelor we have not seen any other tradition, but that was only the first step of Jesus' contribution. He was to have given the world not only a tradition of individual perfection, but also the tradition of love between husband and wife. As a God centered man he wanted to show how men should

live. As a husband he was to show how to be a model God centered husband. Does the *Bible* teach this? Have you ever read in the *Bible* how Jesus loved his wife?

Would God call Jesus a heretic for thinking that he should marry? Christianity does not have the tradition of a husband's love for his wife. Furthermore, Jesus wanted not only to love his wife but to teach her how to set the tradition of wifeness. Does the *Bible* record that tradition? Is there any record of Jesus becoming a father who could teach people the right way to love their children? Is there any indication that Jesus became a grandfather who could show how grandchildren should be loved?

Did Jesus leave any tradition for Christianity of leading a tribe? Is there any tradition for a king and ruler of the world about how to govern with God's love? Is there any tradition of a King of kings who governs without any national or racial prejudice? Is there a tradition for governing not only the physical world but also the spirit world, of showing what the Kingdom of Heaven should be like for eternity?

### **TRADITION**

Is there a tradition of the love of God here on earth? Jesus came to teach this tradition. He struggled by himself but finally was crucified, and there was not much room for him to leave the traditions that God wanted here on earth. Compared to the scope of the mission Jesus came to fulfill here on earth, he spoke only a small bit about the tradition of the love of God. The bulk of it has been left undone. It is essentially true that Jesus must return to pick up that mission and finish it. Isn't that logical?

What is love? What is the love of God from the point of view of Christianity? This world we live in is truly a wilderness, for there is no taste of the love of God in it. People hardly have a concept of the love of God. In this wilderness I came to cry out for the love of God. In itself this is a historical mission. I am



proclaiming in this wilderness how the love of God should be.

### **WILL OF GOD**

I came to this world knowing precisely the will of God, and the agony and heart of Jesus. I know what no one else has ever known and I came to proclaim it to the world.

Today people don't write out the word Christmas, but use Xmas instead. Often on a test O means true and X means false. Thus, written as Xmas, Christmas is the false, upside-down message. People are celebrating the wrong kind of Christmas. When you hear me say this it makes sense, but because of this people say I am a heretic who is attacking the 2,000-year-old Christian tradition.

Again, the important thing is which side God is receptive to. If the entire world has another opinion, how can you be so sure God would take my side? When we know that the true meaning of Christmas is that God sent Jesus to bring the true tradition of love, then when we exchange Christmas greetings they will be sweet and acceptable to Jesus.

Jesus led a tragic life of accusation and persecution and finally crucifixion. He truly led the most miserable life, and his one wish would be for one man to step forward and tell the world who he truly was and how he felt, why he cried out on Gethsemane. He would want someone to speak out for him who could look at the world through his eyes, with the tradition of the love of God, and tell the world what to do. Jesus would want that spokesman to vindicate his mission, to herald the tradition of love that Jesus could not finish during his own life. This is the kind of champion Jesus truly wants to see in this world.

In the fallen world men look at a beautiful woman and think how they can have her for themselves. When Jesus looked at any woman—whether charming, feeble, young or old—Jesus felt she was his sister and thought about how to love her in a pure,

heavenly way. When seen through Jesus' eyes, even the ugliest possible woman—so ugly you would have to spell ugly with ten U's—would truly be a sister and he would pour out his genuine heart to her. That's how Jesus looked at all mankind.

Everywhere I go people criticize me and call me a monster who brainwashes people. We have a better term; brainwashing is actually moon-washing, or love-washing.

We are gathered to celebrate the true Christmas because we know God and His purpose; we know Jesus' purpose and intention for coming to this world. And in addition we are handpicked by God to vindicate Jesus and liberate the heart of God by accomplishing what Jesus left undone. If we say Merry Christmas with that mind then God and Jesus would respond thousands of times, "Merry, merry, merry Christmas."

### **DIVINE MISSION**

No other people are truly responding to the call of God. We are given the divine mission which no one else is undertaking. There is nothing greater or more important to God and Jesus and mankind than establishing the tradition of God's love. The commitment you can give that task should be greater than to any other task, and far greater than the dedication of the communists to their cause. Love is supreme; nothing is more perfect or precious. Once established it will remain forever, so for this task there is nothing we cannot spare.

Have you truly loved the world that much? Basically you have been living capriciously, but you must realize that your body is not yours—it should be the personification of God's love. It is the holy temple of God, who is love. It should be a love temple. If someone squeezes you, love juice should come out, and through you people should find salvation and eternal life.

Christmas Day is the perfect day for repentance, for checking how much you have truly lived as Jesus'

representative and loved the world as he did. We are the only people inheriting the true tradition of Christmas which God conceived in His heart. The true meaning of Christmas is the tradition of the true love of God.

It doesn't matter how big or small our festivities are; we will celebrate a Christmas which God and Jesus will want to attend. After hearing me, "Merry Christmas" becomes "Concerned Christmas." This year you greet each other with "Heavy Christmas," with the desire that next year we can truly celebrate a Merry Christmas. Will fruitcake and ice cream make a merry Christmas? The true content of Christmas is the amount of love you gave during the year. That is far more dazzling than any amount of decorations.

### **JESUS — MANLY MAN**

Jesus was a man's man. He was virile—a manly man:

Was Jesus a manly man or was he effeminate? He was, of course, very masculine. Would it have been a sin if Jesus, as a masculine man, wanted to marry a woman, or would that have been unrighteous? God's providence is for a righteous and perfectly masculine man to become one with a perfectly feminine woman. If Adam and Eve had become one, free of the fall and centered on true love, this beautiful relationship would have made the flowers bloom. When the flowers bloom, can the butterflies stay away? Would the birds stay away? No, they would be attracted, too. (2-19-89)

### **CHRISTIANS — SECOND CHOSEN PEOPLE**

The history of the world has been a nightmare. Jesus tried to teach us the truth, but he was murdered by ignorant people before he could give us the whole truth that would save us. In the next chapter we will learn how God has worked since Jesus to raise mankind to accept the Second Coming of Christ. God has worked with other cultures but His focus has been on raising Christians to be the chosen people to accept the new Messiah.

Let's now look at Christian history to see how God has worked since Jesus to prepare the world for the Third and final Adam who will pioneer the ideal world God has dreamed of for so long.

# *Chapter 5*

## *Christian History*

### **SIX PERIODS OF TIME**

Christian history is a reenactment of Jewish history. History repeats itself. We saw the pattern of 6 stages of time in the history of the Jewish people. This pattern is symbolic and prophetic. When we look at Christian history, we will see a corresponding six stages.

These stages will not be symbolic but literal periods of time that will match within 2 or 3 percent the corresponding time period in Jewish history. The time periods in Jewish history prophesy the pattern God will use in preparing the Christian world for the coming of the Third Adam.

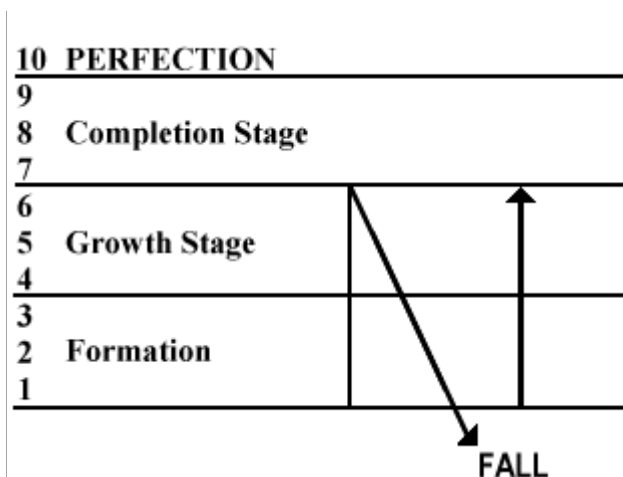


### **Symbolic for Man**

God created man on the sixth day. The number six is symbolic for man. Satan has claimed that number. Because it took six days to create the world or six periods of time, God has used six periods of time to restore man.

We learned earlier there are 3 stages in the growth period—formation, growth, and completion. Each of these stages has 3 stages.

Man fell at the top of the growth stage in the Growth Period. This stage is the sixth stage or completion level of the growth stage, the second stage in the Growth Period. To restore man there will be therefore six stages of time to bring man back to the point of the Fall. At this point we are reborn through the Messiah and grow to perfection by following the principles that the Messiah teaches and lives by.



Just as the Israelites had been persecuted for 400 years, Christians were persecuted by the Romans. Christians were considered a dangerous sect or cult. St. Paul himself was a persecutor before God struck him off his horse as he was traveling to a city to persecute Christians. He was converted to Christianity and witnessed to thousands.

For three hundred years Christianity grew in the Roman Empire. During that time they were sometimes persecuted. But God was behind this minority religion and it kept growing. Then God gained a major victory in 312 A.D. when the emperor Constantine had a

vision. While leading his army he saw a cross of light in the sky and an inscription: "By this sign, conquer." He won the battle at Milvian Bridge and was converted to Christianity. In 313 he issued the Edict of Milan, a decree of toleration toward the Christian sect.

In 392 Theodocius I made Christianity the state religion of the Roman Empire. If it required 400 years for Christianity to become the state religion, what if Jesus had been able to lead the early disciples to Rome? In his lifetime, the Roman Empire would have turned to God. Today there would be no religion called Christianity because Jesus would have united the world into one family under God.

Historians have discovered that Jesus was actually born in 4 B.C. 392 from 4 B.C. is 396 years which matches the 400 years of slavery in Egypt within 2 or 3 percent. Just as God sent a liberator, Moses, to the Israelites, God sent the liberator Theodocius to the Christians. Theodocius was flawed like Moses. Moses was not able to enter Canaan because of his mistakes, and Theodocius was not able to keep the Roman Empire as God's central nation.

### **"I AM COMING SOON"**

Why did Jesus say to his disciples he would return soon by coming in a dramatic way on the clouds? There are two reasons. First, Jesus knew if he spoke clearly about another man coming as a Second Messiah there would be too much confusion caused by so many people saying they were the one.

The other reason was that Jesus wanted to keep the disciples faith at a high point. He knew that the disciples and all mankind would suffer because of the terrible mistake of the crucifixion. If he told the disciples clearly of the coming persecution, he was afraid they would lose their heart and zeal. Revelation 22:20 says, "Surely I am coming soon." And in Matthew 10:23 Jesus said, "... for truly, I say to you, you will not have gone through all the towns of Israel, before the Son of man comes." In Matthew 16:28, he said, "Truly, I say to you, there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom." In these passages Jesus was saying that the Second Coming would take place very

soon. Of course, Jesus did not return in their lifetime. Why did Jesus lead them to think he would?

Jesus wanted Christianity to survive the terrible persecution it had ahead of it. Because the disciples felt Jesus' return was imminent they were encouraged and remained dedicated and had the strength to build the early Christian Church.

## Persecution In Roman Empire

Jesus 4 B.C. ————— 392 Theodocius  
396

### Jewish History      Christian History

400	Preparation 2nd Adam	
210	Jewish Captivity	
400	Divided Kingdoms	
120	United Kingdom	
400	Period of Judges	
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

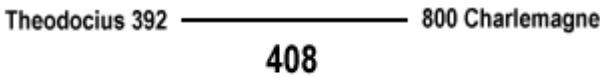
The second period of Jewish history was the 400-year period of Judges, a feudal period. Christianity also went through 400 years of a feudal era called the Dark Ages ruled by Patriarchs. The five most influential Patriarchs were the bishops of Rome, Constantinople, Antioch, Alexandria, and Jerusalem. The Bishop of Rome eventually became the leading patriarch and was called "Pope."



The period of Judges ended when Samuel anointed Saul King. The period of Patriarchs ended when Pope Leo III crowned Charlemagne King on Christmas day, 800 A.D.

392 to 800 are 408 years. Again, Christian history matches Jewish history by 2 to 3 percent.

## Period of Patriarchs



### Jewish History      Christian History

<b>400</b>	Preparation 2nd Adam	
<b>210</b>	Jewish Captivity	
<b>400</b>	Divided Kingdoms	
<b>120</b>	United Kingdom	
<b>400</b>	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
<b>400</b>	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

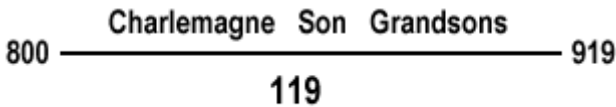
After the 400-year period of Judges, came the period of the United Kingdom. Likewise, Charlemagne created a united Christian Kingdom.

Charlemagne's favorite book was Augustine's *City of God*, and he felt he had a mission to unite Europe and create a model Christian empire. Under his charismatic leadership he encouraged the building of schools. It was like a renaissance but, unfortunately, the Kingdom was divided after three generations under the leadership of his son, and later his grandsons.

Just like David and Solomon had many flaws, the leaders during this period did not live up to its promise of being a great empire that would continue far into the future. Charlemagne and his descendants are called Carolingians (pronounced Kair-oh-lin'-jee-uhn-z or Karlin'jenz). Charlemagne's grandsons fought with each other and eventually signed the Treaty of Verdun in 843. This Treaty is seen by some as the historical origin of France and Germany, but the Carolingian dynasty did not end then. It lasted until 911 in what is today Germany. The next king was connected to the Carolingians because his mother was a Carolingian. He ruled until 919, and then Henry I was crowned and started a new era called the Saxon Dynasty.

The period of the United Christian Kingdom ended in 919 when Henry I was crowned. Eight hundred to 919 is 119 years. This compares with the 120 years of the Israelite United Kingdom.

## United Kingdom



## Jewish History      Christian History

<b>400</b>	Preparation 2nd Adam	
<b>210</b>	Jewish Captivity	
<b>400</b>	Divided Kingdoms	
<b>120</b>	United Kingdom	United Kingdom
<b>400</b>	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
<b>400</b>	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

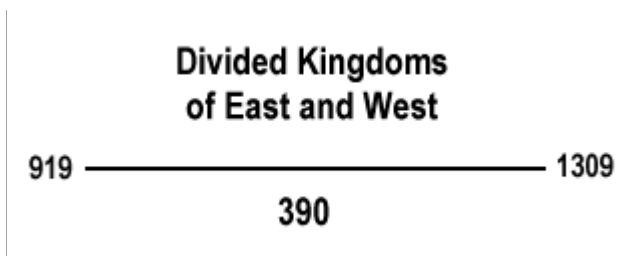
At the end of the United Kingdom of Israel, the chosen people were split into two camps—North Israel and South Judah. Likewise, the chosen people, the Christians, were divided into two camps, the East Franks that became Germany, and the West Franks, later to become France.

The dates in the Parallels of History are not arbitrary. They are precise. For example, if we study what historians teach of the period around the year 919, we see that the *Principle* is true. For example, the book *History of Germany* begins by saying, “In the year 911 the German tribes elected a Frankish duke to be their King. After his early death their choice fell upon the Saxon duke Henry, who was successful in compelling homage of the remaining tribes (in 919). These events revealed the will of the scattered German peoples to form one corporate whole; they laid the foundation of the German State, and may be regarded as the beginning of German History.”

Germany was the Abel side and France was the Cain side in this division. There was also division, called the Great Schism, between the Pope of Rome and the patriarch of Constantinople. Today the division in Catholicism is between the Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox Church.

During this period the Roman Catholic Church grew in strength. The Pope was as powerful during the Middle Ages as many Kings. But the church became corrupt with its wealth and power. And just as God sent prophets to Israel and Judah to chastise and raise the people, God sent monastics such as St. Bernard, Thomas Aquinas, and St. Francis to bring reformation but many church leaders continued in corruption.

The end of the Jewish Divided Kingdoms came when Judah was taken captive and exiled to Babylon. In Christian history, the divided empire ended in 1309 when the Pope was exiled to Avignon, France. The 390 years from 919 to 1309 correspond to the 400 years in Jewish history.

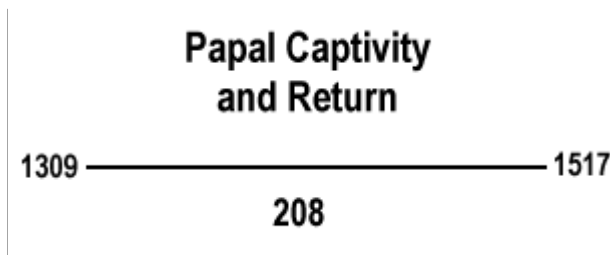


	<b>Jewish History</b>	<b>Christian History</b>
<b>400</b>	Preparation 2nd Adam	
<b>210</b>	Jewish Captivity	
<b>400</b>	Divided Kingdoms	Divided Kingdoms
<b>120</b>	United Kingdom	United Kingdom
<b>400</b>	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
<b>400</b>	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

The King of France moved the papal court from Rome to Avignon to keep close watch over the Pope. This period of exile lasted from 1309 to 1377. This period of nearly 70 years is called the “Babylonian Captivity of the Church.” After 70 years of exile in Babylon, the Israelites were freed and went home. After 70 years of papal exile, Christianity tried to rebuild itself. But there were troubles. At one time the church had three Popes. Order finally was established, but the church government fell into corruption again.

In Jewish history, after the Babylonian captivity and return, a reformer, Malachi appeared. After the papal captivity and return, the German, Martin Luther, another reformer appeared in 1517.

The Christian captivity and return lasted from 1309 to 1517, a total of 208 years. This matches the 210-year period of Jewish captivity and return.



## Jewish History      Christian History

<b>400</b>	<b>Preparation 2nd Adam</b>	
<b>210</b>	<b>Jewish Captivity</b>	<b>Papal Captivity</b>
<b>400</b>	<b>Divided Kingdoms</b>	<b>Divided Kingdoms</b>
<b>120</b>	<b>United Kingdom</b>	<b>United Kingdom</b>
<b>400</b>	<b>Period of Judges</b>	<b>Period of Patriarchs</b>
<b>400</b>	<b>Persecution In Egypt</b>	<b>Persecution In Roman Empire</b>

Four hundred years after Malachi came the period of the preparation for the Second Adam. Likewise, God spent 400 years after Martin Luther to prepare the world for the Third Adam.

### **1517-1917 PREPARATION FOR THE MESSIAH**

When Adam and Eve fell, they became ignorant spiritually of God and ignorant of the workings of the physical world. Mankind is basically good and has throughout history been led by their basic good nature to overcome their ignorance. There is a gyroscope that is like a compass that constantly leads men and women to return to a close relationship with God by restoring their spiritual senses. In *Anne Frank: The Diary of a Young Girl* we read, “In spite of everything I still believe that people are good at heart. I can feel the suffering of millions and yet, if I look up at the heavens I think that it will all come out right and that peace and tranquility will return again.”

Likewise there is a deep urge to find the scientific laws that govern this universe to restore the Third Blessing of dominion over creation. We are to live in harmony with nature and also in luxury, free of disease, hunger and suffering that have been unleashed by Satan since the Fall.

We are going to look at the dramatic advance by mankind to overcome ignorance in the last 400 years. God is the main force behind this because He wants the world prepared spiritually and physically for the new Messiah. God wants him to be accepted and heard the world over. We must not repeat the mistake the Israelites and Romans made 2000 years ago.

Jesus was only able to tell a few parables and was not given the time to speak in depth: "I have said these things to you in figures. The hour is coming when I shall no longer speak to you in figures but tell you plainly of the Father" (John 16:25).

The Third Adam will speak in clear language because God will have through education and in spirit raised mankind. God was devastated that the Israelites were not advanced enough to understand Jesus and were so low spiritually that they nailed him to a cross. God was not going to have this happen again. So the last 2000 years God has been working with Jesus and good spirit men and women to raise mankind to a higher level spiritually and intellectually.

Jesus said that day will come when the Messiah will give all the truth: "I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. When the spirit of truth comes, he will guide you into all the truth" (John 16:12-13). The *Divine Principle* is "all the truth" that speaks "plainly of the Father."

Satan has also been hard at work these 400 years to thwart God's efforts. There has been such an advancement of knowledge, goodness, charity and spiritual values and yet at the same time there has been incredible brutality and suffering of so many millions and even billions of people, especially in the twentieth century. The 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century is the final showdown in the battle between God and Satan.

The last 400 years can be divided into three periods each roughly lasting 130 years. In each period we will look at the development of the satanic side that we will call the Cain side, and we will follow the Abel or God's side.

To overcome mankind's ignorance of the external world, man's original nature has driven him to the study of science. This is why we see the advent of the Renaissance.

## **FIRST PERIOD**

### **RENAISSANCE AND REFORMATION**

#### **RENAISSANCE (1517-1648)**

The first period is divided into the Cain development of the Renaissance and the Abel development of the Reformation. The new burst of exploration and learning in the Renaissance had its roots in Hellenism. There was renewed interest in the ancient Greeks or Hellenic culture. The Greeks were not particularly religious, and men of the Renaissance, although they usually believed in God, were so preoccupied with their new discoveries and the world around them that they concentrated more on the pleasures of this world unlike medieval men who went too far in concentrating on the future heaven. A major influence that also stirred more interest in the physical world was the effect of the many that went on the Crusades. Many found in the Near East fabulous cities with exotic foods and dress that diminished the impact of the Church that said this world was a vale of tears and not to be enjoyed. Some of the most famous Renaissance humanist writers are Petrarch, Boccaccio, Machiavelli, Shakespeare, Rabelais and Cervantes.

God supported the burst of creativity of the Renaissance that was the beginning of the modern world. God wanted man to be the Lord of Creation and to enjoy this earth, but He also wanted a balance of an understanding of the spirit too. God wanted man to be free of the chains of Satan. He created man with reason and a unique individuality. Unfortunately some people came to emphasize man's reason and individuality too much. They began to emphasize humanism over religion. This rise in humanism focused on the five physical senses and looked more to man's reason than to the value of visions, dreams, revelations and mysticism. These developments



began to separate men from God. Satan was guiding this. Satan corrupted the legitimate use of material things in life. He promoted hedonism and the view that man is the center of the universe and not dependent on God.

God was successful in the Renaissance by giving man a better view of his body and the world. He inspired naturalness in the art of Michelangelo and others. Man became excited about the world around him. Copernicus and Leonardo da Vinci made great discoveries. Galileo advanced astronomy. The telescope and microscope were invented.

Another invention God inspired was the printing press. Satan's tactic is ignorance and the suppression of truth and knowledge. God wanted the world educated unlike the Israelites who killed Jesus. To help reach the world God helped Martin Luther translate the *Bible* into German. Dante wrote in Italian, Chaucer and Wycliffe in English rather than the Latin that only a few could read.

## **AMERICA**

God worked to begin the building of America. He sent the Pilgrims to America in 1620. They started the beautiful tradition of Thanksgiving. William Bradford wrote the classic *Of Plymouth Plantation* about these champions of God who started America on the road to capitalism, democracy, and freedom of religion. Roger Williams was befriended by the Pilgrims at Plymouth. Later he founded Providence, Rhode Island where he taught religious toleration.

## **600 YEARS**

God was working, not only 400 years to prepare the world for the Messiah, but also for the last 600 years. The *Bible* says God created man on the sixth day. God prepared an environment for six periods of time and then Adam was born. The number six is the number for man and in God's providence of re-creation He starts a preparation period of six centuries before the Messiah is born. Six centuries before Jesus, God sent intellectual and spiritual leaders to elevate people to a higher spiritual level so they could more easily accept the Messiah when he came. It is not a coincidence that around 600

B.C. Confucius and Buddha came. The Greek civilization emerged about the sixth century B.C. God influenced it to raise man's understanding of the world through the arts and sciences.

Likewise, six centuries before the Third Adam was to be born, the 14th century, God raised mankind to prepare an environment for him to be accepted by starting the Renaissance in Italy and with the reformers, the English theologian John Wycliffe and the Czech religious thinker John Hus.

### **REFORMATION (1517-1648)**

The Renaissance had its roots in ancient Greek Hellenic thought. This was basically a horizontal view of the world. The truer view is to see the world from a vertical viewpoint. The religious life is an Abel-view of life and the secular life is a Cain-view of life. The root of Western Civilization's religion is the ancient Hebrew culture called Hebraism.

While Satan was active corrupting the Renaissance, God was working to bring a better religious way of life by turning from Catholicism and siding with the Protestant Revolution—a revival and improvement of Judeo-Christianity. The Messiah would come on the Protestant foundation.

Just as Malachi chastised the priesthood for its corruption, Martin Luther chastised the Roman Catholic Church for its corruption. To raise money to build St. Peter's Cathedral in Rome, Pope Leo X gave traveling monks the right to sell indulgences or letters of pardon for sins committed. Luther was angry at this and other things so he wrote his complaints. In 1517 he posted his 95 theses on the door of the Wittenburg Church. He was excommunicated. Luther said everyone should have a direct relationship with God and tore the excommunication papers up in public and burned them.

Other leaders in the Protestant Revolution were Calvin and Zwingli. The Protestant Reformation led to actual war that lasted over 100 years ending with the Thirty Years' War which ended in 1648 with the Treaty of Westphalia in which Protestantism won in northern Europe.

Father Moon says, “Martin Luther sparked the Protestant Reformation, and significant reformers emerged within the Catholic ranks as well. Throughout Europe, righteous people determined to win liberation from the confinement of outmoded and abusive doctrines and practices. They wanted to worship God and Jesus, not the church as a worldly institution. The priesthood of all believers was the Protestant proclamation. Direct communication with God was their true desire. They helped God bring the world step by step closer to the ultimate goal.” (*God’s Warning to the World*)

When we say that there is a Cain and Abel side, it does not mean that Cain is all bad and Abel is all good. Those on the Abel side often make serious mistakes.

## **SECOND PERIOD**

### **ENLIGHTENMENT AND SPIRITUAL AWAKENING**

#### **ENLIGHTENMENT (1648-1789)**

The next period is divided into the Cain development of the Enlightenment and the Abel development of Spiritual Awakening.

The Age of Enlightenment followed the Renaissance in focusing even more on the physical than the spiritual. Some of the main figures of the Enlightenment are: Descartes, Voltaire, Bacon, Rousseau, Hume and Paine. Their focus was on the earth and negating spirituality. They believed that we could primarily use our reason, science and politics to build a better world. Religion was seen as superstitious, irrational, too otherworldly, impractical and ascetic. By denying prayer and mystical feelings for God, they became too worldly and led mankind down the road to hedonism. They were right that the church was corrupt, but they threw the baby out with the bathwater.

They had total confidence and supreme faith in reason. This was also called the Age of Reason. They promoted a secular view of the world. The true view is a theistic view of the world.

Many became Deists who believed no one needed divine revelation and that the Creator set the universe in motion and left it to run according to the laws of nature that He had made. God became distant.

In this period God inspired such scientists as Isaac Newton, Ben Franklin and Lavoisier, the father of chemistry. God was preparing for the coming Industrial Revolution that would raise mankind out of drudgery so we could pursue spiritual growth.

### **SPIRITUAL AWAKENING (1648-1789)**

The Abel view of life, the Great Spiritual Awakening, countered the Enlightenment. God inspired John and Charles Wesley, the founders of the Methodist Church; George Fox, the founder of Quakers; Emmanuel Swedenborg, who revealed much about the spirit world; and Philip Spener, the leader of the Pietist movement.

The fiery evangelism of George Whitefield, Jonathan Edwards and others started the Great Awakening, a movement of revivals throughout America.

William Penn, the founder of the state of Pennsylvania wrote *The Great Case of Liberty of Conscience* in 1670, in which he argued for religious toleration.

God also worked through the humanities with some writers such as Wordsworth and Coleridge. These and other romantic poets heightened man's sensitivity.

## **THIRD PERIOD**

### **RIGHT vs. LEFT**

### **IDEOLOGY OF THE RIGHT (1789 - 1917)**

In the third period leading up to the second advent of the Messiah, God and Satan battled for the minds and hearts of people. God

worked to elevate mankind to a high spiritual, intellectual and economical level. Satan worked to deceive mankind with his false ideology. God inspired the making of America to be a beacon of light for the world in the 19th century as a role model for democracy and capitalism. It was to be a land of freedom. America pioneered religious freedom. Many times it failed to be perfect and persecuted religious minorities and made other serious mistakes but compared with much of the rest of the world it has been in the Abel position. God worked to raise America to be His champion to teach and inspire the rest of the world to become a true Christian nation that was pure and would not persecute religion. The *Constitution of the United States* was a tremendous breakthrough for mankind. God worked to make the world safe for the Messiah to speak and for the people to be intelligent enough to listen and accept.

The Abel side of the second period ended with the American Revolution in 1776 and George Washington becoming the first President in 1789. God worked to build America to become the leader of the Free World that had the values of being democratic, not totalitarian; Judeo-Christian, not atheistic; defensive, not offensive. God worked through the Founding Fathers of America to create a nation of freedom and peaceful exchange of political power. He sided with the North in fighting against the slavery in the South in the Civil War.

Let us examine the people who led the independence movement in this country in 1776. Those freedom fighters were traitors in the eyes of the British Crown. But God could use these traitors as His instruments, as His people, and through them He conceived and built the best nation upon the face of the earth.

George Washington, Commander-in-Chief of the Continental Army, tasted the bitterness of defeat in many, many battles. When he finally faced the last heartbreaking winter at Valley Forge, he was serious. I am sure George Washington prayed like this: "God, it is You who led our people out of Europe and brought us over here to the New

World; You don't want us to repeat the history of Europe. You liberated us and gave us freedom. You don't want to see the mistakes in Europe repeated in this land. Let me give you my pledge. I will build one nation under God." Thus George Washington made his battle God's battle, and therefore the victory won was a victory for God.

I know that this victory and the independence of America came because God accepted George Washington's prayer, along with the prayers of many other Americans. God knew that His champions would work for His new nation. But George Washington had nothing to work with, and the British army had everything—power, authority, tradition, and equipment. They were proud of their military strength. The American Continental Army had no ammunition and few soldiers. George Washington finally had one weapon only: Faith in God. I believe that George Washington's position paralleled David's in his fight against the giant Goliath. David won his battle in the name of the Lord. George Washington won his battle in the name of God. They both let God vanquish their foe. Each of them put his whole heart, his whole being, his whole sacrificial spirit into the battle, and won.

It is a significant fact that throughout history, God's people could never be blessed on their own homeland. God moves them out of their homeland and settles them on foreign soil, and there they can become a people and a nation of God. True to this pattern, the American people journeyed in faith out of their homelands, came across the ocean to the New World, and here received God's blessing. God had a definite plan for America. He needed to have this nation prosper as one nation under God. With God, nothing is impossible. So out of the realm of

impossibility the independence of America became a fact, and upon its foundation, great prosperity came.

The British army fought for their king. For them, the British Crown was supreme. The American army fought for their King. God was their only King, and He alone was supreme. The New World was pioneered in the name of God. America is called “the land of opportunity.” Here is the soil on which people find opportunity in God.

The Christian tradition in America is a most beautiful thing for foreigners to behold when they come to this country. I learned that every day your Congress is convened in prayer. Your President is sworn into office by putting his hand on the Bible. One day I visited a small prayer room in your Capitol building. When your leaders have grave decisions to make, they come to this place, kneel humbly before God and ask His help. There is a stained glass window depicting George Washington on his knees in prayer. Here I saw the true greatness of America. From the highest echelons of Congress way down to the rustic customs of the countryside, evidence of dependence upon God can be seen everywhere in America.

In this respect America is a unique nation. Even your money, the bills and coins, are impressed with such a beautiful inscription, “IN GOD WE TRUST.” No other nation does such a thing. Then whose money is it, your money? Is it American money? No, it is God’s money. Every bill or coin says so. You are the stewards, and God has deposited His wealth in your hands. Yes, this nation is not the American nation, it is God’s nation. And such a nation exists for the entire

world, not just for America herself. Yes, America was formed as a new nation, a new Christian nation under a new tradition. The shackles of old traditions fell away in America. You must want to build upon this foundation a new nation under God.

God's purpose is the salvation of the world and all humankind. Today in America, therefore, you must not think that you have such wealth because you yourselves are great. We must humbly realize that the blessing of God came to America with the purpose of making it possible for God to use this nation as His instrument in saving the world. If America betrays God, where can God go? If America rejects God, where can God go to fulfill His aim? Do you want to let him try to go to the Communist world? To underdeveloped countries? God wants to have America as His base, America as His champion. And America was begun in the sacrificial spirit pursuing God's purpose. America must consummate her history in the same sacrificial spirit for God's purpose. Then America will endure forever!

Let me compare two striking examples. The people who came to America—to North America—came seeking God and freedom of worship. The dominant motive of the first settlers was God. When they came for God, they not only found God, but they also found freedom and wealth. At the same time many people went to South America. Their dominant motivation was to find gold. South America is a fertile land, no less than the North American continent. But when the colonists' motivation was gold, they could find neither gold, nor God, nor freedom. And the South American countries remain relatively underdeveloped nations.



The United States of America is the miracle of modern history. You have built the most powerful nation in history in a short time. Was this miracle possible only because you worked hard? Certainly you did work hard. However, hard work is not explanation enough. If God had not been the principal Partner, creating today's America would have been impossible. God played a prime role in American history, and this He wants America to know. (10-21-73)

God spoke through John Locke who wrote the classic statement for absolute freedom of religion in *A Letter Concerning Toleration*. Thomas Jefferson championed freedom of religion in the *Bill of Rights* and *The Statute of Virginia for Religious Freedom*. These are eloquent defenses of freedom from government regulation.

### **LAISSEZ-FAIRE CAPITALISM**

God worked to build America to be the greatest military, economic and religious empire to embrace and protect the Messiah. America was revolutionary in not only pioneering religious freedom but also laissez-faire capitalism that brought great wealth. It is not a coincidence that Adam Smith published *The Wealth of Nations* in 1776. He was right in saying there is an "invisible hand" that works in limited government and free enterprise to give prosperity. America was to be a model Christian nation with large families that lived by biblical family values.

In the last 400 years God has worked to create an advanced spiritual and physical environment for the Messiah. In the 140-year period from the American Revolution to the First World War, there was tremendous advancement in every area of life. Economically, God inspired the Industrial Revolution to raise people out of poverty and give them the opportunity to become educated and be prepared to understand the Messiah when he came.

### **THE GREAT COMMISSION**

During this period God inspired missionaries to spread Christianity to every continent in the world. The last thing Jesus said was that

Christians have to witness to the world. He said, “Go, and make disciples of all nations” (Matthew 28:19). God wants his people to witness because he uses people to speak for him. He wants everyone to be saved from Satan’s bondage and come to know God’s love for every person and God’s dream of an Ideal World. God wants every person to hear about the Messiah. A true follower of the Messiah proselytizes the Good News.

### **IDEOLOGY OF THE LEFT (1789 - 1917)**

Satan worked during this period by introducing his lies with his champions such as Karl Marx, Frederick Engels, Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Susan B. Anthony and Charles Darwin. They were against the *Bible* and destructive to religious, political and family order. Theirs is the ideology of chaos. Marx wrote the *Communist Manifesto* in 1848, and the same year Elizabeth Cady Stanton wrote the *Seneca Falls Declaration* in New York that pioneered feminist thought to weaken families by rebelling against the traditional family. The core of Communist thought is feminism. Friedrich Engels wrote in his book *Origin of the Family, Private Property and the State* that women are slaves in a traditional family and must leave the home to work in the marketplace. Another writer that weakened the belief in the *Bible* was Darwin’s lie of evolution that influenced many to reject the idea of a Creator.

The Cain side of the second period ended with the French Revolution in 1789. Unlike the American Revolution it was not led in the spirit of God. The people marched into Notre Dame and enthroned the Goddess of Reason. The French Revolution laid the seeds for the use of violence by dictators to resolve differences with its Reign of Terror that culminated in Napoleon. It was this satanic atmosphere that Marx picked up when he met Engels in Paris in the 1840s. Together they wrote Satan’s bible, the *Communist Manifesto*, which presented Satan’s dream of his ideal world of big brother government.

### **SOCIALISM IS A LIE**

Some Christians were led by Satan to twist their idealism to believe in socialism. Charles Kingsley started a movement called Christian Socialism in 1848. Robert Owen became famous for teaching the lie that socialism brings equality and prosperity. Socialism is the

ultimate false ideology. It is centralized power that results in poverty. God is for decentralized power. Owen's socialist utopian communities were unsuccessful because socialism is not in line with God's laws of the universe. (For more on this see my book: *Practical Plan for World Peace*.)

## 1917

The third period ends with the First World War and the beginning of Satan's champion nation, the Soviet Union, in 1917 led by Lenin. Its ideology was Marxist-Leninism or Communism which is consistent with socialism, feminism, atheism, statism and secular liberalism.

America was God's champion. It led the Free World and championed the values of free enterprise, private property, conservative traditional family values, and belief in God and Christianity.

The seeds of Communism and the Free World were sown at the crucifixion of Jesus. The thief on the right accepted Jesus and foreshadowed the Free World that even politically is called "Right." The thief on the left denied Jesus and foreshadowed Communism, called the "Left." We read in the *Bible*: "When the son of man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit on the throne of his glory. All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats, and he will put the sheep at his right hand and the goats at the left" (Matt. 25:31-33).

The Free World says, "There is a God. We accept our shepherd." The Communist world says, "God does not exist." They deny their master. The Free World is symbolized by sheep; the Communist world by goats. There are deep differences between the Free World and the Communist World. The most important battle between them is not physical, but mental. It is an ideological war.

**THREE PERIODS OF THE 400 YEAR  
PREPARATION FOR THE SECOND MESSIAH**

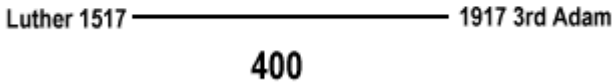
1789-1917	Completion	Free Enterprise Conservatives Traditional Family Values God Centered Spiritual Church	Socialism Liberals Feminism Atheism Secular State
1648-1789	Growth	Spiritual Awakenings	Enlightenment
1517-1648	Formation	Reformation	Renaissance

**ABEL**

**CAIN**

Four hundred years after the reformer Malachi, Jesus, the Second Adam, was born. Likewise, approximately 400 years after Martin Luther, the Third Adam was born. Four hundred years after 1517 is 1917. God has worked to prepare the world for the new Messiah in the 20th century, and Satan has worked to destroy him.

**Preparation For 3rd Adam**



## Jewish History      Christian History

400	Preparation 2nd Adam	Preparation 3rd Adam
210	Jewish Captivity	Papal Captivity
400	Divided Kingdoms	Divided Kingdoms
120	United Kingdom	United Kingdom
400	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

### *2000 YEAR CHRISTIAN HISTORY*

Persecution In Roman Empire	Period of Patriarchs	United Kingdom	Divided Kingdoms	Papal Captivity	Preparation for 3rd Adam
400	400	120	400	210	400

## *PARALLELS OF HISTORY*

Adam	Noah	United Generations Abraham Isaac Jacob	Divided Brothers	Jacob's Exile and Return	Preparation For Egypt
1600	400	120	40	21	40
Persecution In Egypt	Period of Judges	United Kingdom	Divided Kingdoms North & South	Jewish Exile and Return	Preparation for the Messiah
Jacob Moses		Saul David Solomon		Malachi	Jesus
400	400	120	400	210	400
Persecution In Roman Empire	Period of Patriarchs	United Kingdom	Divided Kingdoms East & West	Papal Exile and Return	Preparation for Second Messiah
Jesus Theodocius		Charlemagne Son Grandsons		Luther	Sun Myung Moon
400	400	120	400	210	400

## LAST DAYS — END TIMES

Many Christians believe that in the Last Days or End Times various and radical changes beyond our imagination will occur, as some biblical verses literally say. But the *Bible* is speaking to us in symbols.

The end of the world is the moment in history when God ends this history of evil and begins His new age. It is the crossroads of the old history of evil and the new history of good.

In light of this definition, why does the Bible predict extraordinary heavenly phenomena as signs of the end of the world? Will the things predicted really occur? The Bible says: “Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.” (Matt. 24:29)

What does this mean? What are we to expect?

First of all, please rest assured that these things will not happen literally. God will not destroy anything in the universe. God often expresses His truth in symbols and parables, and these biblical sayings will be accomplished symbolically. Second, God has no reason to destroy the universe. It is not the universe, but man and woman who have committed sin. Only we deviated from the original plan of God’s creation. Why should God destroy the animals, or the plants, or anything in creation which fulfilled His purpose as He intended? God would not destroy those innocent things.

I want you to understand that when we say “end of the world,” it does not mean the destruction of

the physical world, but the end of the old ways and beginning of a new human era. The Bible therefore says, “A generation goes, and a generation comes, but the earth remains forever.” (Eccl. 1:4) In *Revelation* we read: “Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away.” (Rev. 21:1) That new heaven and new earth refers to the coming of a new history of God, a time of new dominion. After you buy a house, won’t you move in your family and possessions? Then you will say that you have a new home, and you are the new master of the house. In the same way, when men of God occupy this universe, it will become a new heaven and a new earth. (10-28-73)

What does the *Bible* mean when it says that the earth will be destroyed when the Messiah comes? II Peter 3:10 says “and the elements will be dissolved with fire and the earth ... will be burned up.” But other passages in the *Bible* say the earth will not be destroyed: “A generation goes, and a generation comes, but the earth remains forever” (Eccl. 1:4).

If we take the *Bible* literally we have a contradiction. But the *Bible* is not contradictory. Therefore the *Bible* must be symbolic. The “earth” we read of in Ecclesiastes that will remain forever is the physical earth, the planet that we live on. We should read this passage literally.

The “earth” described in II Peter is symbolic for something else. Because earth or dirt is lowly, it is used to symbolize evil, falsehood and hell. Second Peter is prophesying that all the evils of Satan will be destroyed.

Second Peter also says the earth or evil will be destroyed by fire. Fire is also symbolic. James 3:6 says, “... the tongue is a fire.” Tongue means words of God. In Jeremiah 23:29 we read, “Is not my word like fire,” declares the Lord.” The Messiah will judge with words of truth. Malachi prophesied that when Jesus came the world



would burn up “like an oven ... all ... will be burned up...” (Malachi 4:1). Jesus said, “I came to cast a fire on earth; and would that it were already kindled” (Luke 12:49). Did Jesus burn anything up when he came? No. He judged with words, not fire.

## **JUDGMENT**

Then how can we know clearly the path of God? Let us examine the history of God’s providence. Today we are anticipating the end of the world. God has made previous attempts to end the evil world. For example, the time of Noah: That was a crossroads in history, when God wanted to bring an end to evil and begin the world of goodness. Noah was the central figure chosen in God’s dispensation. To better understand Noah’s mission and the meaning of the end of the world, we want to know more fully how the evil history began.

In the Garden of Eden, God gave Adam and Eve a commandment. That commandment was the word of God. Then Satan approached and enticed them with a lie. And that lie was the word of evil. Adam and Eve were in a position to choose between the two words: The truth was on one side, and a lie was on the other. They chose the lie.

Because this was the process of the fall, at the end of the world God will give humankind truth. The words of God will come through His prophet. When people accept the words of God they will then pass from death to life, because truth leads to life. Human beings died in a lie, and in truth we will be reborn.

Therefore judgment comes by words. These words of God’s judgment are revealed by His chosen prophets. This is the process of the ending

of the world. Those who obey and listen to the new word of truth shall have life. Those who deny the word will continue to live in death.

God chose Noah to declare the word. Noah's announcement was, "The flood is coming. The salvation is the ark." The people could have saved themselves by listening to Noah's words. However, the people treated Noah as if he were a crazy man, and they perished—because they opposed the word of God. According to the Bible, only the eight people of Noah's immediate family became passengers on the ark. Only these eight believed, and only these eight were saved.

God had said to Noah, "I have determined to make an end of all flesh; for the earth is filled with violence through them; behold. I will destroy them with the earth." (Gen. 6:13) Did this actually happen? We know the evil people perished but was the physical world demolished in the process? No. This passage was not literally fulfilled, and God did not destroy the earth. God did eradicate the people and abolish evil sovereignty, leaving only the good people of Noah's family. This was God's way to begin to restore the original world of goodness through Noah.

If God had fully consummated His restoration at that time, then we would have heard no more about the end of the world. Once the perfect world of goodness is realized, another end of the world is not necessary. Nothing could interfere with the eternal reign of God's perfect kingdom.

But the very fact that we anticipate the end of the world today is proof that the providence did not thus succeed at the time of Noah. What happened

to Noah after the flood should be fully explained, but I cannot spend too much time on that subject tonight. To make a long story short, once again, sin crept into Noah's family through his son, Ham. God's flood judgment was thereby nullified, and evil human history continued, leading to the time of Jesus Christ.

With the coming of Christ, God again attempted to end the world. Jesus came to start the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Thus, the first words Jesus spoke were, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." Indeed, the time of Jesus Christ's ministry was the time for the end of the world. That great and terrible day was prophesied by Malachi, about 400 years before the birth of Jesus: "For behold, the day comes, burning like an oven, when all the arrogant and all evil-doers will be stubble; the day that comes shall burn them up, says the Lord of hosts, so that it will leave them neither root nor branch." (Mal. 4: 1)

Was the judgment of Jesus Christ done by literal fire? Did the day come at the time of Jesus when everything literally turned to ashes? No, we know it did not. Since these things prophesied did not literally happen at that time, some people say that such prophecy must have been meant for the time of the Second Advent. But this cannot be the case.

John the Baptist came to the world as the last prophet; Jesus said: ". . . all the prophets and the law prophesied until John." (Matt. 11: 13) The coming of John the Baptist should have brought to a close prophecy and the Mosaic Law. This is what Jesus said would happen. The purpose of all prophecy before Jesus was to prepare for his coming, and to indicate what was to be fulfilled up to the time of his coming. These prophecies are not for the time of the Lord at the second

advent. God sent His son Jesus into the world, intending full salvation of spirit and flesh to be accomplished. The second coming was made necessary only by lack of consummation at the time of the first coming.

Why then was the time of Jesus the time for the end of the world? We already know the answer. It is because Jesus came to end evil sovereignty and bring forth God's sovereignty upon the earth. This was the end of the Old Testament Age and the beginning of the age of the New Testament. Jesus brought the new words of truth.

How did the people receive the gospel which he brought? They did not receive and honor his teachings. They were prisoners to the letter of the Old Testament and could not perceive the presence of the spirit of God in the new revelation. It is ironic that Jesus fell victim to the very prophecies that were to testify to him as the Son of God. By the letter of the Mosaic Law he was judged an offender. Blindly his teachings and love were rejected.

### **NEW COMMANDMENT OF GOD**

At the time of Jesus many learned people, many religious leaders and many people prominent in society who were well-versed in the Law and the Prophets were waiting for a Messiah. How happy they would have been to have their Messiah recite the Old Testament exactly, syllable by syllable and word by word! But Jesus Christ did not come to repeat the Mosaic Law. He came to pronounce a new commandment of God. People missed the whole point. And Jesus was accused. His opponents said to him, "We stone you for no good work, but for blasphemy; because you, being a man, make yourself God." (John 10:33)

The Bible states: “And they reviled him [one of Jesus’ disciples], saying, ‘You are his disciple, but we are disciples of Moses. We know that God has spoken to Moses, but as for this man, we do not know where he comes from.’” (John 9:28-29) This was the way people looked at Jesus. Many who diligently obeyed the letter of the Mosaic Law disobeyed Jesus Christ. The most devout of the religious leaders were the first ones to be judged by Jesus’ words and resurrection.

### **JUDGMENT BY FIRE**

Now at this time I would like to clarify the meaning of “judgment by fire.” We read in the New Testament: “...the heavens will be kindled and dissolved, and the elements will melt with fire!” (11 Peter 3:12) How can this fantastic prophecy come true? Will it happen literally? No. The statement has symbolic meaning. God would not destroy His earth, His stars and all creation without realizing His ideal on earth. If He did so, then God would become the God of defeat. And who would be His conqueror? It would be Satan. This can never happen to God.

Even on our human level, once we determine to do something, we see it through to its completion. How much more so will God almighty accomplish His will. When God speaks of judgment by fire in the Bible, He does not mean he will bring judgment by literal flames. The significant meaning is a symbolic one.

Let us now consider another Biblical passage which speaks of fire. Jesus proclaimed, “I came to cast fire upon the earth; and would that it were already kindled!” (Luke 12:49) Did Jesus throw literal, blazing fire about? Of course not.

The fire in the Bible is symbolic. It stands for the word of God. This is why James 3:6 states, “the tongue is a fire” The tongue speaks the word, and the word is from God.

Jesus himself said, “He who rejects me and does not receive my sayings has a judge; the word that I have spoken will be his judge on the last day.” (John 12:48)

In contemporary society, the word of the court executes judgment. The word is the law. In this universe, God is in the position of judge. Jesus came as the advocate with authority to oppose Satan, the prosecutor of human beings. Satan accuses us with his words, but these are false charges. Jesus champions the cause of believers, and his standard is the word of truth. God pronounces the sentence: His love is the standard, and love is His word. There is no difference between the earthly court and the heavenly court, in that both conduct their trials by words, not by fire.

So the world will not be burned up by literal fire when it is judged. The Bible states “the Lord Jesus will slay him [the evil one] with the breath of his mouth . . .” (II Thess. 2:8). The word of God is the breath of his mouth. Jesus came to slay the wicked by the word of God, and “. . . he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips he shall slay the wicked.” (Is. 11:4) What then is the “rod of his mouth?” We take this symbol to mean his tongue — through which he speaks the Word of God.

Let’s resolve this point completely. Look to where Jesus was instructing the people: “Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears my word and

believes him who sent me, has eternal life; he does not come into judgment, but has passed from death to life.” (John 5:24) We pass from death to life through words of truth. God will not send you the Messiah to burn you up. He will not send you the Messiah to set your houses afire or destroy your society. But if we reject the Word of God spoken by the Lord, we leave no choice open except to be condemned by judgment. Here is the reason why.

In the beginning God created human beings and the universe by His Word—the logos. Man and woman denied the Word of God and fell. Spiritual death has reigned ever since. Through His salvation work, God has been recreating us. We fell by disobedience to God’s Word, and we shall be recreated by obedience to the same Word of God. The Word of God is given by the Lord. Accepting the Word brings life out of death. Such death is the hell in which we live. Thus the Word of God is the judge, and it will bring upon you a far more profound effect than the hottest flames. (*God’s Warning to the World*)

## **NO FIERY HELL**

Christianity has also mistakenly interpreted the *Bible* to mean that in the Last Days only Christians would go to heaven and the rest of mankind, the pagans, will go to hell. Some Christians teach that while those in hell are being tormented forever, those who are in heaven will gradually forget those who are screaming forever in pain in hell. To the question, “How could I be happy in heaven, knowing that some of my loved ones may not be there with me?” Billy Graham speaks for many Christians when he says at his website (billygraham.org), “Many people have wondered how those in heaven could ever be truly happy, especially with the knowledge that unsaved loved ones were in hell.” He says Christians in heaven will never feel “sorrow” but he doesn’t know how they can be so happy when their loved ones and countless others are suffering

forever in hell. He says, “We do not know the full answer.” The *Divine Principle* gives the full answer.

Many Christians believe that the majority of mankind will be tortured in a fiery hell. The classic statement of this belief is Jonathan Edward’s “Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God.” He preached that many people are damned forever to a “fiery pit” because they deserved it for being incorrigible. It is “Divine justice” for wicked sinners to experience eternal conscious punishment. He said, “O sinner! Consider the fearful danger you are in: it is a great furnace of wrath, a wide and bottomless pit, full of the fire of wrath ... flames of divine wrath ‘the fierceness and wrath of God’ the fury of God! the fierceness of Jehovah! Oh, how dreadful that must be!

“...you must suffer it to all eternity. There will be no end to this exquisite horrible misery. When you look forward, you shall see a long forever, a boundless duration before you, which will swallow up your thoughts, and amaze your soul; and you will absolutely despair of ever having any deliverance, any end, any mitigation, any rest at all. You will know certainly that you must wear out long ages, millions of millions of ages, in wrestling and conflicting with this almighty merciless vengeance.”

There are many Christians who couldn’t imagine such a place anymore than they could imagine themselves torturing their worst enemy by burning them. It is barbaric, cruel, and sadistic. There are also many Christians who are not confident about what the *Bible* says. Billy Graham was the most famous evangelist of the 20th century. He said, “I’m not sure about literal fire” (*Time* 9/15/93). Sun Myung Moon confidently teaches there is no literal fire.

Second Peter 3:9 says, “The Lord is not slow about his promise as some count slowness, but is forbearing toward you, not wishing that any should perish, but that all should reach repentance.”

This gruesome idea that most of mankind will roast eternally in a fiery hell along with other incorrect views of God has kept most of the world from accepting Jesus. Most people simply cannot believe that if “God is love” (I John 4:8) He could never allow people to be



tormented forever. And they are correct. An eternal God of goodness cannot exist eternally with an eternal chamber of horrors.

In the Parable of the Lost Sheep Jesus taught that God loves every human being and will not rest until each and every person is found and restored home to him. When Jesus said there was a hell where there is eternal fire he meant not that people would go there but that evil would be banished by the fire of truth forever and never enter the earth again. What kind of god would allow for some of his children to literally be punished in a fire for eternity? God is a God of forgiveness. Jesus said forgive not just seven times but seven times seventy. It does not matter how horrible a crime or crimes any individual makes. He or she will ultimately be restored and live in the Kingdom of Heaven. Evil and suffering cannot exist forever or else God is not a God of love and almighty.

It is not true justice to condemn anyone to eternal punishment for crimes committed in 70 or so years on earth—no matter how terrible the crimes. Man will ultimately repent and come back to God, and God will embrace everyone. God will forgive all mankind and every person will forgive all those who trespassed against him. We are fallen and underestimate the love of God.

When Jesus said, for example, in Matt. 5:22 that there is a “hell of fire” and in Mark 9:45: “And if your foot causes you to sin, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life lame than with two feet to be thrown into hell”, he was not speaking of people being roasted eternally in some fiery torture chamber anymore than he was advocating people to cut off their feet. The word “hell” in these and other quotes is translated from the Hebrew word Gehenna. Many *Bibles* even give a footnote explaining this. What is Gehenna? In the Hebrew Scriptures, Gehenna is “the valley of Hinnom.” Hinnom was the name of the valley just outside the walls of Jerusalem where the ancient Israelites had at one time sacrificed their children in fire. Second Kings 23:10 tells of King Josiah ending this horrible practice and Gehenna became a huge garbage dump. During the time of Jesus Gehenna was still Jerusalem’s garbage dump. Fires were kept burning there and brimstone (sulfur) was used to burn the garbage.

When Jesus spoke of the city's garbage dump they knew he meant evil will be destroyed, not people. God had stopped the burning of people alive long ago. Evil people are not to be literally burned but evil itself will be destroyed eternally. Even Satan will not be tormented. We must read Rev. 20:10 symbolically, not literally. Satan will be restored but all evil will be destroyed forever; falsehood will stand in the judgment of truth forever: "... and the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet were, and they will be tormented day and night for ever and ever."

Christians are a minority in the world. How can they be admired when they think they are special people of God who have the privilege to live forever in heaven while the rest of mankind is doomed to eternal hell? Many Christians believe that Jesus is coming again to lift them up in the air and leave the rest of the world to be consumed in fire on that judgment day. How can the majority of mankind respect people like that? Every person, including Satan and his angels will eventually be restored and live eternally in the Kingdom of Heaven. John 3:16 says, "For God so loved the world that he gave his only Son." God loves the whole world, and God will not rest until everyone is restored.

### **HUMAN HISTORY HAS A GOAL**

After a lifetime of study the historians Will and Ariel Durant wrote a book called *The Lessons of History*. They came to some very wrong conclusions about God and the direction of history. They write, "Does history support a belief in God? If by God we mean not the creative vitality of nature but a supreme being intelligent and benevolent, the answer must be a reluctant negative." They conclude, "If history supports any theology this would be ... dualism ... a good spirit and an evil spirit battling for control of the universe and men's souls." They say Christianity assures its "followers that the good spirit would win in the end." But the Durants say that may not happen because "the universe has no prejudice in favor of Christ or against Genghis Khan." We have learned in the *Divine Principle* that this view is what Satan wants us to believe: that there is no hope for an ideal world, and we are doomed to an eternity of war. But God exists. He will never give up. Those who don't know the *Principle* do not know who God is. Many imagine God sitting on a

glorious throne enjoying life. In the *Bible* we read of God's sorrow and frustration over mankind's rebelliousness (Gen. 6:6, I Sam. 15:11, Isa. 1:2-4).

The truth is that God agonizes over our situation day and night, year after year, century after century. He is determined to win back this world, and He will. Even we desire to see things through to completion once we decide to do something. God is far more determined. We read of God's absolute determination to achieve His goal in Isaiah 46:11 when God says, "I have spoken, and I will bring it to pass; I have planned, and I will do it."

The history of mankind has been a battle between God and Satan. God will ultimately win. History will ultimately favor Christ, not Genghis Khan or Communism or any other evil. The world is not going to continue to be a dualistic nightmare. We can have hope of an ideal world.

### **LAST DAYS — THE 20th CENTURY**

The time of the coming of the Messiah is called the Last Days. It doesn't mean the last days of the earth, but the last days of evil. Mankind is basically good, but has inherited sin and ignorance of the spirit world, so mankind is influenced both by Satan and God.

There is more suffering in the Last Days than at any time. It is an intense time of turmoil and confusion. The following are some aspects of the Last Days:

### **WARS, FAMINES, EARTHQUAKES**

1. "And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars" (Matt. 24:6). The wars of the 20th century have been more widespread, devastating and frequent than any time in history. In Matt. 24:7 we read, "There will be famines and earthquakes in various places." There have been many famines and earthquakes in the 20th century. For decades leading up to the year 2000 over 40,000 children died every day of hunger and disease. The weather has been dramatic in devastation with floods, tornadoes, hurricanes and earthquakes.

## **HEDONISM**

2. The Last Days will be a time of secular selfishness, pleasure seeking and rebellion: “You must understand this, that in the last days distressing times will come. For people will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, arrogant, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, inhuman, implacable, slanderers, profligates, brutes, haters of good, treacherous, reckless, swollen with conceit, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God” (Second Timothy 3:1-4). Aren’t most people lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God?

Matthew 24:37-38 says it will be like the time of Noah when people were not very spiritual and centered on the flesh: “For as the days of Noah were, so also will be the coming of the Son of Man. For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking....” Most people are addicted to sugar, seed oils and highly processed junk food which has caused so much chronic disease.

## **PEACE MOVEMENTS**

3. There will be a naïveté to evil by many who will advocate peace, without understanding that we cannot negotiate and coexist with evil. “When they say, ‘There is peace and safety,’ then sudden destruction will come upon them, as labor pains come upon a pregnant woman, and there will be no escape!” (I Thess. 5:3). A perfect example of this is Chamberlain’s sincere but naive act of flying to Munich and signing a worthless piece of paper with Hitler in 1938. A year later there was war. The peace marchers and nuclear freeze movement are naive and unwittingly encouraging the evil nations of this world.

Father Moon teaches, “The current nuclear freeze movement here in America and Europe has an extremely naive way of thinking; they have no understanding of the true nature of communism. Satan always attacks as soon as he sees that the enemy is weakened.

“The *Divine Principle* is not only traditional it is also logical and scientific. There can never be perfection when ignorance exists; ignorance only breeds more ignorance, mistakes, and darkness. The Unification Church is not bringing more ignorance to the world; it

is bringing the truth, with a 20th century scientific viewpoint to back it up.” (11-5-83) “Today, people cannot believe anything unless it is logical. God is truth, and truth is logical. There can be no perfection in ignorance. ... Christian prayer alone could not lift Neil Armstrong to the moon. Scientific truth was necessary. I myself was once a student of science, and I know that God is also the God of science. God’s message has to be scientific, logical, and convincing to men of the 20<sup>th</sup> century.” (9-18-74)

## **WORLD GOVERNMENT**

There are many Christians who believe that God does not want a unified world. Christians look only to the afterlife as being a place where Christians will live happily ever after and they will forget the billions of people who are doomed to hell. It is a serious flaw in Christian theology that sees any attempt to world unity as satanic. Arnold Toynbee often spoke of the world moving to unity. He said, “Living together as a single family is the only future mankind can have now that Western technology has simultaneously annihilated distance and invented the atomic bomb ... the alternative to the destruction of the human race is a worldwide fusion of all the tribes, nations, civilizations, and religions of man.” Billy Graham and other Christian leaders do not know that the Messiah comes to unify mankind on earth.

## **ONE RELIGION**

God is guiding the world to unity. Arnold Toynbee is the most famous historian of the 20th century. He found 28 cultural spheres in history. God has worked to decrease that number and now there are four: Judea-Christianity, Islam, Hinduism and Buddhism. The Messiah comes on the foundation of Christianity but will unite all religions into God’s family where there is one religion. Toynbee predicted there would be world unification under one government brought about by a new religion. He wrote that a nation from the Far East would be the unifier of mankind.

## **FALSE PROPHETS**

4. One indication of telling when the Third Adam would be born is that there will be a number of men saying they are the savior of the world: “... what will be the sign of your coming and the end of the age?” Jesus answered them, ‘Beware that no one leads you astray.

For many will come in my name, saying ‘I am the Messiah!’ and they will lead many astray” (Matt. 24:3-5). Satan causes disunity. Efforts at bringing unification are of God if they are peaceful. The Communist and Socialist dream of world unity is based on force. That is evil. The Messiah wants unity based on peaceful, nonviolent, democratic means.

The Last Days will be a time of much spiritual phenomena and awakening. There will be spiritual longing as well as a decline in conventional religion. The 20th and 21st centuries is that time predicted in Acts 2:17 where it says, “And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams.” This explains why there are so much spiritual phenomena today.

Jesus said: “And many false prophets will arise and lead many astray” (Matt. 24:11). We see a multitude of gurus in the 20th century who claim to have the truth. These men who receive the revelation saying, “You are the Lord” are not aware that they are hearing not that they are the Lord of the Second Advent, but they along with everyone are to be lords of creation when they reach perfection. These men are partially spiritually open but because they have not reached perfection their communication and understanding of God is limited. These people communicate at different levels of spirit world according to their different spiritual development, intellect, environment, etc.

The Lord of the Second Advent will have total understanding of God’s heart and will. He will lead a true life and be able to answer the fundamental questions of life. The center of God’s providence is Judeo-Christianity, and he must come on that foundation.

Christianity is divided in different denominations—differing in doctrine and practices. Because Christians interpret the *Bible* differently, the Messiah comes to clarify the *Bible* through revelations from God so that Christianity can be united into a higher dimension. God is beyond denominationalism. The Messiah will

teach Christianity to transcend its differences and ascend to a higher level. The Messiah must first bring unity to world Christianity.

### **ANTICHRIST**

5. Sun Myung Moon speaks about the meaning of antichrist. He reveals one of the reasons “why Jesus was not accepted as the Messiah” is because:

... Two thousand years ago the people expected the Son of God to come on the clouds of heaven, according to the prophecy of Daniel:

*‘I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man’  
(Dan. 7:13)*

But Jesus Christ did not appear miraculously on the clouds of heaven.

He was born of a woman Mary, the wife of Joseph. The people said, “Well, how could this Jesus be the Son of God? He is a mere man, Just like you and me.” This was another overwhelming reason why the people rejected Jesus.

Some might object that Daniel’s prophecy was not intended for the first coming of Jesus Christ, but rather for the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent. But I say this is not the case, because Jesus testified that all the prophecies and the law given prior to John the Baptist were intended to be fulfilled in the time of Jesus Christ (Matt. 11:13).

So the prophecy of the coming of the Son of Man on the clouds of heaven was intended for the coming of Jesus Christ 2,000 years ago. In those days there was no New Testament, and the thought of the Second Coming of the Lord was not even in the mind of God.

This prophecy of Daniel posed much difficulty for the ministry of Jesus. For instance, we can see the apostle John warns in the New Testament,

*For many deceivers have gone out into the world, men who will not acknowledge the coming of the Jesus Christ in the flesh; such a one is the deceiver and the antichrist. (II John 7)*

This is what John was saying 2,000 years ago about those who disbelieved in Jesus Christ, rejecting him simply because he was a man in the flesh. They did not accept Jesus, but continued waiting for a supernatural appearance on the clouds. John condemned these people in the worst terms, saying, "such a one is the antichrist." (9-18-74)

“Unless we know the whole truth, we, like the people of Jesus’ time, may become victims of the words of the Bible.” (10-28-73)

## **RAPTURE**

Fundamental and Pentecostal Christians believe Jesus is coming on the clouds because they read the *Bible* quotes about clouds literally instead of symbolically. They believe in a concept they call “rapture” which says that on Judgment Day devout Christians will rise in the air with new transformed bodies to meet Jesus in the sky. Those who are alive will drift to heaven, and those who have died will come out of their graves, their physical body “instantly changed” and will rise also. This rising of the dead is called resurrection. After all Christians are safe with Jesus, those left on earth will be tortured in hell and the earth will be destroyed. This is the belief of children who see God as Daddy who will come and whisk them away to a safe home. God has never worked in such superstitious, supernatural ways. God is logical and rational. God is for responsibility within freedom. He does not perform magic tricks.

Some Christians misread the following quotes: “They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great



glory” (Matt.24:30); “Look, he is coming with the clouds” (Rev. 1:7); “For the Lord himself, with a cry of command, with the archangel’s call and with the sound of God’s trumpet, will descend from heaven, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive, who are left, will be caught up in the clouds together with them to meet the Lord in the air” (1 Thess. 4:16-17).

## **ELIJAH**

At the time of Jesus, Elijah was to come on the clouds. Malachi prophesied, “Look, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of the Lord comes” (Malachi 4:5). God spoke through Malachi promising that Elijah would return prior to the Messiah. Everyone in Israel was waiting, but Elijah did not return on the clouds. Jesus said John the Baptist was Elijah. Elijah’s mission returned, not Elijah himself. Likewise, Jesus’ mission will return, not Jesus himself.

## **BOOK OF DANIEL**

Many Israelites sincerely believed the Messiah would come dramatically on the clouds because of a passage in the Book of Daniel: “I saw in the night visions, and behold with the clouds of heaven there came one like a human being ... To him was given dominion and glory and kingship, that all peoples, nations and languages should serve him” (Dan. 7:13-14).

Luke 17:20 reads, “Being asked by the Pharisees when the Kingdom of God was coming Jesus answered them, ‘The kingdom of God is not coming with signs that can be observed.’” There will be no visible signs, Jesus says, such as clouds and trumpets.

In Acts 1:11 angels warned that Christ will not return on the clouds and it is no use looking up into the sky when they said to the disciples, “Men of Galilee, why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.” Sky and heaven are two different things.

## **CLOUDS AND WATER ARE SYMBOLIC**

Rev. 17:15 says, “The waters that you saw, where the whore is

seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues.” Water is a symbol for impure fallen mankind. Clouds are vaporized water. Water on earth is impure, but when it is evaporated or distilled it is pure. Therefore, impure man or water when made pure becomes clouds or pure people. We will see the Messiah, the *Bible* says, because he will be surrounded by disciples.

### **CLOUD OF WITNESSES – FOLLOWERS OF CHRIST**

This is what the *Bible* means when it says a “cloud of witnesses” (Heb. 12:1). The Messiah will first gain a few followers; then many will come. After there are thousands of disciples witnessing for the Messiah the whole world will begin to see him. These people are the members of the Unification Movement. The Second Coming of Christ means the second coming of the cloud of witnesses. The Unification Movement is the second coming of Jesus’ disciples. The generation alive at the time of the Second Advent is the second coming of the generation alive at the time of Jesus. The ministers, pastors and priests at the time of the Second Coming of Christ will be the second coming of the religious leaders of Israel who had to deal with Jesus. God is hoping that everyone is smart enough to not make the mistakes of those at Jesus’ time and accept the new Messiah when he comes to them. “Christians today are still a minority in the world. Are they respected by the rest of the population? Christians have become arrogant, feeling that they are especially privileged people of God and the rest of the world is doomed to die. Many Christians believe that when Jesus comes again they will be lifted up to meet the Lord in the air while the rest of the world is consumed in the fire of judgment. How can the rest of the world admire people like that?” (3-6-77)

### **THIEF IN THE NIGHT**

First Thessalonians 5:2 says, “... the day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night.” To enter as a thief has been interpreted that he will come out of the clouds unexpectedly. But the true interpretation is that he will come not only unexpectedly, but like any successful thief, he will come quietly, not dramatically. Jesus came quietly into the world like a thief in the night. So will the Third Adam. Jesus’ coming was quiet and unexpected.

Jesus compares the Second Coming of the Messiah to the time of Noah when everyone is living their individualistic lives not thinking of God or very little about God until it is too late: “As were the days of Noah, so will be the coming of the Son of man. For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day when Noah entered the ark, and they did not know... So will be the coming of the Son of man” (Matt. 24:37-39). The Second Coming will be as unexpected as Jesus’.

When will Christ return? Jesus said, “But of that day and hour no one knows...” (Matt. 24:36). But it also says in that same verse that God does know. And we read in (Amos 3:7), “surely the Lord God does nothing, without revealing his secret to his servants the prophets.”

There are many examples in history of God revealing his plans. God revealed to Noah the flood judgment and Lot the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. At the time of the Second Coming of the Lord, God will speak to a few prepared people.

The *Bible* also says that the Lord would not come like a thief to those who were spiritually “awake” (I Thess. 5:6). These few people will be alert and open to the new Messiah’s message while the rest of the world is spiritually asleep and living in the darkness of ignorance.

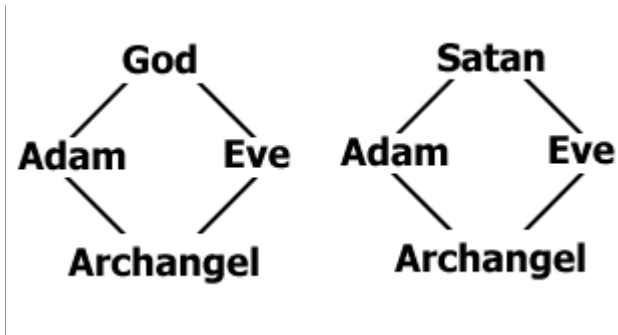
The Third Adam will return and like Jesus will be born of a woman and grow up in a humble setting. When he begins his ministry only a few prepared people will see him. As the number of these disciples grows it will eventually become a cloud of witnesses who will witness for the Lord and then mankind will see the Messiah.

## **WORLD WAR I**

The 400-year preparation for the Messiah began in 1517 and ended in 1917. The world in 1917 was divided between the nations on God’s side and those on Satan’s side. The three beings in the Garden of Eden were Adam, Eve and the Archangel. In World War I there were three nations who were in those positions representing God and three nations in those positions representing Satan. Those on

the side of Satan were Cain nations and those on God's side were the Abel nations.

World War I was a world-wide separation of good and evil, of Cain and Abel. God's nations were America in the Adam position, England in the Eve position, and France in the Archangel position. Satan's nations were Germany, Austria-Hungary and Turkey.



The World Wars have three good nations and three evil nations fighting each other and this is referred to in the book of Revelation which speaks of evil coming in threes: "... three foul spirits... demonic spirits... who go abroad to the kings of the whole world, to assemble them for battle on the great day of God the Almighty" (Rev. 16:13-14). Revelation also says that the side of good must be

alert and persevering against these great evils: “Blessed is he who is awake” (Rev. 16:15); “Be zealous and repent” (Rev. 3:19); “Here is a call for the endurance of the saints” (Rev. 14:12).

World War I was inevitable as worldwide payment for the first Adam. World War I was an indemnity payment for Adam in the Garden of Eden. It was total confusion in the Garden of Eden, and there was total confusion during World War I. The Kaiser was related to the royalty of England. No one felt the war would last long. Everyone was incredibly immature and naive just as Adam was in the Garden of Eden.

One book said this of the Kaiser at the time Hitler was starting World War II: “he had always had a very personal, almost childish, conception of God and he now turned to his *Bible* more frequently than ever in order to discover an explanation for the new punishment that seemed to be awaiting mankind.... He possessed neither the intellect nor the character to shoulder the burden thrust upon him. ‘It was not his fault,’ wrote Winston Churchill, ‘it was his fate.’ Alas, it was the fate of all of us, for the Kaiser set in motion a chain of events ... that drove the whole world to war.”

A biographer wrote, “scholars now believe that whatever the failings of the Kaiser he had not, as was commonly supposed, planned or even desired a big war only a little war! No longer was he an evil or cruel despot, but just a blunderer.”

World War I was devastating just as the Fall was. It was a worldwide Cain and Abel fight. Millions of people died. The Allies won and this paid an indemnity payment to restore Lucifer dominating Adam, and it laid the foundation for the world to receive the Third Adam. There was enough goodness and sacrificial spirit on God’s side that God could send the Messiah.

## **NEW NAME**

Revelation 12:5 says the Messiah will be born on earth: “She brought forth a male child, one who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron.” And in Revelation 3:12 Jesus says the returning Christ will have a new name, “He who conquers... I will write on him the

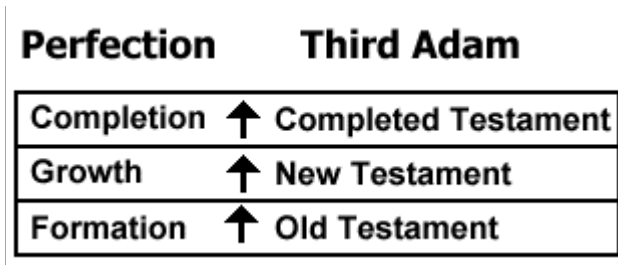
name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, and the new Jerusalem, which comes down from my God out of heaven, and my own new name.” In Revelation 2:17 Jesus says this about his successor: “I will give him a white stone, with a new name written on the stone which no one knows except him who receives it.”

**1920 — BIRTH OF THE MESSIAH**

World War I lasted from 1914 to 1918. The Abel nations, the Allies, were victorious over the Central Powers. Abel subjugated Cain. The Treaty of Versailles was signed in 1919 and the foundation for the Messiah was laid on a worldwide level. On February 25, 1920 (lunar calendar January 6, 1920) the third Adam was born. With him came God’s ideology the *Divine Principle*.

**COMPLETED TESTAMENT**

Christianity is wrong in saying it is heresy that another man will assume Jesus’ mission. Christianity is now fulfilled in the Third Adam who brings God’s truth, the *Divine Principle*, the Completed Testament.



We must understand and remember that Jesus told the Israelites not to read the Old Testament as the letter of the law but in the spirit of the Law. Christians are now asked to read the New Testament the same way.

In the Garden of Eden Lucifer struck a death blow to Adam. Then Cain struck his brother. Throughout human history evil has constantly struck and good has had to defend itself, but usually losing against evil. Now it is God’s turn to win the final battle. Three years before the Messiah was born Satan struck mankind with his

ideology of atheistic Communism in 1917. Satan always invades first. Three years later, in 1920, the Messiah was born. The number three is God's number of perfection and the three years from 1917 to 1920 represent a separation from Satan. The Third and final Adam will be successful. God has always succeeded on his third attempt.

It is not a coincidence that William Butler Yeats's poem "The Second Coming" was published in 1920.

### **PARABLE OF THE VINEYARD**

God worked the 2000 years since Jesus to prepare nations to be his champions. The Second Coming was not to be in Israel as many Christians think. Jesus was clear in saying another nation would become the chosen nation and Israel would lose its status. He says this in the Parable of the Vineyard: "There was a householder who planted a vineyard... and let it out to tenants.... When the season of fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the tenants, to get his fruit; and the tenants took his servants and beat one, killed another, and stoned another. Afterward he sent his son to them, saying, 'They will respect my son.' but when the tenants saw the son... they killed him. When therefore the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those tenants? They said to him, 'He will put those wretches to a miserable death, and let out the vineyard to other tenants who will give him the fruits in their seasons'" (Matt. 21:33-4). Jesus said to them, "Therefore I tell you, the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a nation producing the fruits of it" (Matt. 21:43).

The householder is God, the vineyard is Israel, and the tenants were the prophets who were abused by the people. The son was Jesus who the Israelites killed. The other tenants would be a new nation. What nation is it? We read in the *Bible*, "Then I saw another angel ascend from the rising of the sun, with the seal of the living God" (Rev. 7:2). The rising of the sun means that the new nation will be from the Far East.

This nation must have the proper qualifications. Like Israel it must be a small religious nation that will have a history of domination so

as to understand God's suffering heart. It has to be a nation with a belief by some that the Messiah will come to its nation. That nation is Korea.

### **KOREA IS THE CHOSEN NATION**

The Korean people are peace loving. In their 4000-year history they have never invaded another country. Yet they have been dominated many times. Like the Israelites, they know the suffering of oppression, and they have many prophecies in their literature that the Messiah will come to them.

Korea's history is one of suffering and hardship. They have been molded into a people whose character makes them uniquely qualified to be the chosen people. They are a deeply religious people, a passionate people that accept all major religions; Islam, Confucianism, Buddhism and Christianity flourish there.

God is our parent who has a suffering heart, and God can only be met in deep suffering and pain. The Messiah and the chosen people are the pioneers who must know God's suffering heart. They must be a sensitive and emotional people. They must be tough and disciplined, able to endure the harsh standard of sacrifice and purity needed to overcome persecution. The Korean people have these characteristics. The Messiah was born in a small, obscure country in what is today North Korea. This is hardly the place anyone in the major powers of the world (such as America) would expect a savior to come. The Lord of the Second Advent comes from Korea as a true man: a physically strong manly, masculine, virile man. Korea "is shaped like a man's sexual organ." (11-11-2020)

Jesus was also born in a small and obscure country. It was hardly the sort of place anyone from the Emperor of Rome down to the very people of Israel would have expected to find a young man who would someday be seen as the savior of the world by hundreds of millions of people.



In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father writes:

There is deep meaning in the tragic history that the Korean people have experienced up to this point. Korea has suffered a great deal because it is destined to become the foundation from which world peace will emerge. Because it has endured suffering and difficulty for such a long time, Korea can now become the central nation from which God brings peace to the world. Even though Koreans have experienced countless hardships, we have never made anyone our enemy or hated anyone. Several of our neighbors have caused difficulty for us, but we have never made them our irreconcilable enemies.

The Korean people have developed a culture of heart that enables us to forgive our enemies. It takes mastery over oneself to love and accept an enemy. The ability to love ones enemy comes only after an individual is victorious over his own internal conflicts.

People who are persecuted are the closest to God. To understand God's heart, one must experience His tearful heart. Even a person who normally would not shed tears will do so if he loses his family and his country. He would desperately plead with God in tears. Suffering difficulties causes one to have a heart that sheds tears and cries, but it is through this type of heart that one can receive God's blessing. God comes to a heart that is soaked with tears. Korea has become a land of heavenly fortune because so many tears have been shed within the hearts of its people.

Korean people honor their ancestors. No matter how hungry we may be, we will never sell the land where our ancestors are buried in order to buy food. Historically we have maintained a way of thinking that respects Heaven. We are a

modern, civilized nation that still honors the world of the spirit. When we accepted Buddhism and Confucianism, they gave rise to a beautiful religious culture. More recently Christian and Muslim traditions have begun to thrive here as well. All these religions live without conflict within Korea. They blend together and coexist peacefully. What is it that has made us such a unique people?



The Korean flag is symbolic for God. “The flag consists of three parts: The white background, the red and blue circle in the center and four trigrams, one in each corner of the flag.”

“The red and blue circle in the center is called ‘Taeguk’, the origin of all things in the universe. The central thought is perfect harmony and balance: A continuous movement within the sphere of infinity, resulting in one unit. The blue part of ‘Taeguk’ is called ‘Yin’ and represents all negative aspects of the balance that is typical for the symbol. The red part is called ‘Yang’ and describes all positive aspects.”

The dual characteristics of God reflected in the world through the invisible mind and external body and the duality of masculine and feminine (i.e., of God being a parent) is represented by the red and

blue colors of the center circle. The upper red paisley represents the yang nature of masculinity; the lower blue paisley represents the yin nature of femininity. Red is on top symbolizing the vertical relationship between man and woman.

Red also symbolizes God's love and life. God created our blood red. Satan distorts this color. The communist Soviet Union's flag was red. There are "red light districts" of prostitution symbolizing the Fall.

The blue in the center circle symbolizes God's truth. These are the life elements God gives for us to grow spiritually.

"The four trigrams also indicate the duality of opposites and balance. In the upper left trigram, three unbroken lines symbolize Heaven; opposite them in the lower right, three broken lines represent Earth. In the upper right trigram, two broken lines separated by an unbroken line is the symbol of Fire; opposite them is water, symbolized by two unbroken lines separated by a broken line."

The black trigrams in each corner symbolize the four seasons and cardinal directions of north, south, east and west. The number four is also the symbol for the family unit of the four-position foundation. The circle symbolizes eternity, or God. The flag is white, symbolizing God's purity and peace.

## **CHOSEN**

The book of Revelation speaks of white robes. Because white was for centuries the primary color worn by Koreans, Korea was known as the "white-clad" people. The name of the capitol is Seoul. Korea's ancient name was Chosen.

## **KOREAN LANGUAGE**

The writing system Koreans use is called Hangul, which means "the Great Writing." King Sejong commissioned an academy called the College of Assembled Worthies to do phonological research. In 1443 they had completed the orthographical design of Han'gul. The king introduced Han'gul to the public on October 9, 1446 and the

Korean people observe this day as a national holiday under the name of Han'gul Day.

During the occupation of Korea, Satan used Japan as his means to eliminate Han'gul, which would be genocide to the chosen people's culture. The Korean people were forced to use Japanese as the only language. All older Koreans can speak fluent Japanese. When Korea was liberated in 1945, Han'gul Day was established as a national holiday. Koreans love Han'gul and are proud of it. Han'gul is easy to learn and therefore most people became literate and this democratized all walks of Korean life. It is the most scientific writing system in the world.

The ultimate unification of the world as one family will be when all mankind speaks Korean. There are good reasons why everyone should and will speak Korean. Even though English is the language for international commerce it is lacking in comparison with Korean. "There are no phrases of respect and value. Everyone is 'you,' whether they be high or low in society. In Korean, there are many different levels of address according to age and relationship. And no language can surpass Korean for detailed expressions of religious and spiritual terms." (2-17-91)

English is not the best language for conveying the spiritual element of life. The language is just not equipped to express things about the spiritual life as Korean is.

English can be a boring and tasteless language to study, but Korean has a profound taste in comparison, with a most intricate and beautiful way of saying things. It is true that the contents of Korean expressions are complicated, but that makes it sweet, so have trust in Korean based on my recommendation. (6-3-79).

The Korean language is the most advanced, descriptive and beautiful language ever known to humanity. Korean has so much variety in its sounds. I am not saying all this just because I am Korean. It is based on the *Principle*. (2-5-84)

The language barrier is one of the most difficult problems in the world. How can we solve this historical problem? We have to resolve it.

I think about who will be able to solve this problem. The power of science and technology cannot do it, neither can government power. The only power that can do it is religious power. You have to know that. Therefore, I am always saying to you, "We have to unify the language. We have to shatter the language barrier." Do you understand? (9-7-86)

What about language? It will be the biggest problem. The world's language is bound to be unified. Once we overcome that problem; once we learn a common language, then the racial and national differences will be no more. You will be able to live in any country, any place, anytime.

### **COMMON LANGUAGE**

What language will the world choose as a common language? It will be the language which is used in the country which has the higher, deeper thought, and higher and deeper religious theory and practice. That country will become the center of the world, and everyone will want to use that language. This is not a matter of coercion; no one is forcing this, saying, "should." No, this is a natural development. People will choose it. (11-1-90)

### **SCIENTIFIC AND SPIRITUAL**

You have to learn Korean. It is both a scientific and a spiritual language. For instance, hundreds of different adjectives in Korean may express the same concept, each one having a subtle variation in meaning. There are hundreds of different ways of expressing color.

Korean is the ideal language. God certainly had this in mind when He developed it and He is proud of it. (7-5-87)

This is my honest opinion and not just because I am Korean. The Korean language is the best for people to express deep feelings, especially between lovers, and for the expression of profound religious feelings. (10-4-83)

### **UNIFICATION OF LANGUAGE**

No matter what, the unification of the language has to take place. Only with *Divine Principle* and True Parents' guidance will this become possible. Otherwise there is no way to unify all the languages of this world. (5-3-96)

### **COMMON UNDERSTANDING**

Only the power of God can bring the world together under one language. The *Divine Principle* should be read in Korean by everyone in the world. In this way, a common understanding can emerge. People will never stop fighting each other until they have some kind of common understanding. Mankind is separated now because they speak different languages and have different understandings about life. How complicated this world is due to this situation.

### **GOD DESIRES ONE LANGUAGE**

Think about God. Every night people are praying to him in thousands of different languages. Actually, it's painful to His ears. That's true. It's very complicated for God to deal with. Someone is to "God", while another one is praying to "Kami", while yet another one is praying to "Allah". You have to restore one language for God's sake. Think about how miserable God is in this situation. You don't know how difficult it has been for me in America. It's the same situation with God and so I know how miserable God is. God desires one language, one heart, one common understanding between His children. That is why I am teaching this clearly to you. (8-85)

### 1935 — JESUS PASSES MISSION TO SUN MYUNG MOON

On Easter Sunday morning April 17, 1935 when Father was 15 years old Jesus came to him as he was deep in prayer on a hillside in the northern part of Korea. Jesus asked him to complete his mission of bringing unity to mankind. He explains what happened in his autobiography:

When I was sixteen, we experienced the tragedy of having five of my younger siblings die in a single year. No words could describe the heartbreak of our parents in losing five of their thirteen children in such a short time. Death seemed to spread. Other clan members lost their livestock. One home's cow suddenly died, though it had been in perfect health. At another home, several horses died, one after another. At a third home, seven pigs died in one night.

The suffering of one family seemed connected to the suffering of the nation and of the world. I was increasingly troubled to see the wretched situation of the Korean people under Japan's increasingly tyrannical rule. People didn't have enough to eat. They were sometimes forced to take grass, tree bark, and whatever else they could find, and boil these for food. There seemed to be no end to wars around the world. Then one day I read an article in a newspaper about the suicide of a middle-school student who was the same age as I.

"Why did he die?" I asked myself. "What would drive a person to kill himself at such a young age?" I was devastated by this news, as if it had happened to someone who had been close to me. With the newspaper open to that article, I wept aloud for three days and nights. The tears kept coming, and I couldn't make them stop.

I couldn't comprehend the series of strange events, or the fact that tragic events were happening to good people. Seeing the bones of my great-grandfather had inspired me to start asking questions about life and death, and the series of unusual events

in and around our home caused me to hang on to religion. The Word of God I was hearing in church, however, was not sufficient by itself to give me the clear answers I was seeking. To relieve the frustrations in my heart, I naturally began to immerse myself in prayer.

“Who am I? Where did I come from? What is the purpose of life? What happens to people when they die? Is there a world of the eternal soul? Does God really exist? Is God really all-powerful? If He is, why does He just stand by and watch the sorrows of the world? If God created this world, did He also create the suffering that is in the world? What will bring an end to Korea’s tragic occupation by Japan? What is the meaning of the suffering of the Korean people?

Why do human beings hate each other, fight, and start wars?” My heart was filled with these serious and fundamental questions. No one could easily answer them for me, so my only option was to pray. Prayer helped me to find solace. Whenever I laid out the anguishing problems in my heart to God, all my suffering and sorrow vanished and my heart felt at ease. I began spending more and more time in prayer, to the point that, eventually, I began praying through the night all the time. As a result, I had a rare and precious experience in which God answered my prayers. That day will always remain as the most cherished memory of my life—a day I can never forget.

It was the night before Easter in the year I turned sixteen. I was on Mount Myodu praying all night and begging God in tears for answers. Why had He created a world so filled with sorrow and despair? Why was the all-knowing and all-powerful God leaving the world in such pain? What should I do for my tragic homeland? I wept in tears as I asked these questions repeatedly.

Early Easter morning, after I had spent the entire night in prayer, Jesus appeared before me. He



appeared in an instant, like a gust of wind, and said to me, "God is in great sorrow because of the pain of humankind. You must take on a special mission on earth having to do with Heaven's work." That day, I saw clearly the sorrowful face of Jesus. I heard his voice clearly. The experience of witnessing the manifestation of Jesus caused my body to shake violently, like a quaking aspen's leaves trembling in a strong breeze. I was simultaneously overcome with fear so great I felt I might die and gratitude so profound I felt I might explode. Jesus spoke clearly about the work I would have to do. His words were extraordinary, having to do with saving humanity from its suffering and bringing joy to God. My initial response was, "I can't do this. How can I do this? Why would you even give me a mission of such paramount importance?" I was truly afraid. I wanted somehow to avoid this mission, and I clung to the hem of his clothing and wept inconsolably.

I was thrown into extreme confusion. I couldn't open my heart to my parents and share my huge secret with them. But neither could I just keep it to myself. I was at a loss over what to do. What was clear was that I had received a special mission from Heaven. It was such a huge and tremendous responsibility. I shuddered in fear to think that I might not be able to handle it on my own. I clung to prayer even more than before, in an attempt to quiet my confused heart. But even this had no effect. No matter how much I tried, I could not free myself for even a moment from the memory of having met Jesus. In an effort to quiet my heart and my tears, I composed the following poem:

### **Crown of Glory**

When I doubt people, I feel pain.

When I judge people, it is unbearable.

When I hate people, there is no value to my existence.

Yet if I believe, I am deceived. If I love, I am betrayed.  
Suffering and grieving tonight, my head in my hands,

Am I wrong?

Yes I am wrong.

Even though we are deceived, still believe. Though we  
are betrayed, still forgive.

Love completely, even those who hate you.

Wipe your tears away and welcome with a smile

Those who know nothing but deceit, And those who  
betray without regret. O, Master, the pain of loving.  
Look at my hands.

Place your hand on my chest.

My heart is bursting, such agony.

But when I love those who acted against me, I brought  
victory.

If you have done the same things,

I will give you the Crown of Glory.

My encounter with Jesus changed my life completely. His sorrowful expression was etched into my heart as if it had been branded there, and I could not think of anything else. From that day on, I immersed myself completely in the Word of God. At times, I was surrounded by endless darkness and filled with such pain that it was difficult to breathe. At other times, my heart was filled with joy, as though I were watching the morning sun rise above the horizon. I experienced a series of days like these that led me into a deeper and deeper world of prayer. I embraced new words of truth that Jesus was giving me directly and let myself be completely captivated by God. I began to live an entirely different life. I had many things to think about, and I gradually became a boy of few words.

Anyone who follows the path of God must pursue his goal with his whole heart and total dedication. It requires a steadfastness of purpose.

I am stubborn by birth, so I have always had plenty of tenacity. I used this God-given tenacity to overcome difficulties and follow the way that was given me. Anytime I began to waver, I steadied myself by remembering: "I received God's word directly." It was not easy to choose this course, because it would require me to sacrifice the rest of my youth. At times, I felt I would rather avoid the path.

A wise person will place hope in the future and continue to move forward, no matter how difficult it may be. A foolish person, on the other hand, will throw away his future for the sake of immediate happiness. I, too, at times held foolish thoughts when I was still very young, but in the end I chose the path of the wise person. I gladly offered up my life in order to pursue the way God desired. I could not have run away if I tried; this was the only way I could have chosen.

So why did God call me? Even now, at ninety years of age, I wonder every day why God called me. Of all the people in the world, why did He choose me? It wasn't because I had a particularly good appearance, or outstanding character, or deep conviction. I was just an unremarkable, stubborn, and foolish young boy. If God saw something in me, it must have been a sincere heart that sought Him with tears of love. Whatever the time or place, love is most important. God was searching for a person who would live with a heart of love and who, when faced with suffering, could cut off its effects with love. I was a boy in a rural village with nothing to show for myself. Even now, I insist uncompromisingly on sacrificing my life to live for God's love and nothing else.

There was nothing I could know on my own, so I took all my questions to God. I asked, "God, do You really exist?" and that was how I came to know that He did, in fact, exist. I asked, "God, do You have any cherished desires?" and this was how I came to know

that He, too, had cherished desires. I asked Him, "God, do You need me?" and this was how I discovered that He had use for me.

On those days when my prayers and dedication connected to Heaven, Jesus appeared to me without fail and conveyed special messages. If I was earnest in my desire to know something, Jesus would appear with a gentle expression and give me answers of truth. His words were always on the mark, and they struck deep into my bosom like sharp arrows. These were not mere words; they were revelations about the creation of the universe that opened the door to a new world. When Jesus spoke, it seemed like a soft breeze, but I took his words to heart and prayed with an earnestness strong enough to uproot a tree. Gradually, I came into a new realization about God's purpose in creating the universe and His principles of creation.

During the summer of that year, I went on a pilgrimage around the country. I had no money. I would go to homes and ask to be fed. If I was lucky, I caught a ride on a truck. This was how I visited every corner of the country. Everywhere I went, I saw that my homeland was a crucible of tears. There was no end to the sorrowful sighs of suffering from hungry people. Their woeful lamentations turned to tears that flowed like a river. "This wretched history must end as quickly as possible," I told myself. "Our people must not be left to suffer in sorrow and despair. Somehow, I need to find a way to go to Japan and to America so that I can let the world know the greatness of the Korean people." Through this pilgrimage, I was able to redouble my determination toward my future work.

As I clenched my two fists, my mind became totally focused, and I could see clearly the path I had to follow in my life: "I absolutely will save our people and bring God's peace on this earth." (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* by Sun Myung Moon)

For the next ten years he learned the *Divine Principle* from God, Jesus and many saints in the spirit world, and he fought terrible spiritual battles with Satan to discover the Fall: how evil came into the world. Only the pure Messiah can discover the root of evil and has the passion and strength to proclaim this truth to the world at the risk of his life.

He went to college in Japan and received a degree in electrical engineering in the 1940s. Sometimes he would go the lowest places and spend time with bums and even cut their hair for them. He talked to prostitutes and grieved for their painful life:

At times I would simply go live for a while in an area of Shinagawa where poor people lived. I slept with them, using rags for cover. On warm sunny days I picked lice from their hair and ate rice with them.

There were many prostitutes on the streets of Shinagawa. I would listen to them tell me about themselves, and I became their best friend without ever drinking a drop of liquor. Some people claim they need to be drunk in order to speak candidly about what is on their mind, but that is just an excuse. When these women realized that I was sincere in my sympathy for them, even without drinking any liquor, they opened their hearts to me and told me their troubles.” (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

One of the greatest mysteries of life is the meaning of the *Bible*. In his autobiography he says, “I would read the same passages in three languages [i.e., Korean, Japanese, and English] again and again. Each time I read a passage, I would underline verses and make notes in the margins until the pages of my Bibles became stained with black ink and difficult to read.” In Michael Breen’s *Sun Myung Moon: The Early Years* he quotes Father saying, “I have studied science. I am a very scientific person and I do not want any blind faith. I do not want the God of concept. I want the God of life, and God is life; life itself. That God I seek. The God who can govern life itself and who can be the real, true backbone of the world.” Breen writes:

If the human dilemma were purely intellectual, thinkers would have found the solution centuries ago. The problems, he found, were spiritual. It was as if the human spirit was diseased. To find the cure he would need to continue travelling the path of spiritual growth Jesus had traveled. He would have to become one with God. As Jesus said, "You, therefore, must be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect." This effort invited all manner of temptations and unanticipated struggle. In his prayers he battled with dark forces. At times great waves of black fear billowed through his soul.

He once tried to explain the experience of these years but could not find the words. "If you knew what it was like, your heart would stop," he said. Faith kept him going. "I knew that God was living. I knew that God had chosen me for this mission. Therefore, I believed that this was the only way for man to go, including myself. I couldn't quit."

Over the years, the inner search through the lives of the main actors in biblical history led him to empathize with them:

"When I came to the fall of Adam and Eve I felt as if it were my own business. I felt the sorrow of God to see Adam's fall. I felt Adam's sorrow in himself. In each event I put myself in the position of those involved and felt with them and with God, all through the history. It was not someone else's history, but my own life."

He saw that the life of God's people is one of suffering. That God's experience throughout human history has been one of grief, sharing the suffering of

his children. In the journey into the heart of God's experience, he too, found pain and loss. "I have shed so many tears. I not only understood the principle, but lived it."

As Moon read and re-read the Bible, praying and meditating on its contents, it seemed to him that the central events after Adam kept coming back to this story of Adam's family. The lives of Noah, Abraham and Jesus seemed to be an echo of Adam. Why? The first family, Adam's family was to be the model for God's purpose for creating man, but it became a model for failure. If God was still trying to save his children, and both the Christian teaching and personal spiritual experience convinced Moon that he was, then God would still be trying to achieve today what he had hoped to achieve with the first family. The emphasis on men in biblical history suggested that this process began with the man as God's providential focus.

It seemed He had been trying to find one true man, the Messiah. A man who knew the truth and lived by it, a true man with a God like personality who could overcome evil through unwavering faith and whose heart could become one with God's heart. Such a man would begin the process of bringing the world back to God. He would become the perfected Adam, the Tree of Life, the ancestral parent of humanity.

Breen writes that in 1945, after 10 years of searching for the truth after he first met Jesus in 1935, the young Messiah:

had to confront Lucifer the archangel, who he believed had caused the fall of Adam and Eve, before he could be satisfied with his interpretations of his revelations. He claims that during this experience, Lucifer accepted everything except the interpretation

of the fall of man. At this point, Moon took Lucifer before God. It was said that, at the time, God could not be seen, but that his voice could be heard. God manifested himself in the form of waves and mountains. God posed different explanations for the cause of man's fall. He asked whether the fall had occurred because of the fruit of a tree, because of freedom, because of illicit love, or because of something else. Moon said it was illicit love. Then came one of the most devastating experiences of all. God denied what he said and told him it was wrong. At that point, a spiritual force struck Moon so hard, he said, that if he had not been physically standing up at the time he might never have been able to get up. Convinced of the truth of his conclusions, he insisted and God denied him again. When Moon stated the cause a third time, God acknowledged it as the truth and the evil force fled from him. Lucifer admitted that it was the truth.

The test of rejection had been necessary. For Moon to not simply believe, but to become one with God and embody the principles he had discovered, and to teach others to follow the same path, required such monumental conviction and determination that he even had to argue his case with God. It also meant that he could not be accused by Satan of acting only on spiritual inspiration or impulse from God. Rather, he had searched this truth out himself, and felt it to his bones. But there may be a deeper explanation for this experience of rejection and abandonment that goes to the core of Moon's view of the broken heart of God. If God suffers from rejection by his children, as much as Moon claims, why should God then trust a man who claims he is different, that he is a child who sympathizes and cares? The suffering heart of God will demand that he prove it.



The young Messiah discovered the formula that unlocked its hidden secrets. This could not be done by going to a seminary but searching in spirit world. He grew in understanding of the truth that answers the fundamental questions of life and therefore would save this world from its ignorance. He fought spiritual battles alone and was constantly tempted by Satan. He said, "Several times Japanese women sneaked into my bed, but I never sinned with them."

How many young men in college have the discipline of purity Father had when he was in college? How many fathers teach their sons to be sexually pure? How many college presidents and professors teach by word and deed this standard?

Have the religious denominations and organizations been able to make college campuses a godly place of moral excellence or are colleges famous for drinking, free sex and parties? Christian churches on campuses have been ineffectual to stop the moral decay in colleges. The *Bible* is very clear about being centered on the mind instead of the flesh, but Christianity has lost power to guide young people and their parents. Father makes the Bible's teachings on purity and moral excellence come alive. Schools desperately need to teach Father's words.

"Do you think that Father would be seduced by beautiful Hollywood people or would he kick them away? (Kick them away.) What about all of you? Satan may utilize various tactics in order to seduce you. By observing True Father's life we can know that he is one hundred percent at one with his teachings. Father never falls into the satanic traps of this world, no matter what.

"Why do you suppose that Reverend Moon makes such a strong statement against American people rather than giving comforting words? Because it is Father's responsibility to use even his force to push them to follow in the right direction. A surgeon will cut open an infectious wound in order to heal the patient, even if it might be painful." (6-23-96)

Bo Hi Pak writes in his book *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon* (you can read the entire text at

www.Tparents.org) that for 10 years Father “embarked on an arduous course to uncover the hidden truths of the universe:

The people around him during his remaining boyhood years and early manhood had no way of knowing about his spiritual pilgrimage. Outwardly, he may have seemed like an unremarkable, impoverished young man. Within his heart, though, a fire burned as hot as a blast furnace. Day after day, he battled Satan at the risk of his life and gradually was able to dig out the truth about the spiritual world and the true meaning of life. He also exposed the deepest secret in the cosmos—Adam and Eve’s, and Satan’s, original sin.

During these [ten] years, Reverend Moon traveled back and forth between the physical and spiritual worlds. He spoke with Buddha, Confucius, and Jesus. He visited innumerable good spirits, and he passed through harsh trials and tribulations from evil spirits.

This period was also a time for God to test Reverend Moon in myriad ways to see whether he was really qualified to stand as the central person for the salvation of humankind. The hardships and suffering that Reverend Moon experienced during this time will most likely remain secret for all time.

The truth was not given to Reverend Moon as a simple revelation. He had to fight Satan with blood, sweat and tears for each word. He had to rise above Satan’s accusations and finally receive God’s direct approval of what he had found. It was only after he had received God’s recognition that Reverend Moon began to teach the *Principle* to the world.

The following are some comments Father has made about how seriously he took his mission in his youth:

### **Fundamental Questions of Life**

From the time I was a boy, I started agonizing over the fundamental questions of life. Who am I? Where am I from? What is the purpose of life? Will our life somehow continue after death? Does God really exist? Is God omnipotent or not? If God is all-powerful, why is it He cannot solve the problems of the world? Why is there so much suffering in the world?

Looking back, I remember how serious I was. I was at the point of deciding what to do with the rest of my life. At that crossroad, I knew that it would not be determined by human forces, but came to the conclusion that I had to make my decision in accordance with God's Will. I vividly remember the agonizing moments before embarking upon my life of faith.

I had the most unusual experience when I was sixteen—fifteen by Western reckoning. After long hours of tearful prayer in the morning at Easter time, Jesus Christ came to me in spirit and gave me many revelations and teachings. He shared many profound and amazing truths, particularly that God is in agony over the suffering of humanity, and he asked me to take on a very special mission for God, on earth.

It is so hard to describe my experiences as a youth. The spirit world opened and I could freely communicate with the saints of that world. In the quiet hills of North Korea, I came to meet Jesus Christ and conversed with him. The content of our conversation became the essential teachings of the *Divine Principle*.

When you see Jesus spiritually, does he smile at you with a happy face? Have you met Jesus? I have never met Jesus in such a way. He always appeared to me

serious and sad. He has no choice. That is the only way he can feel because he knows God's situation so well. I am the same way, too.

I was much younger than you are when I set out on this course, younger than twenty, very simple and innocent. I desired to possess objects of beauty and was ever curious about new things in my village, often to the point of obsession. Yet, as soon as I embarked on the mission at that tender age, I found myself to be wanting in many ways to carry out such a great and serious mission. I painfully realized how grave was my responsibility and the need to have the requisite qualities inside and out.

I was a young man when starting out on this course. Whether or not I would actually fulfill the great responsibility of the mission Jesus entrusted to me was a serious problem. I knew, too well, how strongly people like Noah, Abraham and Moses had desired to fulfill their God given missions.

It was my experiences as a fifteen-year-old that led me to know God. Over the next [ten] years, following that initial encounter, I came to live continually in the presence of God and Jesus. I experienced the spirit world so many times. Gradually, God revealed to me the amazing truth. It was like passing through the darkest night and the sun was finally rising in the horizon. I could see the first streak of light of the glorious new culture. The revelation I received then is now called "The Principle." God told me that I must spread that *Principle* to the end of the earth.

In the prime of my youth, I used to pray up to seventeen to eighteen hours and not less than twelve, at a stretch, bent down and wailing. I usually skipped lunch. Otherwise, I could not have survived. All doors were closed and there was no way out. Only through such intense prayer, could I see the faintest ray of hope emanating from the smallest crack in heaven. Experiencing that kind of suffering and pain,

I came to acquire a firm grasp of the *Principle*.  
(*Theory of Education*)

He lived during a time when Korea was dominated by the Japanese. “Korea, in order to be the Adam country in God’s providence, had to be dominated by an Eve country and by overcoming the Eve country gain independence” (*Early Unification Church History Part I* by Nora Spurgin). The Japanese brutally tortured many Christians. They tried to obliterate their culture and language. During the 40 years of domination from 1905-1945 they changed the name of the country from Korea to its ancient name of Chosen. On old maps of Korea the name was not Korea, but Chosen. This was the chosen nation that was to protect and uplift the Messiah.

Father worked with those Christians who refused to worship the Japanese shrines. The previous chosen people, ancient Israel, also had been forced to worship the gods of their oppressors, the Greeks. Many of these Christians had revelations the Lord was coming to them. Some of these spiritualists had followers. The orthodox Christian ministers did not like what these spiritualists were saying about a Messiah being born in Korea and they were respected by many people.

“Under the rule of Japanese imperialism before the liberation of Korea, I was a leader of the underground movement centering on Christianity” (1-1-97). He was arrested by the Japanese police and tortured in different ways. They used electric shocks with voltage so high it nearly killed him. They hung him upside down from the ceiling by his ankles and forced water laced with red pepper through his nose and into his head. They brutally beat and kicked him, but after 60 days of torture he never revealed the names of any Christians in the underground movement and was finally released.

Father describes his torture this way:

Many times, I spit up blood through near-fatal experiences. However, I never gave my friends’ names under torture; I was loyal to and responsible for them. I risked my life for theirs. I

fought alone. I did not budge even under threat of death.

I did not talk even during the most dreadful torture—being hit by clubs. You must keep faith with your friends. Once you have made a promise, you must keep it to death. One night, after torture, I felt the most sorrowful ever, and knew that I would never forget that day.

I was beaten almost to death, covered with blood and bleeding profusely. They kicked my stomach with their jackboots. While two of them would hold me down, another two kicked and trod on me. Imagine the effect of that to my belly. Just trying to sit and stand up in the toilet was torment.

Because I was accused of saying that I was going to cut the Japanese emperor's throat, I was imprisoned and tortured. The most excruciating thing was to be kicked in the crotch with spiked leather boots. You will not know what pain is without such an experience.

Once after I had been interrogated and tortured for fourteen hours, I wasn't able to crawl even twenty meters. Nevertheless, I held out in faith to the end, enduring the pain while fainting repeatedly. (*Theory of Education*)

I still believe that to develop good character a person needs to experience many difficulties before turning thirty. People need to go down into the crucible of despair at the bottom of human existence and experience what that is like. People need to discover new possibilities in the midst of hell. It is only when climbing out of the depths of despair and making a new determination that we can be reborn as people able to pioneer a new future.

We should not look only in one direction. We should look at both those who are in a higher position and those lower. We should know to look east, west, south, and north. To live a successful life

depends on how well we see with our mind's eye. To see well with the mind's eye we must have many different experiences and remember them. Even in the most difficult situations we should maintain our composure, demonstrate warmth toward others, be self-reliant, and adapt well to any circumstance.

A person of good character must be accustomed to rising to a high position and then quickly falling to a low position. Most people are afraid of falling from a high position, so they do everything they can to preserve it. However, water that does not flow becomes stale. A person who rises to a high position

must be able to go back down and wait for the time to come again. When the opportunity comes, he can rise to an even higher position than before. This is the type of person who can acquire a greatness that is admired by many people and is a great leader. These are the experiences that a person should have before turning thirty.

Today I tell young people to experience everything they can in the world. They need to directly or indirectly experience everything in the world, as if they were devouring an encyclopedia.

It is only then that they can form their own identity. A person's self-identity is his clear subjective nature. Once a person has the confidence to say, "I can go all around the country, and I will never come across a person who is capable of defeating me," then he is ready to take on any task and have the confidence to accomplish it successfully. When a person lives life in this way, he will be successful. Success is assured. This is the conclusion I arrived at while living as a beggar in Tokyo.

I shared meals and slept with laborers in Tokyo, shared the grief of hunger with beggars, learned the hard life, and earned my doctorate in the philosophy of suffering. Only then was I able to understand

God's will as He works to bring salvation to humanity. It is important to become the king of suffering before age thirty. The way to gain the glory of the Kingdom of Heaven is to become a king of suffering and earn your doctorate in that philosophy. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father wrote about the experience of having Jesus appear to him when he was 15 and telling him he was chosen to fulfill Jesus' mission. For years he had not told anyone about his mission. All alone he traveled in spirit world and got revelations from God.

In 1942 he went to Japan to study electrical engineering at a college. He writes about his feelings about the pain in Korea that was dominated by the ruthless Japanese:

After graduating from the Kyongsong Institute in 1942, I traveled to Japan to continue my studies. I went because I felt that I needed to have exact knowledge about Japan. On the train to Busan, I couldn't stop the tears from flowing. I covered myself with my coat and cried out loud. My nose ran and my face swelled up, I cried so much. It grieved me to think that I was leaving my country behind as it suffered under the yoke of colonial rule. I looked out the window as I wept, and I could see that the hills and rivers were weeping even more sorrowfully than I was. I saw with my own eyes the tears flowing from the grass and trees. Upon seeing this vision, I said, "I promise to the hills and streams of my homeland that I will return, carrying with me the liberation of my homeland. So don't cry, but wait for me."

When he was 23 years old in 1943 he returned to Korea from Japan and he writes this amazing testimony about his search for the truth:



Upon finally returning to Korea, I found nothing had changed. Japan's tyrannical rule was becoming worse by the day. The entire land was soaked in blood and tears. I returned to Heuksok Dong in Seoul and attended the Myungsudae Church. I kept detailed diaries of all the new realizations that I had each day. On days when I had a great number of such realizations, I would fill an entire diary. I was receiving answers to many of the questions that I had struggled with over the years. It was as if my years of prayers and search for truth were being answered. It happened in a short time, as if a ball of were passing through me.

During this time I had the realization, "The relationship between God and mankind is that of a father and his children, and God is deeply saddened to see their suffering." In this moment all the secrets of the universe were resolved in my mind. Suddenly, it was as if someone had turned on a movie projector. Everything that had happened since the time humankind broke God's commandment played out clearly before my eyes. Hot tears flowed continuously from my eyes. I fell to my knees and bowed my head to the floor. For the longest time I couldn't get up. Just as when my father had carried me home on his back as a child, I laid my body down in God's lap and let the tears flow. Nine years after my encounter with Jesus, my eyes had finally been opened to the true love of God. God created Adam and Eve and sent them into this world to be fruitful, to multiply, and to bring about a world of peace where they would live. But they could not wait for God's time. They committed fornication and bore two sons, Cain and Abel. The children who were born from the Fall did not trust each other and brought about an incident where one brother murdered the other. The peace of this world was shattered, sin covered the world, and God's sorrow began. Then humankind committed another terrible sin by killing Jesus, the Messiah. So the suffering that humanity experiences

today is a process of atonement that it must pass through as God's sorrow continues.

Jesus had appeared to me as a boy of sixteen because he wanted me to know the root of the Original Sin that humankind had committed and to bring about a world of peace where sin and the Fall would no longer exist. I had received God's serious word to atone for the sins of humanity and bring about the world of peace that God had originally created. The world of peace that is God's desire is not someplace we go to after death. God wants this world, where we live now, to be the completely peaceful and happy world that He created in the beginning. God certainly did not send Adam and Eve into the world for them to suffer. I had to let the world know this incredible truth.

Having discovered the secrets of the creation of the universe, I felt my heart become like a calm ocean. My heart was filled with the word of God. It felt as though it might explode, and my face was always shining with joy.

## **1944**

In 1944 he married. He tells of meeting his wife and warning her that she may have to be separated from him because he has a special mission from God. He writes:

I went to one of my aunts who had much experience in arranging marriages and asked her to introduce me to a suitable wife. This is how I met Seon Gil Choi, the daughter of a prominent Christian family in Jung-ju. She was a well-raised woman from an upright family. She had attended only elementary school, but she had a character that disliked having to cause even the slightest trouble to others. Her character was so strong and her Christian faith so deep that she had been imprisoned at age sixteen for refusing to

comply with a Japanese colonial requirement that all Koreans worship at Shinto shrines.

I explained to Seon Gil Choi clearly about the kind of life I intended to lead. “Even if we marry now, you should be prepared to live without me for at least seven years,” I told her. “Why should I do that?” she responded. I told her, “I have a task that is more important than family life. In fact, my reason for getting married has to do with my ability to carry out God’s providence. Our marriage needs to develop beyond the family to the point where we can love the nation and all humanity. Now that you know that this is my intention, do you truly want to marry me?” She responded with a firm voice: “It doesn’t matter to me. After I met you, I dreamed of a field of flowers in the moonlight. I am certain that you are my spouse sent from Heaven. I can endure any difficulty.”

I was still concerned, and I pressed her several times. Each time she sought to set my mind at ease, saying, “I am willing to do anything, as long as I am able to marry you. Don’t worry about anything.” (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

Father says they were married May 4, 1944:

Normally May is a time for beautiful spring days, but on our wedding day it rained heavily. My wife and I began our married life in my boarding room in Heuksok Dong. I truly loved her and took such good care of her that the mistress of the boarding house would say, “Oh my, you must really love her, since you treat her as if you were handling an egg.”

I got a job at the Kyongsong branch of the Kashima Gumi Construction Company in Yongsan in order to support our family while I also carried out church work. Then, one day in October, the Japanese police suddenly stormed into our home.

(*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

Father was part of the underground movement against the Japanese. Father writes that they came to his home when he was married and took him to the police station:

They beat me with a table and broke all four of its legs against my body, but I refused to give them the names of the people who had worked with me in Japan. The Japanese police then went to where I was living with my wife, turned it upside down, and discovered my diaries. They brought the diaries to me and went through them page by page, demanding I tell them about the names they found. I denied everything, even though I knew they might kill me for my silence. The police stomped on me mercilessly with their spiked military boots until my body was as limp as if I were dead. Then they hung me from the ceiling and swung me back and forth. Like a slab of meat hanging in a butcher shop, I swung this way and that as they pushed me with a stick. Soon, blood filled my mouth and began dripping onto the cement floor below me. Each time I lost consciousness they would pour a bucket of water over me. When I regained consciousness the torture would begin again. They held my nose and stuck the spout of a teakettle into my mouth, forcing me to swallow water. When my stomach became bloated with water they laid me face up on the floor, looking like a frog, and began stomping on my abdomen with their military boots. The water would be forced up my esophagus and I would vomit until everything turned black. On the days after I had been tortured this way my esophagus felt as though it was on fire. The pain was so great I could not bear to swallow a single mouthful of soup. I had no energy and would just lie face down on the floor, completely unable to move. The war was coming to an end, and the Japanese police were desperate. They tortured me in ways words cannot describe. I endured, though, and never gave them the names of any of my friends. Even as I was going in

and out of consciousness, I made sure not to give them what they wanted.

*(As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen)*

He said, “Finally tiring of torturing me, the Japanese police” let him go.

### **AUGUST 15, 1945**

On August 15, 1945 the world rejoiced as the Japanese surrendered. The terrible four-year war with Japan from 1941-1945 was finally over. The Korean people were free from their domination, and the Koreans celebrated even more than the rest of the world after having been viciously dominated for 40 years. On this day, the young Messiah began his public ministry.

“In August, when the Japanese finally laid down their arms, there was jubilation in Korea. The people took to the streets and the hysteria of liberation took over. Sun-myung Moon marks the day of the Surrender, August 15—celebrated as Liberation Day by Koreans—as the beginning of his public ministry. Since his encounter with Jesus in 1935, he had spoken to no one of his new understanding of God. Now the defeat of Japan meant he could act free from police surveillance. Korea was free from its colonial masters and the Christian nations had triumphed over fascist evil. The time was propitious.” (Michael Breen, *Sun Myung Moon, The Early Years, 1920-53*)

Father writes that he did not join in the celebration:

Finally, on August 15, 1945, Korea was liberated from Japan. This was the day every Korean had been waiting for. It was a day of tremendous emotion. Shouts of “Mansei!” and people waving the Taeguk flag covered the entire peninsula. I could not join in the festivities, however. My heart was deadly serious because I could foresee the terrible calamity that was about to befall the Korean peninsula. I went alone into a small anteroom and immersed myself in prayer. Soon after that, my fears were realized. Although liberated from Japanese rule, our

homeland was cut in two at the 38th parallel. In the North, a communist regime that denied the existence of God came to power. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

## **LOVE YOUR ENEMIES**

Jesus taught that we are to become perfect people. The ultimate test of perfection is if we can love our enemies. The Messiah teaches this philosophy of life by word and deed. Jesus taught: “You have heard that it was said, ‘You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But I say to you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which spitefully use you, and persecute you, so that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven; for he makes his sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? And if you salute only your brethren, what more are you doing than others? Do not even the Gentiles do the same? You, therefore, must be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect” (Matt 5:43-48).

Father began his public ministry in 1945 by helping those Japanese who tortured him to escape so they would not be tortured and killed by those who would seek revenge. He says:

I was in the underground anti-Japanese movement under the Japanese rule. But I saved the people secretly who had imprisoned me and gave me a hard time.

But after they lost the war, I loved the Japanese. I even saved a Japanese policeman who was chased.

Those Japanese policemen who arrested and tortured me for underground independent activities could have been executed if I accused them. But instead of my doing so, I helped them escape.

Father has resentment even to the Japanese emperor; however, I cannot get revenge by barging into the palace and stabbing him. It doesn't make him pay everything back. He's already a loser. God never hits

the perished. God gives mercy to those who accept their own sin and repent. Because we have God, if we take revenge on the loser our descendants will perish. For that reason, we pray for them and we give them guidance. (*Way of Unification Part 2*)

### **FORGIVE THOSE WHO HIT ME**

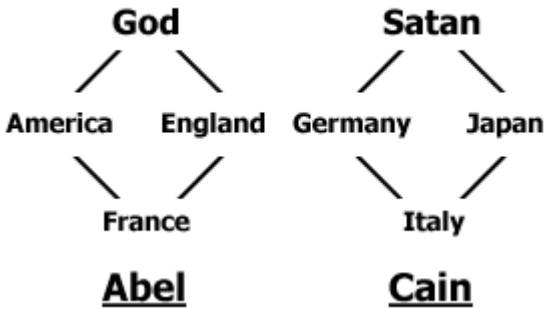
The Messiah is like God who loves everyone and hates no one. Father said, “Even if people can put my body into prison, no one can imprison my heart and belief. They can hit me however much they want. When they hit me, all of that will be a foundation for me to connect to God and God’s work to this point. Those moments were testing how much I could actually love my enemies. I said to them in my mind, ‘Hit me for as long as you want, but I will never hate you for this.’ I vomited blood after being hit for so long, but I still thought, ‘I was beaten on behalf of all mankind. I am beaten, but I will not remember the pain. Please, Heavenly Father, forgive those who hit me.’ One must successfully go through a test in which your life is at risk.” (*Theory of Education*)

The purpose of World War II was not only to stop the satanic Hitler and defend ourselves from Japan but a more internal reason was to free Korea from Japanese bondage so the Messiah could speak freely. The relationship between Korea and America was parallel to that of Rome and Israel. The Roman Army occupied and governed the chosen nation of Israel and the armies of America and the Soviet Union occupied and governed Korea.

### **WORLD WAR II**

Satan tried to rule the world by starting World War II. God worked hard to support the Allies: America, England and France. In 1945 they were victorious over the axis nations: Germany, Italy and Japan. The Allies were in the global Abel position; the Axis nations were in the Cain position. Abel won over Cain and then loved Cain. This was a successful indemnity condition.

## World War II



### HITLER

Hitler was a satanic imitation of Jesus—the Second Adam. Hitler was a Jew; he started his public life when he was 30 years old. He never married but had a secret girlfriend named Eva. He spoke of a millennium, never had children and his body was never found. He spoke of Jesus and thought of himself as the savior of the world. He taught about a satanic superior race of white people while the Messiah teaches that we must transcend race with interracial and international marriages. Hitler's speeches and his book, *Mein Kampf*, are filled with words of hate, while the Messiah's speeches and books are filled with words of love.

### ARMAGEDDON

The Second World War was inevitable to pay for the tragedy of murdering Jesus. God's side won in World War II and this blood payment on a world level allowed the Third Adam to begin his ministry in 1945 as the young Messiah. World War II was the fulfillment of the prophecy of Armageddon in Revelation.

To recreate Israel, the church and the state must become one as Cain and Abel. Instead they became one with Rome and captured and killed Jesus. They united with Rome. Who are the Jewish members here, raise your hands! Jewish people, you have to repent. Jesus was the King of Israel. Through the principle of indemnity Hitler killed 6 million Jews.



That is why. God could not prevent Satan from doing that because Israel killed the Messiah. Even now, you have to determine that you will repent and follow and become one with Christianity through Rev. Moon.

To unify Korea we must unify church and state. We must establish a political party and then unify church and state. We must be able to unify the UN and deal with the Cain type countries. The current administration in America must be guided by the religious leaders. If you follow Rev. Moon, you will not go down. (Hoon dok Hae, March 2, 2003)

### **ATOMIC BOMBS**

The ultimate reason for the victory of World War II was to free the Messiah in Korea from Japanese domination. God and the Messiah are in a hurry. During World War II the Messiah was in great danger. To end the war quickly, God inspired the building and the use of atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki on August 6 and 9, 1945. And it worked. Japan immediately surrendered and Korea was liberated. The Messiah could speak freely.

This use of atomic bombs on cities in Japan remains one of the most passionately debated historical events of the twentieth century. There is a Cain/Abel division between the hawks and doves. God is behind the hawks, and Satan is behind pacifists, those in the so-called peace movement and others who are naïve to evil.

Using atomic bombs saved the lives of Koreans who would have been massacred by the Japanese. Many American and Allied soldiers would have died in continued fighting of the war. And finally, the Messiah was in danger living in a slave state.

God's plan was for the young Messiah to be accepted by the Korean Christians. God had obviously been helping Syngman Rhee who later became the President of Korea. Rhee had been working tirelessly to free Korea for 40 years. It was no coincidence that he had lived in America and received his Ph.D. at Princeton University from Woodrow Wilson who was the president of Princeton then.

Rhee was Christian, spoke perfect English and had a white Western wife. God's plan was for him to accept the young Messiah and then with the Korean Christians be the John the Baptist who would witness to the Christian leaders of America and to the President of the United States. It was a reenactment of Jesus, who with John the Baptist and the Israelites, were to go to Rome.

Independence came to Korea in 1948 under President Syngman Rhee. But he was almost like an American—he was educated in the United States, he spoke Korean like an American and his wife was a Western woman. The Korean government in 1945 was basically an extension of the United States.

After World War II, the U.S. installed a military government in Korea headed by General Hodge. President Syngman Rhee was in the position to maintain his own cultural pride, not just listen to General Hodge. Actually, President Rhee was doing well for a while. For instance, the United States wanted to send all North Korean prisoners of war back to North Korea, but those who had surrendered in South Korea didn't want to go back to the communists. The United States government was trying to push them back because they didn't want any problems with North Korea. Then one night President Rhee, unbeknownst to the U.S. Army, opened the doors to the jails where those tens of thousands of North Korean soldiers were being held and they fled to freedom. That was a courageous act and it was according to the messianic ideal. (5-1-84)

#### **1945 — MESSIAH BEGINS HIS MINISTRY**

There were some spiritualists in Korea at this time that had revelations that the messiah would return as a man. One such man was a Mr. Kim who had a following. Father went to him in the fall of 1945. Michael Breen in *Sun Myung Moon, the Early Years, 1920-53* writes:

Baek-moon Kim ... taught that Korea was the Israel of modern times, where the second coming of Christ would take place. In 1943, he started a retreat in Supchol-ri in the countryside north of Seoul. As Japanese oppression of Christians increased, he taught secretly. In September, 1945, the month after the end of the war, he formally established the Israel Jesus Church by setting up a church in Seoul, and a small prayer center in Supchol-ri. Two men and ten women joined Kim at his retreat, where they lived a celibate life of faith.

The congregation was small, around fifty people, but comprised many intellectuals and other influential figures. If Kim ran into opposition from the Christian establishment for his heretical views, he would be able to call on powerful allies. One of the deacons was the wife of the owner of the Chosun Ilbo, Korea's main daily newspaper. Her daughter was one of the celibates at Kim's retreat.

Another woman among the faithful was the wife of Lee Bom-sok, who in 1948 was to become South Korea's first prime minister.

Moon took an unassuming role when he visited Kim's group, and did menial tasks. His wife did not approve of Baek-moon Kim and did not attend the church with him. In fact, she complained of Moon's devotion. The other members began to recognize his deep spirituality.

Rev. Kim told his followers that Moon had profound spiritual wisdom. Several months after Moon joined the group Kim placed his hand on Moon's head in blessing and said the wisdom of Solomon was with him.

Kim should naturally have recognized that Moon embodied the goal of Kim's search, and should have led his followers to understand that Moon was the new Adam, the Christ that they had been waiting for. He should have become Moon's leading follower.

Moon would have provided the substantial core to the theology that Kim had developed in framework. Had this happened, Moon would have sought, through Kim's sect, to integrate the Christian spiritual groups, and then to create a revival within Christianity aimed at unifying the denominations. Such a movement, in Moon's plan, would have provided a basis to create harmony between the major religions.

In "Early Unification Church History" we read:

Mr. Kim was told to establish a seminary to prepare for the Lord of the Second Advent. This he did, calling it the Israel Monastery.

Father met Mr. Kim in November 1945 (three months after the liberation from the Japanese) and stayed and worked in his church for six months. Father did not speak of the *Principle*, but served the church in a humble way by doing the most menial tasks. During this time Father prayed hard for Mr. Kim to understand Father's role. Mr. Kim received a revelation about Father and placed his hand on Father's head, saying that the glory of King Solomon and the whole world would be on him.

During this six-month period many women followers of Mr. Kim were told by the spirit world to follow Father instead of Mr. Kim. Mr. Kim, on the basis of what he received when he blessed Father, had his own portion of responsibility to find out who Father was. He should have asked Father what these revelations about him meant; Father was praying for him to ask. However, Mr. Kim became more concerned about his own position, and was fearful that Father would take his followers. Therefore, he, like John the Baptist, could not follow the Messiah, although Father inherited the blessing of the providential foundation from Mr. Kim.

## 1946

In 1946 Father had to move on to another group because of the failure of Mr. Kim. When a central figure fails then there is more indemnity to pay. Father now had to suffer more and go to North Korea ruled by the atheistic and brutal communists led by Kim Il Sung. While people were trying to escape from the North, which was ruled by the Russian army, the young Messiah went to the North.

He had a wife and child, but he was not abandoning or deserting them. He is a central figure of God and sometimes God's champions have to do extraordinary things when they pay indemnity. He was not leaving his wife; he was going toward God.

Immediately following liberation, our country was in indescribable chaos. Daily necessities were difficult to come by, even for people with money. We ran out of rice in our home, so I set out for Paekchon, Hwanghae Province, a community north of Seoul and just south of the 38th parallel, to pick up some rice that had been purchased previously. On my way, though, I received a revelation that said: "Go across the 38th parallel! Find the people of God who are in the North."

I immediately crossed the 38th parallel and headed for Pyongyang. It had been only a month since our first son was born. I was concerned for my wife. I knew she would be anxiously waiting for me, but there was no time for me to return home before going north. God's commands are very serious, and they must be followed without reservation or hesitation. I took nothing with me except for the Bible that I had read dozens of times and had filled with underlined notes to myself in tiny letters the size of grains of sesame seeds.

Refugees were already streaming south to escape communist rule. In particular, the Communist Party's rejection of religion meant that many Christians were

heading south in search of the freedom to worship. The communists branded religion as the opiate of the people and insisted that no one could have a religion. This was the place where I went, following the call from Heaven. No minister would want to go into such a place, but I went there with my own two feet.  
*(As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen)*

The wives of central figures of God must also pay a heavy price in God's providence. Often they are neglected and lonely as their husband fights the good fight. He spoke on this in one of his speeches:

You women should look at your husbands as if they were in Abraham's position. Don't demand an explanation from him when he pushes you to get up and out of bed; just trust and follow him. Usually when someone is trying to explain all the details about the providential path, the providence has already gone on ahead without him! Your husband might tell you,

"Don't ask questions; just follow me.

Beyond that horizon, wonderful things are waiting." You should follow him without having any idea what kinds of things are waiting.

Perhaps when you and your husband get on the other side of that mountain where wonderful things were supposed to be waiting, there will be a howling wolf instead. Then your husband might say, "Don't worry, we must cross over another mountain and then we will come to Canaan, that wonderful land." Even if the wife is not so cooperative, the husband must somehow persuade her to go with him over all the mountains. Do you men understand? That is your job. Actually, in some cases the husband is the one who is confused and not sure of what to do or where to go.

Sometimes you have to give an ultimatum and tell your spouse, "All right. You can stay here, but I'm

going ahead.” Do you rascal men hear me correctly this morning? So many men feel they have to discuss their missions and mandates from God with their wives first before doing them. But you must feel, “I must talk with God alone; let my wife follow me.”

You know that I have taught you American women many things. You love and trust me, is that correct? From now on you must truly be different from all secular American women. Think of it: if I had been the sort of man who always cleared things with my wife before acting on them, there would not be any Unification Church today! I am speaking now of my first marriage. That woman was very brilliant and capable. She told me, “All you need to do is just love and pay attention to me and our child; I will make you happy. Just stay here; why do you have to go to North Korea, anyway? You have no guarantee that you will survive there!” However, I did not listen to her; I only discussed with God and obeyed God’s commands. Even more than Abraham, I left everything behind and went directly to North Korea as soon as God directed me. I didn’t even go to visit my own home town there in North Korea—that is not why God sent me. I went to North Korea in order to do exactly what God commanded me. (9-19-82)

*In Guidance for Heavenly Tradition* Volume 3 by Rev. Young Hwi Kim we read:

We know that as the chosen nation, Korea had to make an indemnity condition similar to that of Israel’s in order to inherit God’s providence. The Hebrews suffered in Egypt for 400 years before leaving Egypt for Canaan, where they started a new nation. Korea gained its independence in 1945 and Father started his mission immediately thereafter. But even before 1945, in 1943 I think, Father returned to Korea and worked for a Japanese construction company. Besides his job, he worked with the underground churches, so he already knew

several righteous ministers. He also led Sunday school classes. So he had already begun to lay a foundation to start his mission.

After Korea was liberated in 1945 Father began to talk about his mission, but the minister with whom Father was working (his name was Kim) couldn't accept Father as the Messiah. He knew Father when he was young and to him Father was still a young man. He always compared himself to Father; he was older and more experienced and also received revelations from the spirit world, so he thought he was the top man. He didn't think he was the Messiah, but that he was the number one person after the Messiah. As a result it was difficult for him to accept Father as his leader, even though Father revealed many new things to him. Father wanted to contact other ministers through him, but because of his rejection it wasn't possible. Father tried very hard, but as a result of this failure he couldn't establish a foundation in the South. So in 1946, Father was told to go to the North, because he couldn't establish a foundation among the churches of the South. When the Christians rejected him, Father had no condition to remain; he had to find another foundation. When someone fails, the next step becomes more difficult. If you fail on the first step, you have to pay indemnity in order to indemnify the failure and to restart. It would have been much easier for Father to begin his mission if the Southern churches had accepted him, but because they didn't Father had to make another, more difficult condition; he had to go to the North.

After Korea's liberation many Northerners fled south, because the North was occupied by the Communists. They didn't have a government yet, both Korean governments were established in 1948. But even before the government was established the Communist Party ruled the North with the help of the Soviet Army. It was very difficult because even though they had been liberated from Japanese



dominion the people still couldn't stay in their villages; they fled south. Contrary to everyone else, Father was heading north. North Korea was a living hell. There was no freedom at all. If you spoke out against the Communist Party, you were simply taken away, never to be heard from again; they could arrest anyone they wanted. That was the situation in the North. Father had to go to the North because he couldn't establish a foundation in the South. He had to find a spiritual group God had prepared for him there. Father knew this and went north in order to meet them. So instead of ministers he had to go north to find spiritual groups that could identify him as the Lord and follow him as the Messiah.

Father went up north at a time when it was very difficult to worship freely. He brought a new message so the Christians persecuted him as well. Actually Father had a terrible time. He found many good people, but the families of Father's followers persecuted him severely. Sometimes Father was beaten by a follower's father. Father had an extremely difficult time. But he waited patiently for the time when he could meet the spiritual group.

Father went to prison, where he met another spiritual group. Father met the group in prison and sent them a small note telling them to deny the charges being brought against them. But they didn't follow his instructions. If they had, they would have been saved and released from prison. They didn't deny the charges, because they adhered to the old Christian tradition that to tell a lie is against God's will. They didn't follow Father's instructions and as a result were executed. Father was virtually beaten to death because the guards found the note he had sent the group. This was Father's first imprisonment in North Korea. The spiritual group also failed to follow Father. After that Father had to bring his own people to make his foundation

The reason our church suffers so much is that we don't have God's nation. God suffers even more than we do because of this. So the creation and building of the Fatherland, God's nation, should be the foremost point in our minds.

### **NORTH KOREAN SPIRITUALISTS**

In "Early Unification Church History" we read this about the spiritualist group Father tried to work with in 1946 in North Korea led by a Mrs. Ho (also spelled Huh):

Jesus revealed to Mrs. Ho much about the heart of God, the inner secrets of the mission Mary could not fulfill, Jesus' childhood, the fact that John the Baptist failed his mission resulting in the crucifixion of Jesus, and that the Lord of the Second Advent would come as a man to Korea.

The Ho church was to solve this resentment by preparing the best princely clothes and food for Jesus—enough that he could have three banquet-style meals a day and clothes (both Korean and Western) to change every three days from birth to 33 years of age.

Mrs. Ho's unusual sect became known throughout Korea as the Bokjungkyo church (Inside Belly Church). This name was given the group because each time Mrs. Ho received revelations, her stomach shook, a sign which served as a constant reminder that the Lord to come was to be born as a physical man from his mother's womb. Mrs. Ho prophesied many specific things which came true, including that Japan would surrender on August 16, 1945. Because of her accuracy in prophecy her followers had great faith in her. She also received that they would meet the Lord when Japan perished. Thus, it must have been with great anticipation that these faithful and sacrificial Christians prepared both a house and a bride for the Messiah. They bought a fine house in Pyongyang. By this time (1946) North Korea was

occupied by communists who, upon hearing that they owned a fine house and stored many rich garments, confiscated the clothes and put the leaders, including Mrs. Ho, in prison.

On August 11, 1946, several months after Mrs. Ho's imprisonment, Father was also imprisoned. He had gone to North Korea from Pusan. Without identification, he was suspected of being a spy. Secondly, his religious teachings and practices resembled those of Mrs. Ho's church, making him suspect.

As providence would have it, Father was put in the same prison as Mrs. Ho, and in the same cell as her assistant. Won Pil Kim tells the story thusly:

The cell Father was thrown into was the same as that of one of the Inside Belly Church leaders. When this man saw Father, he immediately felt an impulse to explain to Father everything about the Inside Belly Church and confide in him about his own life.

The communists had given the Inside Belly Church leaders two alternatives: to deny their revelations and be released, or to maintain their faith and stay in prison. Even under severe torture, they would not deny their revelations. When Father heard about this, he explained to his cell mate why their church was prepared, and urged him to deny the revelation so he could be set free. Eventually this man did deny the revelation and was liberated, but because of the severe torture he had endured, he died shortly after his release.

Father felt responsible for the woman who had received these revelations. In prison, it was very dangerous to write letters, but Father secretly sent a note to her on a piece of paper hidden in a rice bowl. The contents of the note were instructions to deny the revelations she had received and to pray to find out who had written the note. However, the note was discovered and Father was tortured. The Japanese

had previously ruled Korea, and the torture in this prison was Japanese-style. It was severe and nearly unbearable. Finally, after about 100 days in prison, Father was set free.

The woman who was leader of the Inside Belly Church could not accept Father's request that she deny her revelations and be released. You can imagine how difficult it would have been for her to do so. Because she had been guided by God directly and because whenever she neglected to obey even a small part of her revelations she was chastised by heaven, to deny the revelations would have meant denying herself and everything she had done in the past. Through many experiences, she had learned that if she followed the revelations exactly, many good things happened, but if she did not follow them, bad things would happen. So she knew that the revelation was absolute.

However, the last revelation she received was that she would meet the Messiah in prison. Her own responsibility was to discover who he was. Father told her to pray in order to find out who had written the note, but she could not.

Mrs. Ho and her followers could not deny their revelations and without understanding who Father was, both they and Father suffered severe torture. The great foundation of faith which had been made through Mrs. Kim and Mrs. Ho was never connected to the Lord they so longed to meet. Had they recognized and obeyed the Messiah there, history would be different. In 1950 when the Korean War broke out, long-suffering members of the Inside Belly Church were sent to concentration camps in North Korea and eventually killed.

Father was imprisoned and tortured by the Communists in what is today North Korea. Bo Hi Pak in *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon* wrote of this time: "Once, one of his disciples went to visit Reverend Moon and bring him a change of

clothing. So much blood had soaked into his clothes and caked that he couldn't take them off. Finally, they had to be torn off so that he could change into new clothes.

“The harshest form of torture he experienced was that he was not allowed to eat or sleep for three days and nights on several occasions. If he closed his eyes, he would be beaten. Reverend Moon says he endured this torture by learning how to sleep with his eyes open for several minutes at a time.

“The communist police became increasingly desperate and continued to increase the severity of Reverend Moon's torture. His ribs were broken, his flesh torn, and he was vomiting blood. Finally, he lost consciousness.”

One person wrote, “The guards tied Father's hands behind his back with a very heavy rope. Using a large beam in the ceiling, they pulled the rope which lifted Father up high over the heads of the guards. Suddenly they let go of the rope, causing Father to fall. But before hitting the floor, they violently jerked the rope upward, causing Father's arms to be jolted from their sockets. The pain was so terrible that it was impossible to stand it without fainting.

“Finally, when Father's strength was about to give out the communists began to beat him with bats. They hit him in the face so hard that his back teeth shattered and blood gushed from his mouth. Father tensed his muscles against the blows, but he was struck in the stomach so hard and so many times that his intestines turned into pulp. He began to throw up, covering his body with so much blood that it dripped onto the floor. He could hold on no longer, and Father finally fainted from loss of blood.”

In Rev. Chong Sung Ahn's *Divine Principle* lecture notes we read: “Father's hands were tied together behind his back. Then he was hung from the ceiling by his hands. The pressure forced his rib cage to push into his lungs until he could not breathe. Three hours later he had almost suffocated and passed out. His torturers thinking that he had died, cut him down. In general people died after two hours of such torture. This suffering was a similar experience to Jesus'

painful three hour crucifixion. After five hours Father revived and regained consciousness.

“For several days Father was beaten across his back with wooden rods, until his back was torn open and blood stained his shirt. His inner organs were also severely damaged. Eventually he collapsed and vomited blood. Many people were killed in this way dying after vomiting. Father was left for dead and his body was thrown out into the snow. His body was found by his disciples and taken home. He looked like a skeleton, nothing but skin and bones. For 10 days he continued to vomit blood until they were convinced there was no hope. Doctors could not revive him with medication or injections.”

The innocent Messiah received his torture and martyrdom without any complaint or resentment. He lives his teachings of loving his enemies. After he was tortured and put in his cell when he regained consciousness he immediately prayed for his torturers. One of his most vicious torturers was a former Christian who had become a Communist and had killed many Christians. He had experienced many Christian leaders, ministers and priests being tortured. He saw that they all prayed to God begging for His help. When God did not send help, they lost their faith in God and hope. He saw that Father was the only one who kept his faith. When he heard Father’s tearful prayers for his enemies with no anger and with pure love, his heart was melted and he repented to Father. “Through experiencing Father’s lifestyle and prayer, the torturer awakened to the realization that God must exist. This most evil torturer, shedding tears, visited Father and confessed and repented of his sins of murdering many Christians, asking Father how he could be saved. Father forgave him and guided him on how to be saved.” (Rev. Ahn’s notes)

Pak writes: “The police notified Reverend Moon’s followers that they could come get him and tossed his body into the courtyard. It was October 31, almost twelve weeks after his arrest. Three days later Reverend Moon regained his consciousness. After another week, he began to speak. In ten days, he could stand, and from that very day he resumed preaching” (Pak, *Messiah*).

## **NOT ANGRY**

Father writes, “When, in such a position, I was hit and stomped on by the Communists, tortured and robbed, do you think I was angry or not? Even when I was in such agony, do you think I would say, ‘God, please let the lightning and thunder hit and destroy them?’ No. I prayed for their well being from the position of shedding blood from my body.” (tparents.org)

## **PRAYED FOR TORTURERS**

“When I was persecuted by the communist regime in North Korea, the police arrested me and tortured me until they thought I was dead. Don’t you realize that I could have felt resentment toward my situation at such times? I could have demanded of God, ‘Why are You allowing me to suffer like this? Why can’t You do something to protect me, since You are so great and powerful?’ This would have been the common reaction. But even though my hands were bruised and bleeding, I clasped them in prayer for those who tortured me. I know that those who beat me were only acting on orders; they could not reject me completely. I longed to embrace them and forgive them. I refused to write them off. You also should not give up when you encounter opposition or difficulties.” (12-27-81)

## **PERSECUTION OF HIS FOLLOWERS**

In *Guidance for Heavenly Tradition* we read about some of the hardships and persecution his followers had to endure: “Almost all those who continued to follow him had to endure some measure of persecution. Ok Se-hyun was beaten by her husband. Kim Won-pil was thrown out of his home by his family, and took lodgings in Ok’s house. Kim In-ju was told by her parents that she was in the grip of Satan. They believed that Jesus would return literally on the clouds, as the Bible said, and were convinced that their daughter, who was talking about Christ returning as another man, was completely possessed.

“‘We must drive Satan out to rescue you from the anti-Christ,’ they said. They regularly beat and whipped her. She was forbidden to go out to attend what was being called the ‘Moon House.’ Sometimes after she had been whipped, she looked outside her window and could see two or three of the members dressed in white, standing in

the street, praying. She knew that Moon had sent them and felt comforted. On one occasion, her parents visited the house of their nephew, Chong Myong-son, where Moon was staying. When he saw Moon, her father grabbed hold of his hair and began yelling at him.

“An even more serious case of what the followers interpreted as retribution involved the husband of another follower, an ardent Christian called Pak Ul-nae. Pak’s husband sometimes came to the house and shouted obscenities through the window of Sun-myung Moon’s room. One night after doing this, he suddenly died of a heart attack. These incidents added to the sense of controversy which surrounded the dynamic young preacher.”

### **1947-1948**

The Messiah had to build his own foundation—a new John the Baptist group. Father kept preaching about God’s exciting vision of a world utopia. He inspired many idealistic people to join him. Many of his followers were from established Christian churches. The pastors were upset to lose good members and their donations. They were also upset at his radical heretical teachings of a Messiah coming in the flesh and not on the clouds.

“The churches realized that, without government power, they would not be able to prevent Moon from preaching, so they began to write formal protests against him. By early 1948 the Communist authorities had received some eighty complaints that Moon was swindling Christians, breaking up families and committing adultery. In order to investigate the allegations, the police sent a spy, a woman who stayed for a few days and asked many questions.” These untrue rumors were spread out of jealousy and fear from some Christian ministers.

In February of 1948 he was arrested by the police who took him to court. Like a reenactment of Jesus being tried, the young Messiah was mocked and scorned in a communist courtroom filled with Christians just like Jesus had been mocked and scorned 2000 years before by the government and Jewish religious leaders.



## **REENACTMENT OF JESUS' TRIAL**

“The trial was set for April 3, and then delayed to April 7, so that Communist police and other officials could attend. It had been billed as the trial of ‘Jesus who had come down on the clouds to save the people.’ Many Christians came to the court.

“He stood accused of spreading falsehoods: Deceiving innocent people for their money and using those people to get more money from others. He was also charged with destroying the family and institutions, bringing disorder to society.

“‘How did you come down to earth?’ the prosecutor asked him. ‘By cloud, or by plane?’ The Christians in the courthouse laughed. He didn’t respond.

“‘What were you wearing when you came down from heaven? Jesus had a thorny crown. How about you?’ He kept silent.

“‘What did you study at college?’

“‘I majored in electrical engineering.’

“‘Please explain how electricity is produced.’ The question was designed to show that God, like electricity, is invisible but man-made. He explained the principles of electricity in detail. Eventually the judge interrupted. ‘OK, that will do.’ The defense lawyer, who had agreed to defend him at his followers’ request, made an appeal for leniency. But given the nature of the system and the political importance of the trial in the context of the anti-religious drive, the gesture was useless. During the course of the trial, some people yelled out threats and calls for capital punishment. ‘He should be killed!’ someone shouted from the gallery. ‘He should be beaten to death!’ shouted another.

“The trial lasted four hours and was over by lunch time. When the judge read the verdict, Moon requested he delete the part about spreading falsehoods and deceiving people. The judge ignored the request and announced his decision. Moon was sentenced to five

years. The crowd of Communist and Christian onlookers seemed quietly pleased with the outcome.

“The handcuffs were put back on. His followers were able to hand him a lunchbox. He held the box in the cuffed hand. As he was taken away, he smiled, lifted his free hand and waved.” (Michael Breen, *Sun Myung Moon, The Early Years, 1920-53*)

## **KOREA DIVIDED**

In 1945 the United States’ Army and the Soviet Union’s army jointly occupied Korea with the 38th parallel separating them. On November 14, 1947, the United Nations General Assembly adopted a resolution calling for an “all-Korea free election under United Nations observation” on May 10, 1948, for creation of a unified, independent Korea. The Soviets refused to allow the United Nations Commission to enter the Russian Zone. So voting was held only in South Korea in 1948. This gave birth to the South Korean government that officially declared itself the Republic of Korea on August 15, 1948. This is exactly three years from the time of its liberation from Japan and the start of the Messiah’s ministry. At this time the Messiah was being tortured in a North Korean communist death camp. God had spent 2000 years since Jesus to prepare Korea, the United States, and the world to receive the Messiah as King of Kings but sadly, like Jesus’ situation, those in the John the Baptist position had failed the Second Coming of Christ and tortured him.

In September 1948 the Communists announced the creation of the North Korean communist regime named Democratic People’s Republic of Korea. In December 1948 the United Nations General Assembly confirmed the sole legitimacy of the Republic of Korea by adopting a resolution declaring the Republic of Korea government as “a lawful government ...and the only such government in Korea.”

## **1948 — HUNGNAM DEATH CAMP**

Between 1948 and 1950 the young Messiah was tortured everyday in Hungnam Prison. Most men died there in a few months. He endured this living hell for almost three years. The men were required to bag a chemical fertilizer that cut into the flesh and

exposed the bones in the hands. Their hands were usually bloody. The worst and most difficult job in the camp was to spend long hours carrying these 40 kilogram bags (88 pounds) on their backs to the weighing machines and then load them on railroad cars. He voluntarily took this most difficult job every day and showed super human strength. No one in human history has ever worked harder than him. For every person in the world and in human history to follow him he must live a life greater than anyone else in history.

All prisoners were given only one cup of grain to eat each day. When some died in the middle of eating, the others “around him would fight each other to dig the food out of the dead man’s mouth and put it in their own mouths. It was a living hell.” They didn’t try to help him but were so starving that they acted as animals. For the first three weeks in this terrible concentration camp he divided his little portion of rice in half and gave it to others.

In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Sun Myung Moon wrote about this time. Here are a few lines from his book. Please read the book to learn more:

Heungnam Prison was a concentration camp for special laborers working in the Heungnam Nitrogen Fertilizer Factory. ... People called me “the man like a steel rod” because of my strength. I could endure even the most difficult work. Prison and compulsory labor were not such a big problem for me. No matter how fierce the beating or terrible the environment, a person can endure if he carries a definite purpose in his heart.

Beginning with my first day in prison I made it a habit to take half of my ration of rice and give it to my fellow prisoners, keeping only half for myself. I trained myself this way for three weeks and then ate the whole ration. This made me think that I was eating enough rice for two people, which made it easier to endure the hunger.

Prison life is so terrible that it cannot even be

imagined by someone who has not experienced it. Half the prisoners would die within a year, so every day we had to watch as dead bodies were carried out the back gate in a wooden box. We would work so hard, and our only hope for leaving was as a dead body in that wooden casket. Even for a merciless and cruel regime, what they did to us clearly went beyond all boundaries of humanity. All those bags of fertilizer filled with the tears and grief of the prisoners were loaded onto ships and taken to Russia.

Sometimes his followers would bring some food to him, but he would give it away to other prisoners. The clothes of beggars were better than the inadequate clothes of these prisoners. They suffered so much in the bitterly cold weather. His mother once brought him some good winter clothing. She stood at the fence and cried as she saw him give all of it away.

When the men returned to their large rooms at night, they all collapsed into sleep on the concrete floor. Father would sleep in this room full of men near the bucket that served as their toilet. No one ever saw him sleep because he prayed when they went to sleep and he woke and prayed before they awoke. He prayed without complaint to God and comforted God's heart.

In his autobiography Father writes:

The prison cell held thirty-six people, and I took a small corner next to the toilet. In this space no one would step over me, but nobody wanted this space. We called it a toilet, but actually it was only a small earthenware jar without even a lid. Fluid would overflow from the toilet in the summer and it would freeze in the winter. There is no describing the putrid smell that came from it. The prisoners often experienced diarrhea because of the salty soup and hard rice balls that we ate every day.

I would be sitting by the toilet and hear someone say, "Oh, my stomach." The person would make his way to

the toilet in quick short steps. As soon as he exposed his bottom, the diarrhea would come shooting out. Because I was next to the toilet I was often splashed. Even during the night, when everyone was asleep, sometimes someone would have abdominal pain. When I heard people yelping in pain as they were being stepped on, I would know that someone was making his way to the toilet and I would get up and press myself against the corner. And if I were asleep and did not hear him coming, I would suffer the consequences. In order to endure this impossible situation, I even tried to think of these sights and sounds as some form of art.

Still I kept the spot by the toilet as my own during the entire time. "Why do you choose to stay there?"

Other prisoners would ask. I would answer, "This is where I feel most comfortable." I wasn't just saying this. This was, indeed, the place where my heart felt most at ease.

Some believers wrote a little book for children about Father's life. The following is about Father's time at the death camp:

This prison was at a nitrogen fertilizer factory. There was a small mountain of hardened lime which the prisoners had to break up and haul to another place. They had to break up the lime, pack it into rice-straw bags holding eighty pounds each, weigh it, and take it off to the loading dock. Each group of ten men was responsible for loading 1,300 bags every day, which meant about one bag every half-minute. The bags were heavy. The lime made their fingers bleed with big sores.

You might think a man would simply decide not to work; but this was not possible at Hungnam. If the team did not do its work, they didn't get anything to eat that day. In order to live, they had to eat, and in order to eat, they had to do the work. They didn't eat steaks or chicken or vegetables, nor any of the foods

we eat to stay strong. They received each day just one small ball of boiled barley, or a few spoonfuls of rice or wheat. Even if a person was lucky enough to eat every day, it was still not enough food to live on. Within a few weeks, the men became so skinny you could see the shape of their bones. Their bellies became swollen from starvation. After six months in this prison, most of them were sick enough to die. At the end of one year, most of the prisoners had died. Father was sentenced to five years! How was he going to survive?

As soon as he arrived, Father began planning how he would stay alive. His plan was very unusual. Most people would think the best plan would be to find ways to save energy and get more food. That was not Father's way.

First, he looked at the food. If he became desperate about this little lump of grain, he would surely die. He saw how the people acted around him. One day a prisoner, who had been very ill, died while eating his meal. When he fell over, two or three prisoners rushed to his side, opened his mouth, scooped out the grains of rice he had not swallowed and ate them.

Father decided that instead of trying to find a way to get more food he would eat less; then on the days when he ate the regular portion it would seem like a feast. For some time he would divide his little rice ball in half and give one half to one of the other prisoners. The surprise in that prisoner's face must have been like food to Father.

The time before the Korean War was very difficult even for those who were not in prison. Disciples such as Mrs. Ok and Won Pil Kim were allowed to visit every two months, and they would sometimes manage to bring him a little bag of rice powder. He easily could have gone to a quiet corner and eaten the

rice powder himself, but that was not Father's way. Father would always share it with other prisoners. Sometimes he filled their pockets with the precious powder when they weren't looking.

One day Father received a package of rice powder. Before he could share it he discovered it was missing. The other prisoners became outraged. Who would do such a thing? Finally they found the guilty man and dragged him before Father, so he could be punished. Father looked at him and said, "You must have been so very hungry to have to steal my food. He who is hungry has the right to eat. Give me your bag." Father then poured into his bag all the rice powder he had left.

Father looked at the work load. He decided to work harder than anyone at the camp had ever worked before. The nine workers on his team found that they could fill enough bags of lime when they worked with Father. Soon other prisoners were trying to get on Father's team. Twice Father was given a special award by the communists for his hard work. So, even Satan had to admit Father worked hard!

Then Father looked at his spiritual life. He had suffered so much, but he never complained to God about his situation. He never prayed to God because he was weak. His first thought was that God must be suffering so much to see what he was going through. If he acted sad it would make God suffer more. So he spoke brave words to God.

"I will never give up, Heavenly Father," he prayed with great love. "Please don't worry about me." He also told God he would fulfill his mission; he would be victorious.

The prisoners never got enough sleep, but Father used his sleeping time to meditate and pray. A

prisoner later said that when they went to sleep, they would see Father kneeling to pray; when they woke up, he was still praying!

The prisoners came to love him. Many times tears came into their eyes because they loved him so much. Father could not say one word about his mission to them, or even speak about God or religion at all. The communists would have killed him if he spoke of God. Therefore, spirit world spoke out for him. Many prisoners were told in dreams that he was a very special person, and that they should become his helpers.

At least twelve prisoners became his disciples. One of these men was named Jung Hwa Pak. Mr. Pak was a leader over a group of prisoners. Father was in his group. He tried to give Father easier jobs and extra food whenever possible, but Father always refused these favors.

The summers were extremely hot. Father always kept all his clothes on.

Mr. Pak kindly suggested, “Why don’t you take off your rubber shoes and long sleeved shirt? I’ll take you somewhere to wash.”

“I cannot,” replied father. “Heavenly Father directly told me not to expose my body to others.”

At one point, Father got very sick with malaria. He could have rested in sickbay. But he said, “No, I didn’t come here because of my sin, but for my mission.” He continued working, sweating greatly, barely having the energy to stay on his feet. No one else could have survived such punishment.

Father’s number in prison was 596, which, when translated into Korean, sounds very similar to the



word which means “innocent,” or “not being treated fairly.”

Father says, “I’m going to tell you a story of my life in prison. I went through much torture. But before the torture came, I was rather anxious to go through that kind of thing, to experience it, to know what it really is. At each glance of a bat, with each jab, I was ready for it; I accepted the challenge. You must study everything. In the face of torture before it comes, you must know how to prepare yourself. If you are scared the pain will be greater, but if you are prepared to fight against it, then you’ll feel less pain. When it comes if you are all tensed up to fight back, then you can survive the torture. In my mind I always thought, ‘I’m fighting back spiritually,’ when the physical blasts came. However severely they beat me, it was they who got exhausted, because every moment I thought I could never be defeated by them. My spiritual sword would pierce through their hearts. So rumors spread in the prison that Sun Myung Moon is formidable, he just cannot be defeated. You don’t know what prison life is like in North Korea. When I was in Hung-Nam prison, all the prisoners were supposed to put fertilizer into sacks. When you make rope out of this cloth sometimes the bones can be exposed, with all the flesh worn away. There was always blood dripping from your hand, but if you were scared by that you could not survive the situation. Then I thought, ‘However hard they may drive me, I will survive the situation at all costs. Come what may, even if you torture me more severely, I can survive.’ Then I experienced how much greater the power of spirit is than physical power. Instead of coming to my knees before the situation, under those conditions I was more courageous to fight back. All the prisoners, even the jailers and warden, came to respect me. I was cited for being the best worker. So, however bitter and wretched prison life may be, you must know how to make the breakthrough. You must be able to overcome the situation.” (“Those Who Will Prevail” March 12, 1975)

Won Pil Kim in his book *Father’s Course and Our Life of Faith* said the following:

This morning I’d like to tell you what kind of job Father had in the prison. Mr. Pak, who came to know

who Father was, recommended the easiest job in the prison. He didn't accept it, but chose the most difficult job instead. Father decided to choose and fulfill the most difficult job, thinking of the many ancestors who did their best to the point of death for God's will in the providence of restoration. Father had a strong determination that he had to liberate all the people who had worked hard and had died for God's Providence. It was a way of restoration through indemnity.

The meals were very poor and the work was hard. Father could tell how long each prisoner could survive by his appearance. When Father thought a person would survive for only seven more months, then he would die within seven months. There were piles of fertilizer from before the war, but they had become as hard as rock because nobody used them during the war. The prisoners had to dynamite them to pieces to pack them into bags. The fertilizer was nitrogenous.

It was said that the laborers who had worked there before the war could live for one year on a seven months' salary; you can imagine how hard the job was. They organized 10 people into one team and there was a work quota, as is usual in a Communist society. When the quota was not fulfilled, they halved the already small amount of food. The 10 people on a team were divided into pairs: the first pair dynamited the fertilizer into pieces and bagged it up in rush bags; the second pair carried the bags to the weighing machine; the third pair weighed them and took them off the machine; the fourth pair stacked them and the fifth pair carried them into the train. The most difficult part was done by the second pair who had to carry the bags and lift them onto the weighing machine, which was high off the ground. Each bag weighed 40 kilograms. The more the piles of fertilizer were destroyed, the longer the distance between the fertilizer and the weighing machine.

Father had to carry 1,300 bags in eight hours. If he couldn't fulfill, all 10 members had their food reduced by half.

In the developed countries people are sensitive to public health hazards, but think of Korea 33 or 34 years ago when the war had just finished and the country had not been rebuilt. They didn't care about things like that which might affect public health. People saw the yellow sulphurous smoke rising up from the chimney and the smell was so pungent and bad that people had to run past the factory. The air inside the factory itself was incredibly dirty. After Father got out of prison, he coughed for a long time, I remember.

You don't know what kamasu (a straw bag) is like in this country. I'll explain. You can imagine dried barley. Two or three hundred years ago in Korea there were houses with straw thatched roofs, since Korea was an agricultural country. There wasn't anything like hemp or nylon rope, so they made ropes and sacks out of straw. Last night you saw the film called "Father in Korea", where you saw the piles of fertilizer and the prisoners bringing the kamasu bags to the train; you saw how the Communists were working in the same factory. The skin of kamasu is very rough and hard, not smooth like nylon. Gradually Father's hands became chapped and torn and started bleeding. Nobody thought that medical treatment was necessary; they only thought of how to finish 1,300 bags a day. Father told me that he could see his bones. Ammonium sulphate penetrated the wounds; the pain was indescribable.

It was such hard work that the prisoners, dressed only in trousers, were dripping sweat. In this situation Father caught malaria, which causes a high fever, then shivering with cold in turn. Have you ever had such a disease? You can't get any strength. You can't imagine how it is now, can you? The fever tormented Father for 10 days. The principle of Communism

was: 'Those who don't work, don't eat'. This is their motto or philosophy in life. They gave only a half portion of food to those who couldn't work because of sickness. Therefore even sick people with so much pain went out to work because they didn't want to get their portion reduced by half. Father, who was also sick, was not absent for even one day. He worked extremely hard, with a strong determination that he should fulfill his responsibility.

"Unless I can become victorious over this hardship," he thought, "I won't be able to restore the people who have died in the Providence, nor clear their resentment." Thinking in this way, Father was desperate to get a victory. "If I fail, God's providential history won't be able to go forward anymore." With this kind of determination Father worked hard, day after day.

I visited Father and saw him walking from the prison to the working place. Six people made a single file, watched by armed jailers along both sides. All the prisoners had to hold hands so that they couldn't escape; it was a human fence. If one of them tried to run away, the prisoners on either side got the same punishment. They also had to walk with their heads down, so that they couldn't make any sign with their eyes or make any contact with the ordinary laborers who were also working in the factory.

They got up at six o'clock. When Father was weakened by malaria, he fell to his knees many times in spite of himself, since he couldn't find the strength to walk properly. When you become extremely hungry, your saliva becomes very viscous and you slaver. Father was given a prize for being a model worker three times, under these severe conditions. You can see how hard he applied himself to his work.

Some prisoners saw visions of their ancestors or of an old man with a white beard from whom they received a revelation that they should bring the food,

brought by their relatives, to the man No. 596. As a result, Father was given much food by people he didn't know. Father had to return something for the food he was given and he wrote to us to bring him some food or clothes. In those days in Pyongyang there were some old ladies who kept their faith firmly; they brought much food and clothes to Father and then Father shared them with the other prisoners. The old ladies became doubtful as to whether Father himself received the things, since he was always wearing the same clothes whenever they visited him. Actually, Father gave them to his disciples, like Mr. Kim and Mr. Pak, and over 12 other followers.

*In Messiah: My Testimony to Sun Myung Moon Volume 1* Bo Hi Pak writes:

Each team was required to shovel, weigh, and stack thirteen hundred sacks a day. This was an absurd quota, but any team that failed to meet the quota had its evening rations cut in half. Prisoners would put out every last ounce of their strength to earn a full ration of grain, and eventually they would work themselves to death.

The team that included Reverend Moon never failed to meet its quota. Reverend Moon took it upon himself to perform the most difficult part of the task, which was to pick up the sacks filled with ammonium sulfate and carry them to the scale to be weighed. If someone on the team hurt so much that they couldn't work, Reverend Moon would tell him to rest and he would perform that person's task in addition to his own.

Even in snowy winter days, the prisoners worked covered in sweat. It took only a few days for their clothes to become like rags. That was not all. The skin on the tips of their fingers would crack from handling the straw sacks. Then, the ammonium sulfate would get into the wound and eat the skin.

Only a person who has actually experienced this can know how painful it is. The prisoners developed such wounds all over their hands, sometimes so deep that their bones became visible.

Despite this regimen of excruciating painful forced labor, Reverend Moon's team met its thirteen hundred-sack quota day after day. This was the result of nothing other than Reverend Moon's superhuman sacrificial spirit and sense of mission.

The prison authorities were amazed at this turn of events. They never imagined that a team would consistently meet its quota and even gave Reverend Moon an award as the best worker in the prison. The Messiah of humankind was recognized by a communist government as a model worker.

Reverend Moon always told himself, "If I can't achieve victory in the worst possible environment, how can I hope to bring salvation to all humanity? If I can be victorious in this living hell, then I'll be able to save the world." It was because of his burning sense of mission for the salvation of the world that Reverend Moon was able to exert extraordinary effort.

Each time he sat down with his handful of low-quality food, Reverend Moon wondered to himself, "Is my longing for God as strong as my longing for this food?" This was the standard of his faith.

"I will do all the things that the rest of the world hates to do. There is nothing that I cannot endure. I know that my Father in heaven is in a much more difficult position than me." Reverend Moon was constantly comforting God in this way.

He would tell himself, "As long as I am thinking of God, I can do ten times the work I'm doing now. Prison is the best place for me to train myself to battle evil. Satan has put me into the worst prison to test me and make me surrender, but I will never be defeated."

The rule in the cells was that the prisoner who had arrived most recently had to sleep next to the excrement pit. Reverend Moon, however, decided that he would always sleep there. This was because he knew that everyone hated to have to sleep there.

How did Reverend Moon pray at night? He did not say, “God, I’m struggling in this hell, so please help me.” He never prayed like this. Not even once.

Much later, Reverend Moon explained it this way to his disciples: “My Father in heaven already knew His son’s suffering, so how could I go to Him asking for help? The entire time I was imprisoned at Hungnam, I was busy trying to comfort God.”

### **Totally Focused**

Even though he was in the worst conditions imaginable, Reverend Moon was totally focused on the messianic mission for which he had been called by God. He refused to succumb to hunger, pain, and exhaustion and always strove to establish the standard of victory over the cross. This was his unchanging outlook during the two years and five months he was incarcerated in Hungnam.

“In order for me to fulfill my mission as the savior of the universe,” he would tell himself, “I have to use these conditions of living hell to build up my qualifications as the savior.” This was how he endured to the end and turned the impossible into the possible.

I could spend the rest of eternity trying to find words that fully capture the greatness of Reverend Moon’s character, but I would never be successful. I realize that I am not qualified even to sit at his side.

Although Reverend Moon could not openly preach, he witnessed every minute of every day by his example. Eventually, the number of prisoners who regarded themselves as Reverend Moon’s close disciples grew to twelve. Some of these men received revelations, and others saw visions. They observed

Reverend Moon's indomitable spirit and pure faith. Even though they were trapped in an earthly hell, they found in Reverend Moon hope for the Kingdom of Heaven.

### **1950 — KOREAN WAR**

On June 25, 1950, North Korea ruled by Kim Il Sung, invaded South Korea. The United Nation's Security Council met in emergency session the next day. One veto from any nation in the council stops all action. The Soviet Union would have vetoed any proposal to help, so God made sure that the Russians were absent from the meeting.

The Council acted swiftly and denounced the invasion. President Truman directed General MacArthur to lead the 16 nations who volunteered to fight in aiding South Korea. These 16 nations represented the age of Eve (Western way of counting age) when Lucifer seduced her. Satan was raping God's nation, and God fought back.

When the United Nations forces counterattacked, the 30-year-old Messiah was freed from his concentration camp, and traveled to the south with millions of refugees. God wanted MacArthur to free God's chosen nation, but Truman committed the greatest act of cowardice in the 20th century and fired MacArthur, leaving the North Koreans in bondage under communism.

Father says this about MacArthur:

...we want to make General MacArthur a hero for Americans. Young people today do not know who he was, or the true causes of World War II and the Korean War—how they started and progressed, and how they ended. By showing what a hero MacArthur was, a new spirit can come to America.... MacArthur loved God. The Inchon landing was an impossible strategic plan in a military sense. No sane general would normally have proposed or accepted it because the Inchon harbor has the world's highest and lowest tides in the course of one hour. That meant that within 45 minutes, 250 ships had to pass through the small channel into the harbor. It was an incredible impossibility. MacArthur could only do it with



absolute faith in God. He believed and trusted that the Korean conflict was a holy war and that God would be with them. On that condition alone he came up with his plan and he offered it into God's hands.

Secondly, MacArthur loved mankind. Japan was the worst enemy of America in World War II, but after Japan was defeated, MacArthur worked hard to restore that nation. Out of his compassion he helped make the foundation for what Japan is today.

Thirdly, MacArthur abhorred communism. Why? Because communism denies God and strips human beings of their dignity.

General MacArthur's spirit and my spirit are parallel.... (9-1-82)

### **Heavenly Caesar**

Caesar was the emperor under whose rule the Messiah, Jesus Christ, was crucified. MacArthur has been nicknamed the "American Caesar;" but he was like a heavenly Caesar. The kind of character which Caesar embodied was authoritarian, not democratic. Caesar, in the position of emperor, should have been able to love his people and his public mission; of course, he could not do that. Caesar did not love God, first of all.

On the contrary, MacArthur showed his trust in God through the Inchon landing. Without trust and faith in God, it would not have been possible. This is the time of the revival and resurrection of General MacArthur. That great soldier of America was actually rejected and fired; but now Reverend Moon has come and led the revival of MacArthur's spirit. In modern history, the only person who achieved the status of a true hero was General MacArthur. Some people name Winston Churchill as a true hero, but he was limited to the European area, not the world level. However, the Korean War was a worldwide conflict between the United Nations and the

combined forces of the communist nations.

Caesar controlled the entire civilized world during his time. If MacArthur could have gained unity with Truman, he could have created a different kind of “Roman Empire” of modern times. If he had been allowed to advance beyond the Yalu River and liberate all of Korea, Manchuria, and even China, he could have destroyed communism in Asia. Certainly, he could have become President of the United States on that foundation. Undoubtedly, the history of this country would have been very different.

Therefore, America must restore the memory and the spirit of MacArthur. When his spirit prevails here, this country can rediscover a true dream, an ideal. Where can a true ideal be found at this time? Nowhere else but in the Unification Church. If General MacArthur had heard and understood the ideology of Unification Church, what do you think would have happened? Don’t you think one world under God could be possible? (9-19-82)

### **KOREA IS THE FATHERLAND**

Many Americans are confused about the Korean War. Why was the whole world focused on this tiny poor nation which was as obscure to Americans as Israel was to the Roman Empire? The importance of Korea is beyond words. It is the fatherland of the Messiah. It is God’s chosen nation. And it is the place of the showdown between God and Satan.

### **PROVIDENTIAL REASON FOR KOREAN WAR**

If the Messiah had been accepted the world would not have had to send its young men to die in Korea. God worked with MacArthur to make the Inchon landing a success. The internal purpose of the Korean War was to free the Messiah from a death camp. An early disciple of Father, Col. Bo Hi Pak, correctly wrote in his autobiography, *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon*, “Someday historians will recognize that the Korean War was fought for the purpose of saving the life of the Messiah. It is clear that that God planned General MacArthur’s Inchon landing for that express purpose.” Won Pil Kim says, “Now we know the

dispensation and realize that the war was fought to liberate this one man of God. God needed a champion and could not afford to have him suffer five additional years. Furthermore, Satan had already surrendered. Satan had already given up so Heavenly Father didn't have to watch Father suffer for two additional years. Therefore, for the first time in history sixteen nations joined together in one combat zone, the seemingly insignificant peninsula of Korea. Why did they go there to push north? The UN forces accomplished one great thing: Father's liberation from Hungnam prison." (*Testimony of Father's Life* 10-14-79)

The Inchon landing was one of the most dramatic and risky battles in history. At Hungnam Prison Father was scheduled to be executed. The first action by MacArthur was the freeing of Hungnam Prison to free the Son of God. Because Truman did not stand up to communism in Korea, Communists were emboldened and invaded Vietnam and again we let them win. There would have been no Vietnam War if we hadn't lost in Korea. Truman's error is a graphic example of Edmund Burke's insight: "The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men to do nothing." When central figures make mistakes the consequences are devastating. Because Truman did not fight the Chinese army and win North Korea, tens of thousands of American men died in Korea and the chosen land was divided.

### **1950 — 1953**

When Hungnam Prison was bombed in 1950 there was panic but some noticed that everywhere Father went it was safe. Many prisoners were killed from the bombs. Young Hwi Kim writes that Father said: "God said that no one would be hurt within a twelve-meter radius of me. While the bombing was going on, I was praying and communicating with the saints in the spiritual world." American bomber B-52s were bombing daily. There were large-scale massacres at other prison camps. Communists started killing prisoners at Hungnam.

"Before Hungnam was overrun by the U.S. forces rumors spread that they were coming soon. Father escaped on 10/14. On the 12th, guards started to take the prisoners and execute them. Sun Myung Moon was just about to be called and shot when a U.S. Air Force bombing raid began. The guards all ran away and Sun Myung Moon

and some other inmates escaped on foot.” (“Sun Myung Moon’s Answers to Questions about Hungnam” April 28, 2000)

In his autobiography Father writes:

The Korean War had begun while I was imprisoned in Heungnam. Three days after it started, the South Korean military handed over the capital of Seoul and retreated farther south. Then sixteen nations, with the United States in the lead, formed a United Nations force and intervened in the Korean War. U.S. forces landed at Incheon and pushed toward Wonsan, a major industrial city in North Korea.

It was only natural for Heungnam Prison to be a target for U.S. aerial bombing operations. When the bombing began the prison guards would leave the prisoners and go into bomb shelters. They weren’t concerned whether we lived or died. One day Jesus appeared right before me with a tearful face. This gave me a strong premonition so I shouted, “Everyone stay within twelve meters of me!” Soon after that a huge bomb exploded just twelve meters from where I stood. The prisoners who had stayed close to me survived. As the bombing became more intense, guards began executing prisoners. They called out the prisoners’ numbers and told them to come with three days’ food rations and a shovel. The prisoners assumed they were being moved to another prison, but in reality they were marched into the mountains, made to dig a hole, and then buried there. Prisoners were being called out in the order of the length of their sentences, with those with the longest sentences being called first. I realized that my turn would come the next day.

The night before my scheduled execution the bombs fell like rain in the monsoon season. It was October 13, 1950, and the U.S. forces, having succeeded in the Incheon landing, had come up the peninsula to take Pyongyang and were now pressing against Heungnam. The U.S. military attacked Heungnam with full force that night, with B-29

bombers in the lead. The bombing was so intense that it seemed all of Heungnam had been turned into a sea of fire. The high walls around the prison began to fall and the guards ran for their lives. Finally the gate of the prison that had kept us in that place opened. At around two o'clock in the morning on the next day, I walked calmly out of Heungnam Prison with dignity.

I had been imprisoned for two years and eight months, so I was a terrible sight. My underwear and outerwear were in tatters. Dressed in those rags, instead of going to my hometown, I headed to Pyongyang with a group of people who had followed me in prison. Some chose to come with me instead of going in search of their wives and children. I could clearly imagine how my mother must be crying every day out of concern for my welfare, but it was more important that I look after the members of my congregation in Pyongyang.

I stayed in Pyongyang for forty days looking for anyone I could think of, whether young or old. In the end I never did find out what happened to most of them. But they have never been erased from my heart. On the night of December 2, I began walking south. Church members, including Won Pil Kim, and I followed behind a long line of refugees that extended about seven and a half miles. We even took with us a member who could not walk properly. He had been among those who followed me in Heungnam Prison. His family name was Pak. He had been released before me. When I found him in his home, all the other members of his family had left for the South. He was alone in the house with a broken leg. I placed him on a bicycle and took him with me. The North Korean army had already recaptured the flat roads for military use, so we traveled across frozen rice paddies heading south as quickly as we could. The Chinese army was not far behind us, but it was difficult to move quickly when we had someone with us who could not walk. Half the time the road was so bad that I carried him on my

back and someone else pushed the empty bicycle along. He kept saying he didn't want to be a burden to me and tried several times to take his own life. I convinced him to go on, sometimes scolding him loudly, and we stayed together until the end.

We were refugees on the run who still had to eat. We went into homes whose inhabitants had headed south before us and searched for rice or any other food that might have been left behind. We boiled anything we found, whether it was rice, barley, or potatoes. We were barely able to stay alive this way.

Father spent 40 days in North Korea looking for his disciples. He could find only two. Then he joined the thousands of refugees and went south. Won Pil Kim writes in his biography of Father titled *Father's Course and Our life of Faith*:

Even in those dangerous and uncertain times, Father returned to Pyongyang after he escaped and visited the homes of all the members who had been with him before he went to prison. If Father could not go to visit someone himself, he sent someone else to take a message that he had come back and to see how this person was faring. Father walked the 150 miles back to Pyongyang in ten days, and then for forty days visited all of his followers' homes. Father stayed until the last possible moment, until he had to escape just before the invasion of the Chinese troops. Father's home village was only three day's walk from Pyongyang, and in the forty days in Pyongyang he could easily have visited his family, but Father never even sent a message to them. He looked for all his members but not his own family. It was obvious to all of us that Father could have visited his family, but he never spared even an hour or day for them. Father could have taken just a few days to visit his own family and it might have helped his mission to have good people like them close to and serving him. But Father stuck to the principle of loving his followers more than his family.

Father brought a few things with him from prison, among them a small bag of rice flour. He walked ten days on foot, saving that rice flour until he reached Pyongyang. He never had any good food on that journey because even the food left in the fields was old and spoiled. He ate those rotten, leftover crops, yet saved the rice flour, in hopes that when he met the members in Pyongyang he could share it with them. When they were all together he mixed it with water, making it like a thick pudding, and told the members that this was how they made food to eat in prison. Then he shared it with them.

Father wanted to bring some present to his followers, even after the incredible ordeal he had undergone at Hungnam prison. Of everything he could have brought, food was the most precious to him because it meant life. Yet he walked all the way from prison without eating it until he could share it with the members. Today it is rare that we reserve something most precious to us and save it until we can share it with our members. Usually we give when we have in abundance.

I wanted to convey this incident so that you could have a glimpse of our Parents' mind toward their children. When he left Pyongyang Father said, "I came to make Pyongyang the Second Jerusalem, but it rejected me and sent me to prison." He was crying as he spoke. "Pyongyang will fall into the hands of Satan, and so we have no choice now but to leave." (*Guidance for Heavenly Tradition*)

This is just like Jesus weeping over Jerusalem: "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning those who are sent to you! How often would I have gathered your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is forsaken and desolate" (Matt. 23:37-38).

During the Korean War, it took me four months to travel by foot from North Korea to Pusan. In Korea

men wear a kind of white pajamas. Taking four months, you cannot imagine how dirty it became; it was so dirty I put it inside out. There was no sleeping place, only open space. It was December, so it was very cold when I got to Pusan. To avoid this night coldness, I went to the military harbor for labor, because it was easier to work than sleep.

In the daytime I went to the mountains; among the trees I had a place to sleep, and time for myself. I enjoyed it. When I went to work I told interesting stories, and the workers would gather around me and bring me food. But I could not live like that all the time, so I had a small hut, hardly better than a dog house, a very simple dwelling place with mud and rocks on the walls and roof. There was no flat land where I was going to build. So I built up a slope. Where I built it there is a spring which passes through the middle of the floor. With boxes I made a temporary roof. The size of the room was about six feet long. Still I wore those four-month-old clothes.

There was nowhere to put them in the laundry. In that humble situation spiritually chosen people found me. Even though I wore those clothes, they came. (*God's Warning to the World*)

We arrived finally on January 27, 1951. Busan was filled with refugees from the north. It felt like the whole country had gathered there. Any accommodation fit to live in was filled already. Our tiny place had barely enough room to sit. Our only option was to go into the woods at night, keeping warm as best we could, and then return to the city by day to look for food.

My hair, which was kept short during my prison time, had now grown back. My trousers, mended from the inside with cotton from a sleeping quilt, had become threadbare. My clothes were saturated so fully with an oily grime that raindrops in heavy rain were not absorbed into the cloth but rather simply rolled off.

Almost nothing was left of the soles of my shoes,



although the upper part was mostly still there. I might as well have been walking barefoot. The fact was simply that I was the lowest of the low, a beggar among beggars. There was no work to be had, and we had no money in our pockets. The only way we could eat was to beg.

Yet even while begging for food, I maintained my dignity. If someone refused to help, I would say in a clear and confident voice, "Listen. If you do not help people like us who are in need, you will have great difficulties if you hope to receive blessings in the future!" People would give when faced with such thoughts. We took the food we gathered this way to a flat area where we all could sit together. Dozens of people like us ate in such places. We had nothing, and even had to beg for food, but a warm friendship always flowed among us. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father says he and Won Pil Kim built a mud hut in Pusan (also spelled Busan):

Eventually, Won Pil Kim and I climbed up to Beom-net-gol in Beom-il Dong and built a house. Because this area was near a cemetery, there was nothing nearby except a rocky ravine. We had no land we could call our own, so we leveled a section of the steep slope and built a home there. We didn't even have a shovel! We took a small shovel from someone's kitchen and returned it before the owner realized it was missing. Won Pil Kim and I broke rocks, dug the earth, and carried up gravel. We mixed mud and straw to make bricks, then stacked them up to make the walls. We got some empty ration boxes from an American base, flattened them out, and used them as the roof. We laid down a sheet of black plastic for the floor. Even simple huts are built better than this. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)



Later that year, on a windy November day, my wife showed up at the door of the Beom-net-gol hut. There standing with her was a seven year- old boy, my son, who was born the year I left home. I had left that day simply to go pick up some rice but went to Pyongyang instead. The years had passed, and now he had grown into a young boy. I could not bring myself to look him in the eye, nor could I reach out to stroke his face and embrace him in joy. I just stood there like a stone statue, frozen in place, speechless.

My wife did not have to say a word. I felt the pain and suffering this poor mother and child had to experience in the midst of war. Even before this visit, I knew where they were living and what their situation was, but I was not yet to the point where I could take care of my family. I knew this, and I had asked her several times, even before our marriage, “Please trust me and wait just a little longer.” When the time was right, I planned to go get them. But in this situation, as they stood in the door, the right time had not yet come. The hut, our church, was small and shabby. A number of members ate there and lived there with me to study God’s word. I could not bring my family there.

My wife took a look around the hut, expressed great disappointment, and turned to leave. She and my son set off down the steep path. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

## **1954 — UNIFICATION CHURCH**

On May 1, 1954 the Messiah founded what became to be called the Unification Church that was created as a temporary organization to restore the failure of Christianity and lift up the Messiah. Korea was in rubble because of the Korean War. In the midst of this devastation the Messiah put up a little sign on a dilapidated building with the big words: Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. He cried a river of tears at a rock near his hut in Pusan now called the “Rock of Tears” and at his humble church in Seoul. He did not weep for himself but because he felt God’s broken heart. People were amazed when they met him and heard him speak and pray.

The following are some comments he made about founding this “association” that had the incredible goal of uniting a tragically divided Christianity:

### **HUNDREDS OF DENOMINATIONS**

Christianity has been fragmented into hundreds of denominations in the process of its 2,000 years of struggle and development. Then I attempt to unite them! People wonder what means I will use to unite them. Bayonets? Force? Dictatorial methods? All kinds of rumors have spread.

By what means can I unite Christianity throughout the world? By the Holy Spirit. Hence the name Holy Spirit Association. Do you understand? Not by fists or bayonets, but by the Holy Spirit. We cannot unite by human power, but by the power of the Holy Spirit, by the mobilization of the spirit world. It is more difficult to mobilize the spirit world than to mobilize human beings. (5-1-81)

When I began the Unification Church in Korea, our headquarters was a small shabby house. On May 1, 1954, I set up a small plaque in front of that shabby house, probably the smallest sign you could find in history, but the biggest words ever spoken: “Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity.” The biggest words, but the smallest

sign and smallest house—that is the way the Unification Church began!

The room was so small that when I lay down, my head hit one wall and my feet hit another wall. I was utterly penniless at that time, and that shabby house was not even owned by the church but was rented.

### **RELIGIOUS PATH**

I am like a rock and no one can entice me away from God's will. There were many women who actually wrote love letters to me with their own blood, showing their genuine devotion to me. The religious path is not easy because of the many temptations around, and you have no idea what it takes to lay the foundation. But I have done it and I am freely sharing the fruits of it with you. No one has the right to complain; rather, continually be grateful and put yourself in a meek position. Even now, that is my basic attitude toward God. After all the dispensational success so far, I still put myself in a humble position before God.

If anyone truly knew me internally then he just could not help but be crushed by sorrow. Spiritually enlightened people who can receive revelations and instructions in their prayers are the people who stay. When they pray about me God's response is always the same; He responds to their prayer in tears because when God thinks about His lonely champion here on earth, God just weeps. The vast entanglement of human history seems utterly impossible to ever reorganize, and even God hardly knew where to begin the dispensation. But one lonely man found the secret and lived through everything to bring the movement this far. Even for God that was something to behold.

Day after day I continuously wept. My eyes became swollen and painful because the tears poured out in gallons. I could not even open my eyes to the sunlight. So many tears were shed in laying the foundation of this church. (5-1-77)

## NOT A CHURCH

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, written when he was 90 years old Father says in 1954 he was not founding a church. He says he:

...hung out a sign that read “Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity.”

We chose this name to signify that we belonged to no denomination, and we certainly had no plans to create a new one. *World Christianity* refers to all of Christianity worldwide and both past and present. *Unification* reveals our purpose of oneness, and *Holy Spirit* is used to denote harmony between the spiritual and physical worlds built on the love of the father-son relationship at the center. Our name is meant to say, “The spiritual world, centering on God, is with us.”

In particular, unification represents my purpose to bring about God’s ideal world. Unification is not union. Union is when two things come together. Unification is when two become one. “Unification Church” became our commonly known name later, but it was given to use by others. In the beginning, university students referred to us as “the Seoul Church.”

I do not like using the word *kyo-hoi* in its common usage to mean church. But I like its meaning from the original Chinese characters. *Kyo* means “to teach”, and *Hoi* means “gathering.” The Korean word means, literally, “gathering for teaching.” The word for religion, *jong-kyo*, is composed of two Chinese characters meaning “central” and “teaching,” respectively. When the word *church* means a gathering where spiritual fundamentals are taught, it has a good meaning. But the meaning of the word *kyo-hoi* does not provide any reason for people to share with each other. People in general do not use the word *kyo-hoi* with that meaning. I did not want to place ourselves in the separatist type of category. My hope was for the rise of a church without denomination. True

religion tries to save the nation, even if it must sacrifice its own religious body to do so; it tries to save the world, even at the cost of sacrificing its nation; and it tries to save humanity, even if this means sacrificing the world. By this understanding, there can never be a time when the denomination takes precedence.

It was necessary to hang out a church sign, but in my heart I was ready to take it down at any time. As soon as a person hangs a sign that says “church,” he is making a distinction between church and not church. Taking something that is one and dividing it into two is not right. This was not my dream. It is not a path I chose to travel. If I need to take down that sign to save the nation or world, I am ready to do so at any time.

Not long after Father founded HSA-UWC some students from a well-known Christian university joined. Then several of their professors joined after they came to the church to investigate what became of their students. One of them was Miss Young Oon Kim who went on to become the first missionary to America in 1959. The students were expelled and the professors fired. This was another tragic failure in God’s providence because once again Christianity failed to unite with Father. The following is from a book for children on Sun Myung Moon’s life that tells of how Professor Kim joined the humble little Unification Church:

In Seoul, there were several universities where young students studied for their careers. One of these universities was for girls only. (Or we can call them women.) Its name was Ehwa University.

Mr. Eu was witnessing to everyone he knew; and one of these people was his relative, Mrs. Yang. She was a music teacher at Ehwa University.

When he first told her about Teacher Moon and the new revelation, she didn’t want to go. After all, university professors are very important people. They have to think of their reputations. Still, she was

curious about the changes in Mr. Eu's life; and one day, her curiosity got the best of her. Mrs. Yang was a rather spiritual woman. She could sense what was going on around her spiritually, and she could often feel whether something was good or bad, whether it was from God or not.

She listened to Mr. Eu's lectures politely, but skeptically. As the minutes and hours passed, however, she felt a strange excitement growing inside her.

"I feel God in this place," she was thinking. "And the teaching makes a lot of sense."

When the last lecture came to an end, suddenly without warning, she jumped up before the little group and sang a song. She had never heard this song before, and neither had anyone else! Spirit world was singing through her.

It was like the room came to life. Everyone caught the feeling of joy and felt like dancing and laughing and singing. It was a great moment.

Mrs. Yang's life was changed that day. When she returned to the university, she told many people about her experience. Even though she was a respected professor, she didn't care anymore what people thought of her.

The word soon got around at the university that a young fellow in a dilapidated house was teaching something interesting, and people were getting inspired. Students started investigating. They told others about it, and the numbers multiplied.

Those who came felt something spiritual happening in their lives, and it became hard for them to concentrate on their studies. They returned again and again when they should have been studying their lessons.

Soon, the teachers began to notice a change in their students.

“Why are so many of the girls absent lately?” they asked each other. “Is there a sickness going around?”

“I don’t know of any sickness,” said one. “Anyway, they never stay home just because they’re sick.”

“True, true,” responded another. “Besides, their minds seem to be off somewhere else all the time.”

“Yes, and their eyes sparkle,” complained still another.

“One of them told me she is visiting a man who teaches new things about the Bible—and something about the Messiah coming to Korea — now.” “Sounds like some wild-eyed fanatic!”

“It certainly does,” they all agreed. They decided to report it to the officials in charge of the university.

The president and the administrators talked it over then. How much should they be worried? After a big discussion, they decided they would take a wait-and-see attitude. Perhaps the students would get tired of going there, especially since many of them were in their final year and were looking forward to graduating.

Then, parents got word that their girls were spending time with a very strange man. It was a great privilege to attend a university. The parents had worked hard during all those years of war and had made many sacrifices in order to send their children there, so they didn’t want anything to go wrong now. They were VERY upset and went straight to the university president to complain.

“We didn’t send our girls here to run off with some crazy man,” they stormed. “We want you to put a stop to it—and NOW!”

“Yes, yes, of course,” agreed the president. “We’ll take care of it right away.” He certainly didn’t want the university to get a bad reputation.



The very next day, an announcement was made, “Students may no longer go to Moon Sun Myung’s house. It is off limits starting today.”

Some of the students obediently stopped going. But by now, many of them were on fire for God. All their lives, they had been taught to obey their parents and teachers; but for the first time, they understood that God should be obeyed first. So they continued going to Father’s little church, sneaking out of the dormitory every chance they got.

Soon they were outcasts at the university. No one wanted to sit near them. No one wanted to be seen talking to them. Everyone seemed to be afraid of them. You would think they had leprosy or something.

Meanwhile, the administrators decided to try another tactic. They would send one of their teachers to hear the lectures; then this teacher could explain logically to the students what was wrong with the teachings. Intelligent students would listen to reason.

When the chosen teacher arrived at the little church, she listened very carefully and took many notes. By the end of three days, however, she got so inspired that she became a member herself!

The officials at the university were in a rage. How could this happen? What was going on anyway?

They decided to send another professor. Again, there were the lectures, the note taking, and the three days. Then the same thing happened—the professor joined the church!

The frustrated administrators still didn’t want to give up. What to do? What to do? They decided to send one of the most important people at the university—their respected Dean of Students.

Again, God worked. This lady’s heart was moved, and she became one of the most devoted and most loved members ever. Her name was Mrs. Won Bok

Choi! The administrators just couldn't believe this was happening! They talked it over at length, and decided to try just one more time. They chose a professor who had studied the Christian religion and other religions. She had graduated from three seminaries and was very intelligent. She was also the type of person who was logical, and didn't get emotional about things. She was expected to become president of Ehwa some day. This woman would NEVER get swept off her feet by some crazy preacher. She was Miss Young Oon Kim.

At that time, she was quite ill from a kidney disease, but she agreed to check it out. She found the little church, and taking off her shoes, she entered without a word. Her face was serious as she sat down for the lectures. Father sat beside Mr. Eu, his eyes lowered in silent prayer.

In the next room, many of the members, especially the students and teachers from Ehwa, had gathered to pray for her. They had drilled a little hole in the wall, so they could take turns watching her. This would be a crucial set of lectures, because, if SHE went to the president with a negative report that would be it for them. They would be forbidden to attend the church forever.

They prayed really hard all through Mr. Eu's lectures. She listened politely. What was she thinking? No one could tell. On and on went the lectures—one hour, two hours, three, four. Nothing happened. She just listened and took notes.

Then Mr. Eu came to the part about spirit world. As he described the spirit mind and spirit body, life after death, and so on, she looked a little more interested. No one knew that she had been trying for years to find out more about spirit world. She had been greatly inspired by a man named Swedenborg, who had written a book about the spirit world. It was a great book; yet it did not answer all the questions

she had. In fact, she had found no one who could answer them.

Now, Mr. Eu was answering all her questions. On the outside, her face looked interested but calm. Inside, she was feeling growing excitement.

After the lecture, she hid her excitement and asked many questions, and even debated with Mr. Eu, trying to prove him wrong. But he had a good answer for every question. When Father spoke to her, she felt even more inspired.

As the three days went by, she noticed that, while she was at the church, the pain from her kidney disease disappeared. When she went home in the evening, however, the pain returned. In the days ahead, whenever she doubted the Divine Principle and argued with Mr. Eu and Father, the pain got stronger; but whenever she believed, the pain went away.

Finally, she had to admit this was God's answer to her lifelong prayers. She decided to join this little group of people who said they would change the world.

Meanwhile, the university president was anxiously awaiting her return. When she finally arrived with her report, it wasn't what he wanted to hear at all.

"I have studied the Bible for many years and prayed for answers," she began, "and now I know it was all for the purpose of finding this man, Moon Sun Myung. It was all preparation to follow him and help him. It has been made clear to me that he has been sent by God to do even greater things than Jesus." When he heard these words, he was greatly disappointed, to say the least! You just didn't say things like that in a Christian school. "Good-bye, Kim Sun Sengnim," he was barely able to utter. "With you or without you, I will end this craziness."

## EXPELLED

That very day, he summoned the students and professors who had joined Father's group.

"Students and teachers at Ehwa are expected to conduct themselves in a respectable manner at all times," he said. "And YOU are a disgrace to our university—the scum of the earth. I should just kick you out here and now, but; out of the kindness of my heart, I have decided to give you one more chance. I'm giving you a choice. Choice number one: if you stop going to Moon's so-called church today, you may continue to attend the university. Choice number two: if you do not stop going, you will be expelled from school, effective immediately."

Now, this was a most difficult choice. Attending a university in Korea meant earning lots of money and having a comfortable life. It was right after the war, and they knew what poverty was like. Some of these young ladies had studied very, very hard for many years, just so they could attend university. Their parents had made big sacrifices for them.

They talked it over with each other, and many decided they couldn't give up graduation, after all. Out of 100 or so students there were fourteen brave women who decided to stand by God and True Father. "We love Heavenly Father, now. We love Moon Son-sengnim, and we believe the *Divine Principle* is true," they affirmed. "And no university president can force us to give it up."

They were expelled from the university.

In the case of the five professors, they were fired. Their positions had paid well and gave them much respect, but now it was unlikely that they would ever have another chance to teach in a university.

As they walked out, their heads were held high, and they smiled. They felt as if they were being decorated by heaven. A gold star from heaven is a

million times more valuable than a diploma or job at Ehwa.

When they arrived back at the church, they were received as heroes. That night, there was a great prayer meeting, and God touched each one of those brave women. As they prayed, they were given the gift of speaking in tongues and prophesying about the future, just like the early Christians after the death of Jesus.

They could never fully explain to anyone else exactly how they felt; it was such a deep feeling. But whenever they looked into each other's eyes, they understood each other. And whenever Heavenly Father and True Father looked at them, they understood—and loved them dearly.

Bo Hi Pak in *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon* writes about this incident that occurred around 1955:

#### **THE DARK CLOUDS OF PERSECUTION**

Ewha Women's University and Yonsei University had been established and continued to run by Christian educational foundations. Syngman Rhee was president of Korea at the time, and his administration was so strongly Christian in character that it would not be an exaggeration to say that the country was under a Christian administration. The vice president of Ehwa University was Maria Park, the wife of Ki Boong Lee, speaker of the National Assembly. Lee, who would later serve as Korea's vice president, was already one of the most powerful men in the country. In this way, the two universities were in the highest echelons of power within the Rhee administration.

Established religions tend to categorize newer religions as heretical. At this time, Christianity in Korea wielded power in much the same way that Judaism did two thousand years ago when it called Jesus an agent of the devil. The Unification Church

was preaching the Second Coming of Jesus and insisting that the Second Coming had already occurred. To the established churches, this meant that the Unification Church was even more worrisome than other heresies. To Christians who believed that Jesus was God Himself, the Unification Church was a monstrosity whose existence they could never accept. Thus, they began a campaign of intense persecution with the goal of crucifying the Unification Church.

In addition, Korea's political establishment contributed to the persecution with all its powers, even though the constitution of the Republic of Korea allowed freedom of religion. And even though Ehwa Women's University, Yonsei University, and other Christian schools accepted students who believed in Confucianism or Buddhism, and even accepted atheists, when its young professors and students began to flock to the Unification Church in their search for truth, these schools decided that they had to take action.

They sent Dr. Kim to investigate. She joined and told the leaders of the university: "To me, religion has to do with my eternal life. That means that if I find something to be God's truth, then I cannot turn away from it even if it means that I must give up everything else in my life."

Maria Park asked her husband to do what he could to crush the little church. He "went to the minister of internal affairs, whose duties included overseeing and directing all police activity in the nation. It was from this point that the power of the state began to be used against the Unification Church.

"The action by the university in this matter remains a major blot on the history of Christianity in Korea. The persecution of the Unification Church did not end here. Christian universities, with the support from established Christian denominations, lobbied the government of President Syngman Rhee to bring the full force of its

iron fist to bear against the Unification Church, which resembled the early Christian church in many respects. ...the Unification Church became a victim of prejudice and oppression during its early years as a new religion.”

Father said of this time in the 1950s:

Because of the devastating effects of the Korean War, the foundation of the new independent government was demolished. Many rich people in Korea fled the country when they saw the war coming. Likewise, Christian ministers wanted to get their families out of the country. Thus the leadership inside of Korea was full of confusion. This chaotic situation gave the Unification Church an opportunity for a new beginning. It was a chance for us to make a new foundation, even to the point where we could have an impact on Christian society and the government. Thus the confusion and chaotic situation of Korean society at that time could be utilized by God. It was the opportunity for the heavenly dispensation to be launched again.

By 1954, I was able to lay sufficient foundation to organize the official church under the name of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. Still there was incredible opposition and persecution from both the government and established Christianity. Two thousand years ago, Judaism was supposed to be in the Abel position and guide the Israel nation and the governmental power. That was the original lineup. By the same token, the Unification Church was supposed to be in the Abel position and guide the Korean government and influence society. That was what was supposed to happen.

The climax of persecution came in this way: the American missionaries, who were primarily Presbyterian and Methodist, had been working in Korea and had built some universities. One of them

was Ewha University, a women's university, and the other was a men's school, Yonsei University. A large number of students from those two schools joined the Unification Church at that time. Thus the government, as well as the Christian missionaries, saw this as a dangerous thing and they began to pursue and develop their opposition against the Unification Church. One day those two universities announced the expulsion of all the students and professors who were members of the Unification Church, which caused a big uproar.

Each year on my birthday, I did not celebrate with a feast but rather, I would fast. That was a condition for our members for many years. I began this road myself from the very bottom—from the laborer's position—and climbed up, step-by-step.

I never wore formal attire, a tie or a nice suit as I do now. A workman doesn't dress up every day to go to work and I always dressed like a workman. Until 1970, I even wore humble and coarse attire to Sunday Service. I preached in such clothing. I'm sure you find it hard to imagine such a time. Likewise, I never ate my meals at a table. I would just eat humble things like rice balls and radish, picking them up with my hands, not even using a spoon or chopsticks. That was part of the road of indemnity. (1-2-87)

During the 1950s he said, "I wore old used clothing bought at a second-hand shop." (*Theory of Education*)

Father writes in his autobiography:

Most of our members had attended other churches before joining our church. This was a big reason our church was treated as an enemy by established churches. When Professor Yoon Young Yang, one of the Ewha professors, joined our church, she was taken to the police station to be interrogated. There she



discovered that some eighty Christian ministers had written letters to the authorities criticizing our church. Clearly it was not the case that we had done something wrong. Rather, we were seen as posing a threat to the power of certain people and institutions.

It was their vague feelings of fear and their extreme factionalism that drove them in their efforts to suppress our church. People from many religious groups were attracted to our church and its new teachings. I would say to our members, "Why did you come here? Go back to your churches," and almost threaten them as I tried to chase them away. But they would soon return. The people who flocked to see me would not listen to anyone. They wouldn't listen to their teachers or their parents. They wanted to hear me speak. I wasn't paying them or feeding them, but they believed in what I taught and kept coming to me. The reason was that I opened a way for them to resolve their frustrations. Before I knew the truth, I, too, was frustrated. I was frustrated when I looked up to heaven and when I looked at the people around me. This is why I could understand the frustrations of the people who came to our church. They had questions about life, and they could not find answers. The word of God I conveyed answered their questions with clarity. Young people who sought me out found answers in the words that I spoke. They wanted to come to our church and join me on my spiritual journey, no matter how difficult it might be.

I am the person who finds the way and opens it. I guide people along the path to heal broken families and rebuild the society, nation, and world so that we can finally return to God. People who come to me understand this.

They want to go with me in search of God. How can people find fault with this? All we were doing was going in search of God. And for this we were subjected to all manner of persecution and criticism.

Unfortunately, during the period when our church was involved in the heresy controversy, my wife made matters even more difficult for me. After

our meeting in Busan, she and her relatives began to demand that I either quit the church immediately and start life with her and our son or else give her a divorce. They even came to Seodaemun Prison during my incarceration there to put the divorce papers before me, demanding I place my stamp on them. I know how important marriage is in the effort to establish God's peaceful world, so I endured their demands in silence.

She also subjected members of our church to horrible abuse. Personally I could endure. I did not mind her insults and reckless treatment of me, but it was difficult for me to stand by and watch her offensive behavior toward our members. She stormed into our church at all hours to curse our members, destroy church property, and take items that belonged to the church. She even threw water containing human feces at members. When she came, it was impossible for us to hold worship service. In the end, as soon as I came out of Seodaemun Prison, I acceded to the demands of her family and placed my stamp on the divorce document. I was pushed into a divorce against my own principles.

When I think of my former wife today, my heart goes out to her. The influence of her own family, which was strongly Christian, and the leadership of Korea's established churches had much to do with her behaving the way she did. She was so clear and firm in her commitment before we married.

The way she changed gives us a lesson on how much we need to fear the power of social prejudice and established concepts.

I experienced both the sorrow of divorce and the pain of being branded a heretic. But I did not bend. These were things I had to endure on my path to redeem the original sin of humanity, the things I had to endure to move forward on the path toward God's Kingdom. It is darkest before the dawn. I overcame the darkness by clinging to God and praying to Him. Other than the fleeting moments that I would spend in sleep, all my available time was spent in prayer. *(As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen)*

Father's divorce affected the world. He explains: "Within True Father's family there are children from two different mothers. Because of this wilderness course Father lost everything in a way. Just as Father had to go through the wilderness course when he lost his first wife through divorce, now the entire world is experiencing the same thing through the breakdown of families. It completely lost God's True Love family center. God's value system was lost." (2-16-97)

Father writes of how he moved from Pusan to Seoul and started with a tiny building:

We needed a place where our members could gather and offer services, so we took out a loan of two million won and purchased a house in poor repair on a hillside in Cheongpa Dong. It was one of many houses categorized then as "enemy property," meaning that it had been vacant since being abandoned by Japanese who left Korea at the time of our nation's liberation. It was a small house with only about 710 square feet of floor space. It was at the end of a long and narrow alleyway. Approaching the house was like going through a long, dark tunnel. All the pillars and walls were covered with dirt, which made us wonder what had been going on there before we arrived. I worked with the young people of our church for four days with a sodium hydroxide solution to scrub off all the dirt. After our move to the Cheongpa Dong church, I could hardly sleep. I would sit on the floor of the main bedroom crouched over in prayer until three or four in the morning. I might take a nap until five, but then I would get up and start the day's activities. I continued this lifestyle for seven years. Even though I was getting only one or two hours of sleep a day, I never felt sleepy during the day. My eyes shone brightly, like the morning star. I never felt tired.

My mind was so full of things to do that I did not even want to waste time eating. Instead of having people take time to set a table for my meals, I ate on the floor and crouched over my food to eat it. "Pour out your

dedication! Pour it out, even if you are sleepy! Pour it out until you are exhausted!” I kept repeating these phrases to myself. I prayed in the midst of continued opposition and false accusations with the thought that I was planting seeds that would someday reap a bountiful harvest. If the harvest could not be reaped in Korea, then I was confident that it would be reaped elsewhere in the world.

A year after my release from prison, our church had four hundred members. As I prayed, I would call out their names one by one. Their faces would pass through my mind even before I called their names. Some would be crying, some laughing. In my prayers, I could tell how each person was doing, including whether they were suffering from illness.

Sometimes, as I called out their names in prayer, I would get an inspiration that a particular person would come to the church that day. The person would come, without fail. When I would go to someone who had appeared sick to me in my prayer and ask, “Are you sick?” the person would confirm it. Members were amazed that I would know they were sick without being told. Each time they asked, “How do you do that?” I would answer with a simple smile.

Some were attracted to our church more because of such paranormal phenomena than because of the teachings. Many people think that spiritual powers are most important. The phenomena often called miracles, however, tend to confuse people in the society at large. A faith that relies on unexplained or miraculous occurrences is not a healthy faith. All sin must be restored through redemption. It cannot be done by relying on spiritual powers. As our church began to mature, I stopped talking to members about the things that I was seeing with my heart’s eyes.

How often I prayed with tears through the night? Blood and sweat saturated the floor boards where I prayed, with no chance to dry. I have lived my entire life praying and preaching, but even now I tremble when I stand before a group of people. This is

because to stand in such a position and speak about public matters can mean that many lives will be saved or that many will be lost. It is a matter of utmost importance to me that I can lead the people who hear my words onto the path of life. These are the moments when I draw a clear line on the crossroads between life and death. In the early time of our church I wore an old U.S. military jacket and fatigues dyed black and preached with such fervor that I dripped with sweat and tears. Not a day went by without my weeping out loud. My heart would fill with emotion, and tears would pour from my eyes and stream down my face. Those were times my spirit seemed on the verge of leaving my body. I felt as though I were on the verge of death. My clothes were soaked with sweat, and beads of sweat rolled down from my head.

If the Christians had accepted the new Messiah in those three years between 1945 and 1948 then they would have had the power to stop the Soviets from controlling the North. The Korean people should have treated the Messiah like a king. A united Korea led by the young Messiah would have become God's first nation. Can you imagine the excitement that would have created? Soon the President of the United States and all other leaders would have met the Messiah. The teachings of the *Divine Principle* would have covered the earth.

There would never have been a Korean War in which 30,000 American men died and hundreds of thousands were injured. There would never have been a river of blood from the two million Koreans who died. There would never have been the agonizing separation of North and South Korea that has divided families for over 70 years.

### **WORLD PEACE**

Jesus was not able to go to Rome, but Sun Myung Moon would have gone to Washington D.C. and converted the entire Senate and Congress. American Christian leaders would have been converted and led by the young King of Kings would have been a powerful

united force of God that would have ended communism quickly. The Soviet Union would have been converted. The atheistic ideology of communism would have died. By 1952—just seven years after the Messiah began his mission—the Kingdom of Heaven on earth would have begun and finally God’s dream of world peace would have come true.

Because government and religious leaders treated Sun Myung Moon the same way as the government and religious leaders of Israel treated the previous Messiah, Jesus, the punishment brought on by themselves was a terrible division between North and South Korea and the terrible worldwide division between the ideology of the Left and the Right—of free nations under democratic rule and slave nations under authoritarian rule. Because the Messiah was not believed and loved, he had to go the way of Jesus and be tortured. He had to suffer even more than Jesus.

Father said, “...during my first three years of public ministry, just as Jesus did, I had to go through severe hardships culminating in the torture of prison life, which was more for me than Jesus’ cross.” (“Jacob’s Course and Our Life in Faith” May 27, 1973)

Korea was established under the protection of Christian nations of the democratic world. At that time, Sun Myung Moon had expected to start in the highest position with the famous leaders who founded a country in order to fulfill its destiny of the new Providence. Then, because the ministers who were representative of the Christian Church were opposed to Sun Myung Moon, God’s will was blocked everywhere.

### **HISTORICAL MISSION**

Korea was a nation formed on God’s side centering on the Christian Church. Because a few ministers who represented Christianity were opposed to Sun Myung Moon, a way opened that nationwide the Christian churches could oppose Rev. Moon. Rev. Moon had prepared everything for this for three

years from 1945 to 1948. In this period, Rev. Moon worked individually. But nobody knew that he had a historical mission. Because I was in that position the Christian Church could oppose Rev. Moon. I knew that God prepared a lot of spiritual groups. Even though God prepared internally, if the Christian Church opposes with the rest of the nation, it is in the position of Judaism and Israel which opposed Jesus Christ.

During the three years from 1945-1948, Rev. Moon was not welcomed by the Christian Churches and nation. They were frantically opposed to me with the national power and foundation. That was the reason it was necessary to pay restoration by indemnity of Jesus Christ's position. Because the people who led the Christian Church divided with Rev. Moon, it became the motivation to separate as South and North ...in 1948 (*Way of Unification* chapter 3)

“The division between North and South Korea was not accidental but was related to the heavenly principle and the failure of Korea and the United States to fulfill their responsibilities. Because of that failure, the United States, England and the rest of the democratic world began to decay.” (5-1-81)

### **Suffering Nation**

The nation which receives the Messiah has to be in the position of object as well. That nation has to suffer. Therefore, the nation in which the messianic mission begins must be in the position of suffering and has to go through untold tribulation. That nation and all her people must be in a position of despair. Then the new hope of truth will appear to the people and the nation together. With the new acceptance of the truth, there will be new hope, new life and a new history. With the liberation of Korea in 1945, hope came to that suffering land. This year, as far as Japan was concerned, was a day of doom. But as far as

Korea was concerned, this year marked a day of hope.

### **New Day of Hope**

Therefore, it was my mission at that time to connect that new day of hope to the family, the people and the nation. In such a way God can restore His people, His nation, His tribe and His family. This is the promising situation in which Korea is placed in the position of the restored Israel. Since Israel was the nation where Jesus lost hope, when the Lord of the Second Advent comes, he will gain hope and restore his nation to order. Jesus died because the people did not have faith in him. The way we regain that lost foundation is by having hope and faith, by accepting the Lord of the Second Advent.

In Korea, it was very important for the Christian population to actually serve as a base on which to accept the Lord. At that particular time, every nation of great power was in a position to protect this little country of Korea. Therefore I intended to start my public ministry by developing good relations with the people in the highest positions of power but within the most important groups in Korea at that time there were several Christian leaders who violently persecuted us, and I was thus unable to carry out my initial plan.

### **Vast Historical Significance**

Those Christian leaders on the highest levels not only influenced other people in the highest level, but they also influenced the entire Christian population in Korea. God's preparation was done in three years time—1945, 1946 and 1947, until South Korea's independence in 1948, I was, on the surface, just one man, just an individual. Nobody in Korea knew of my vast historical significance. Since I knew the cause of Jesus' frustration, I developed my tactic to perfection. I developed such a wise tactic so that I would not repeat the fate of Jesus. At the same time,



God knew that my path was not going to be smooth, so He prepared, in His own way, many spiritual groups who would testify to me. It was amazing to know how precisely God planned everything according to the *Principle*. But no matter how much God prepared the path of ministry for the Lord of the Second Advent, there was a certain period in which man had to fulfill his condition of faith just as in the time of Jesus. The Christians and the Korean government rejected me in disbelief, the same failure that happened in the time of Jesus. Therefore, I could not go through the original course. I had to alter my direction.

At the time of Jesus, the Jewish religious leaders as well as the government used their power to persecute Jesus, and they had him crucified. When this history was repeated in Korea, the Korean Christian population used its power to destroy my life. I had to face the persecution of the Christian population. When this division occurred, the nation had to be divided. Seen from this perspective, the communist invasion was inevitable. Externally I had to go up against the God-denying power of communism. God had prepared Christianity to accept the coming Lord. When it failed to fulfill this mission, the Korean Christian churches were doomed to new persecution.

Communism became strong and aggressive.... (7-1-73)

Father says, "...in order to come to this particular mission, I walked a more miserable path than any man ever walked." (7-1-73)

**“WORLD UNIFICATION AND NORTH-SOUTH UNIFICATION WILL BE ACCOMPLISHED BY TRUE LOVE” February 10, 2000:**

## **TRUE VIEW OF HISTORY**

As a boy of 15, I came into contact with the will of Heaven through prayer, and throughout my life after that I have devoted all my spirit and energy to accomplishing God's Will. I came to understand that the fundamental cause of human unhappiness is that the relationship with God was severed by the fall. As a result of the fall, human beings fell into a state of spiritual ignorance. In an effort to resolve the fundamental problems this has caused among humans and in the universe, I have spoken publicly on more than 10,000 occasions in many places around the world and set forth a true view of humanity, a true view of the world, and a true view of history based on Godism.

These speeches have been translated into twelve languages and published in three hundred volumes. The contents of these speeches are not the result of a comprehensive study of historical documents. My conclusions are not the result of scholarly research. Instead, I arrived at these answers to basic and fundamental questions through my communications with both the visible and invisible worlds.

## **NATURAL SURRENDER**

I do not believe South Korea should attempt to overcome North Korea militarily. Instead, we must love our nation more than they love theirs. We must have the philosophical strength to love Heaven even more than they love communism. We must become capable men and women of character who can bring about their natural surrender. There is no other way for us to absorb North Korea.

In other words, we must become able to impress them with how we live. We must be able to amaze those people armed with communist ideology in terms of our outlook on life and our standard of character.

## **“THE GLOBE IS OUR HOME” June 8, 1986:**

As the American home crumbles, the homes of the world crumble, too, because America is in the position to spread its virus to the rest of the world. Therefore, we cannot let this country crumble. Your land, your home is in trouble; it is on fire. The fall of man crept into the family, so Satan’s ultimate goal is destruction of the family unit. Then there will be nothing for man to hold on to. That is Satan’s strategy and that is what he is doing in America today.

Somebody has to become the flag-bearer, to go forward and accomplish the mission. The champions will not come out of the traditional Christian churches or the United States government. They will not come from the civil service. The only hope today to bring God’s will to the American home is the Unification Church.

### **TRUE HOPE**

Only Reverend Moon and the Unification Church represent true hope for this country and world, as well as hope for God. Each one of you has been commissioned with a task today. You are now inheriting this challenge and mission to save America, save Christianity, and liberate the communist world.

Father says, “When the Lord of the Second Advent came, he was supposed to save the entire humanity from Hell. However, America, centered upon Christianity, failed to recognize him. As a result of this, America has been perishing in the past forty years. It is equivalent to the Israelites at the time of Jesus. They did not receive and recognize Jesus as the Lord. Therefore, for the past 2000 years the Jewish people have been persecuted and opposed throughout the world. Likewise, America is declining to the bottom of Hell. America is in the position of the enemy nation to Reverend Moon because of this failure. But only Reverend Moon is able to apply the brakes to the downward decline of America.” (6-23-96)

In his autobiography Father writes that he sent his first two

missionaries to America in 1959: “In January 1959, we sent Young Oon Kim, one of the professors who had been fired by Ewha Womans University. Then in September of that year, we sent David S.C. Kim”

## **1960 — MESSIAH MARRIES**

In 1960 God blessed in marriage the Third Adam to a Korean woman named Hak Ja Han. He was forty-years-old and she was 17.

Father said, “The rapid change of history since 1960 is due to God’s dispensation centering upon the Unification Church. The modern historians don’t know why we’ve entered such a great transitional period.” (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

## **1965**

In 1965 Father made his first trip to America on a world tour. He did not do any sightseeing. He went to many nations and made what we call holy grounds. In America he went to all 50 states in 40 days by car. He met the handful of members in America. By the time Father visited in 1965 there were only a few hundred members. Many states had no members. In his autobiography he writes:

In 1965, I embarked on my first trip around the world. My suitcase was filled with soil and stones from Korea. My plan was that, as I traveled around the world, I would plant Korea’s soil and stones in each country to signify Korea’s linkage to the world. For ten months, I toured forty countries, including Japan, the United States, and the nations of Europe. On the day I left Seoul, hundreds of our members came in buses to see me off, and they filled the departure lounge at Kimpo Airport. In those days, going overseas was a significant event. Our members thronged to the airport on that January day with a cold strong wind blowing out of the northwest.

No one had told them to do this. They did as their hearts told them. I received their hearts with deep gratitude. At that time, we were performing mission work in ten countries, and it was my plan to increase

that to forty countries within two years. It was to lay the foundation for this that I decided to visit forty countries on my trip.

I entered the country through the airport in San Francisco, where I was met by our missionaries. From there, we toured the entire country. During the time I was touring America, I felt strongly, “This is the country that manages the whole world. The new culture that will be created in the future must rise up with America as its foundation.” During my tour of the United States, I visited every state. We rented a station wagon and drove day and night. At times, the driver would be so tired. “Listen here,” I would say, “I didn’t come here for sightseeing. I’m here to do important work. We need to go carefully.” We didn’t waste time sitting down to eat. If we had two slices of bread, a piece of sausage, and some pickles, then that was plenty of food for a meal. We ate breakfast, lunch, and dinner like this. We also slept in the car. The car was our lodging; it was our bed and our restaurant. We ate, slept, and prayed in that small car. There was nothing we couldn’t do there. I had a particular purpose to accomplish, so it was easy for me to endure minor inconveniences to the physical body.

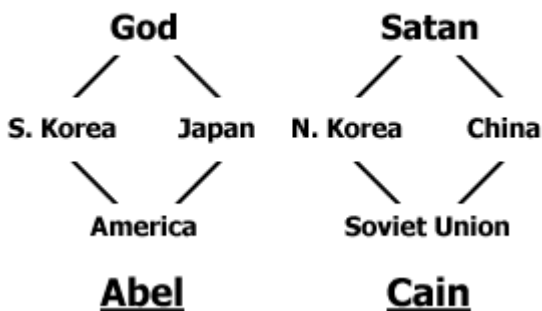
## 1971

Father came to live in America in December, 1971. He stayed for over 30 years. I do not have the space to go into all the many things Father has done. You might find the books *40 Years in America: 1959—1999: An Intimate History of the Unification Movement* and *A History of the Unification Church In America, 1959—1974: Emergence of a National Movement* interesting. For over 40 years Sun Myung Moon was the world’ leading anti-communist.

## WORLD WAR III — COLD WAR

After World War II, there was approximately 40 years of a Cold War between Christian nations and atheistic Communist nations.

## World War III – Cold War



Father explains: “After World War II, the world unified based upon Christian culture. By that unification, Satan was overcome at that moment. The allied nations and opposing nations could have been restored to God. On this foundation, if Catholics and Protestants had become one representing Christian culture and welcomed the Second Advent of the Messiah, the True Parents of humankind, the world would have been united. This would have taken place within seven years of 1945, by 1952.” (5-8-2001)

Christianity had to become the most widespread religion in the world because God has a big stake in it. He has a plan for fulfilling His dispensation through it. Unfortunately, traditional Christianity was misled by incorrect theology and St. Paul has a great responsibility for this. There are many mistaken ideas, such as Jesus came only to die. Likewise, many Christians are content to worry only about their individual salvation, disregarding the matters of this world for one’s own little cubbyhole “upstairs.” The concept of being saved by faith alone is not right either. One must fulfill love in order to go to Heaven. Without the power of love, one can never be separated from satanic bondage.

For this reason, God promised mankind that the second Messiah would come as the representative of

His original love, bringing liberation from satanic bondage. How can you recognize the second Messiah? The Messiah will teach this principle exactly, point by point, spelling it out.

Is there anyone in the world other than Reverend Moon who is teaching precise points about the original ideal of creation and the original concept of salvation centered upon original love? Even Jesus could not teach these points precisely. But the Bible promises that when the end of the world comes, we will no longer have to be taught by symbols and parables, but we will learn plainly of the Father. That is what the *Divine Principle* is all about. That is what you are receiving.

The True Mother would have come out of the Christian realm. Perhaps she would have been a British woman. It could be, why not? Once the worldwide foundation had been accomplished, I would have picked the True Mother on the world level. Imagine if the royal princess of England had become the True Mother. I am only interested in one thing—how to restore the world.

It is because our movement was rejected by Korean Christianity that our boundaries became so limited. If we had been supported, the Korean movement would have immediately become insignificant because the movement would have become worldwide and universal, with no boundaries. Let's say that the True Mother had come from Great Britain, the source of the English-speaking culture. The U.S. is in the position of son to Great Britain. It would have been very rapid and easy for America to humble itself to Britain.

With such circumstances, God's providence would have progressed very rapidly. The Messiah would

have had dominion over the world. Even in the face of total opposition, I was able to create a worldwide foundation, so imagine how much I could have accomplished in seven years if I had been given the proper welcome. Do you think I am capable of that? Communism could have been stopped at that time. It certainly would not have come as far as it has. (SMM 5-20-84)

If there had been no opposition from established Christianity forty years ago, perhaps I would have married a British woman. That's true. At that time, the Eve nation was Britain. America was born from that country, so America is the son. The son is the representative of Adam and Eve. Standing in the middle in the archangel position at that time was France. France always goes either way, every time. (SMM 9-7-86)

## **Universal Salvation**

If we think of Unification Church as an ordinary church, then we are very much mistaken. We simply could not be more wrong. The Unification Church is the center for creating true individuals, true families, true clans, the true nation, and the true world.

The idea of salvation that the average man of religion holds today, as we know, is very wrong. Their notions are based on salvation of the individual, not of the family or of the clan or of the whole universe. Individualistic thinking has no place in God's dispensation. It is the world which needs to be saved. Then the nation can be liberated, then the family, and finally the individual. It is not the other way around. In other words, heaven is such that no matter how perfect the individual may be, no matter how much he himself is saved, he cannot have a place in heaven



until everyone is in heaven. When that is achieved, the individual can have heaven.

What is different about the Unification Church is that we have no part in individual salvation. The Unification Church is where we go beyond that, tearing down all the walls and reaching out to the world. This is what Father has been doing, taking down the walls between nations, taking down the walls on the world level. That must happen before the individual can hope to be freed and saved.

We can make heaven on the earth. Do you understand? Salvation is not an individual occurrence. Centering on all things, you can get into the spiritual world. Otherwise, there is no way. This is how the Unification Church differs from all existing churches and religions. They are all based on individual salvation. We have the concept of representing the whole.

We are not here as individuals. If we do not bear that due responsibility, then we may be an individual who destroys the family, the clan, the nation, the world, the cosmos, and even God. Individualism will do that; it is that destructive.

Why did Reverend Moon come to America and go through all kinds of turmoil and troubles, even suffering imprisonment in Danbury [Connecticut]? Father has been in jail in North Korea, South Korea and Japan as well. Why did he go to jail?

What purpose did he have? Was it to save his own individual foundation? No. He went there representing the center, which has as its main purpose the salvation of all humanity.

Is it clear? Do not center on the individual. We have to live centering on all humanity. Then we come to represent God.

Every time you come to Belvedere to participate in this morning service, you are not doing it for your individual self. You should be doing it to save the world, to save the universe and cosmos. This is your armament against Satan's world, to save the universe and cosmos. This is your armament against Satan's world. Once you attain that position, Satan's side will bow down. God wants all of humanity to attain this position. Otherwise, you cannot separate from Satan and all these satanic layers surrounding you. Do you understand? You should come here in order to liberate the world from Satan. I want to train that kind of treasured person at Belvedere [New York], the site of Father's speeches.

If you have that kind of unselfish armament, you can go everywhere in Satan's world and go over it and make victory. Otherwise, there is no way. You have to know this point clearly. "I represent everything; I represent the world's people." There is no room for 'Please save me.' You are Tribal Messiahs, national Messiahs, world Messiahs, cosmic Messiahs. You should say, 'Save them instead.' If you have that kind of mission, you can bring so many results. If you go in the individualistic direction, you will be creating a miserable situation for yourself. Do you like to be in Satan's realms? No. You don't want that. You and I are in the same situation. You have to take your portion of responsibility as seriously as Father has taken his. You have to know this point clearly. (11-1-90)

### **RETURN OF JOHN THE BAPTIST**

If the young Messiah had been accepted in his first three years of ministry, then he would have gone to America. God had prepared Billy Graham to be the worldwide John the Baptist to prepare the

way for the Lord of the Second Advent. Billy Graham became nationally famous in 1949 which is the same time that he would have met the Messiah if those Christians in the John the Baptist position in Korea would have accepted him. John the Baptist was a little older than Jesus and Billy Graham is a little older than Sun Myung Moon.

### **BILLY GRAHAM WAS WORLDWIDE JOHN THE BAPTIST**

Elijah and John the Baptist have worked with Billy Graham to make him famous. He did not know they were trying to get him to accept the new Messiah anymore than John the Baptist knew that Elijah was working with him to accept Jesus. Billy Graham, like John the Baptist, rejected the Messiah. Because he and the Christian leaders have done so it is extremely difficult for the one billion Christians to accept the new Messiah because they follow and believe their leaders. God prepared Billy Graham. It is no coincidence that Billy Graham accepted Jesus in North Carolina 6 months before Sun Myung Moon met Jesus on Easter 1935 in what is today North Korea. John the Baptist was exactly 6 months older than Jesus. It is no coincidence that the future wife of Billy Graham, Ruth Bell, was attending a Christian school in Pyongyang, North Korea at the same time in the 1930s. She is the same age as the Messiah. She was a lonely teenager living away from her parents but growing in her faith at this time. God was working to prepare her to help her future husband accept the Oriental Messiah. God had hoped the three of them would have met after the first 3 years of the young Messiah's ministry. The three years from 1949-1952 Billy Graham would have introduced Father worldwide and the world would have accepted the Second Coming of Christ.

The Messiah comes to teach mankind the truth. God has worked to create a worldwide communications and transportation system to enable the Messiah to teach the world. It is no accident that in such a short time in the 20th century we have cars, planes and lightning-fast satellite communication.

This is what the *Bible* speaks of in symbolic language in Luke 17:24: "For as the lightning flashes and lights up the sky from one side to the other, so will the Son of Man be in his day." The purpose

of having a television and computer in every home is that God wants America to see the Messiah and hear the *Divine Principle*. The purpose of the Internet is to spread the good news of the *Divine Principle* to every home. “Wherever you may go, please try to spread Sun Myung Moon’s message through television or other media.” (8-1-96)

## **TECHNOLOGY**

“In Jesus’ day, the Roman Empire ruled the vast domains around the Mediterranean Sea, integrated by an advanced and extensive transportation system reaching out in all directions. This was the center of a vast Hellenistic civilization founded on the Greek language. Thus, all the necessary preparations had been made for a swift transmission of the teachings of the Messiah from Israel, where Jesus lived, to Rome and the world. Similarly, in the present era of the Second Advent, the influence of the Western powers has expanded the democratic political sphere throughout the world. The rapid progress of transportation and communication has greatly bridged the gap between East and West, and the extensive contact among languages and cultures has brought the world much closer together. These factors have fully prepared an environment in which the teachings of the returning Christ can freely and swiftly be conveyed to the hearts of all humankind. This will enable his teachings to bring rapid and profound changes all over the globe” (*Exposition of the Divine Principle*).

## **GOD OF DAY, GOD OF NIGHT**

### **THE DIVINITY OF CHRIST**

The following is the text of a video I have made about the divinity of Christ you can watch at my Rumble account. (<https://rumble.com/v2jtk0o-god-of-night-theology-explained-by-hyung-jin-moon.html>)

Hyung Jin Moon, Pastor Sean, explains the meaning of God of Day, God of Night:

At the end of Father’s earthly mission Father released the God of Day, God of Night theology. He was teaching on that literally every day at Hoon dok Hae [morning

meeting of reading Father's words]. He said all of you are from the God of Day. I am from the God of Night. He knew [his wife Hak Ja Han] the Han Mother was preparing her betrayal. She was machinating many years before. He knew that she was going to do some crazy stuff like proclaim she is God. Make statues to herself. (8-14-22)

You can see from the archangelic class (Family Federation) they have a very low Christology. They believe the Divine Principle says clearly that the Messiah is not God. That the Christians have it wrong. Father clearly explained: "I come from the God of Night. Everyone comes from the God of Day. I come before creation." Whoa! Now this of course is a high Christology. Father now explaining his true nature. The people who stand on the Father's authority [members of Sanctuary church]. We have a high Christology. We believe Father is the substantial body of God. Father is 100% man. He's 100% God.

I explained this to the young people in terms of video games. There's a video game creator or a person who's created the whole video game, the universe and the mountains and the oceans and the rivers and the bad guys. He is the creator of that video game. He creates an Avatar to go into the universe that he's created. So, when you meet his Avatar you are actually meeting the creator of the universe. He's different from any other created being in that universe. When you meet him in that digital universe you are still meeting a digital character but you're also meeting the creator of the universe when you meet that digital character. Do you understand? So, I think for young people it's much easier to understand video games. So that's an easy way, a modern way to understand. So that person that you met in that digital universe you're actually meeting the creator. There's no separation. He is actually that Avatar. He's 100% digital, but he's also 100% the creator.

The ancients had different ways of trying to explain that like it's like the sun and God the Father is like the

sun and the son of God of Christ is like the light rays of the sun and the Holy Spirit is the warmth of the light rays that we feel. So, the ancients had different ways to try to reflect on the unity of God but anyways the point is if you understand that video game example when you meet that character when you meet that Avatar you are meeting God even though he looks like just another character. He could even be like a 4 foot tall Hobbit or dwarf but still that's God in that universe. So even though when we meet Father in this universe we're meeting God just like in that video game we met that person the digital person we're actually still meeting the actual architect, the mind, the creator, the actual individual who created the entire universe where in which we dwell. It's like dimensional. So, in the same way when Father was talking about God of Night, God of Day theology then he was explaining you're meeting this Avatar, and I'm the creator of the universe. I'm one with God before creation. That's what we call in theology a high Christology and this is a very important thing because there's a uniqueness to the person of Christ. (9-22-2019)

Father knew the Han Mother [his wife Hak Ja Han] would potentially fall and betray him. ...He taught that he comes from the God of Night. That is the pre-creation God, the God before creation, outside of time and space and everybody else comes from the God of Day. That is, you're created after or post creation. So, he differentiated himself. The Principle [Exposition of the Divine Principle] says that the Messiah is not God. That he is a man. So, this was what we traditionally believed in the Unification Church. The Messiah was not God. He is a man. So we didn't have a high Christology. We had a very low theology of the Messiah. We didn't have a high Christology whereas Christianity has a very high Christology. They see Jesus Christ as God. Very very high Christology. That he also existed with the Father before creation in the Trinity and that's the whole Christian notion of that God is love and that He has his own partners. The Trinity has its own partners of love and so it can in its own system reciprocate love and so

thus does not need humanity, does not need humanity to reciprocate love with and so thus making humanity unnecessary and thus a complete act of grace. That is the conclusions that they come to generally speaking at least in modern theology. [The Exposition of the Divine Principle] has a very low Christology of the Messiah. That is we did not see him as God. We saw him born of a woman but not as God. Now when Father revealed the God of Day, God of Night theology he elevated that Christology saying that he is special as a Messiah. He is not just a man, but he is from God and that he is from the God of Night that means he is from the God before creation which means that Christ or his spirit was with God before creation. So that means we now come very close to the Christian Christology of Jesus. That is to say we went from a low Christology to a very high Christology. So people were very confused and confounded at the time. Wow. We just literally flipped. We just literally switched our theology from low to high. That's why people had this cognitive dissonance and could not adjust to that. Personally, I was so grateful that Father did that because without Father highlighting and clarifying and specifically addressing the fact of his uniqueness as Christ and that would of course mean Jesus as well. We would always be divided from Christianity. We would be closer to Islam that sees Jesus as just another prophet, and we would be divided from Christianity. This was always a theological divide that we had and it probably when I look back on and reflect on it is probably THE factor that distances us with Christianity because they have an extremely high Christology of Jesus and of the Christ. Whereas we had a low.

In the end Father elevated his messianic Christology which I am so grateful for. So grateful because it really exposed the Han Mother. She thought, well the Messiah is just a man so I can be a Messiah too. The Han Mother did that. She fell into that trap whereas in Christianity 101 you can never never never do that. You can never do that. The Messiah is completely unique.

Now we have what we call tribal messiahs. The Bible even calls Cyrus the king of Persia a Messiah. So, you can have somebody that saves other people like literally from a war or from a flood or whatever and they are called a Messiah. So when Father said I want you all to be tribal messiahs he doesn't mean that you become THE savior. You become a tribal starting point by which you lead people to salvation. That's a very critical distinction isn't it? You don't replace the necessity of Christ. The Messiah is unique and special and that matches of course better with our theology that says his lineage is special. So Father elevated his Christology and revealed that he is different and the Han Mother is not from the God of Night or the God of pre-creation. (3-23-2021)

What's amazing about the God of Day and God of Night theology that Father released especially because of the fall of the Han Mother and he knew that it would be essential to preempt that. It shows the divinity of Christ. It shows that Christ is from the God of Night, pre-creation. So he's one with the Father even before creation. That puts us in line with Christianity. We really are no different from Christianity. We have a basically, an orthodox view of the Trinity and so it has allowed us to become actually much closer. (4-2-2023)

They [Family Federation] dishonored Father. They promoted a heretical, blasphemous ideology where they basically demoted Father. Hak Ja Han made herself into God, into savior. Of course, that's fallen Eve and we called it 10 years ago. This is fallen Eve theology. This is the harlot of Babylon theology. This is not godly. Nowhere has it any place in Christian history. It's completely divergent and of course everybody said die die die to us because we told the truth. We told people what they didn't want to hear. [Hak Ja Han said she was God many times. The Korean word for God is Hananim. She would say "I am Hananim"] They didn't want to believe it. [He told her] "If you do this, Mother, you are going to be judged." We had to tell her dozens and dozens of times every time she said "I am Hananim" "No. No. Don't say that. If you say that you will be



judged.” We [Hyung Jin Nim and his older brother Kook Jin Justin Moon] had to do that. We had to tell her, “Don’t do that. Don’t go down this way.” It’s the greed of money. Money and power truly corrupts people and of course the Han Mother went that course. She started claiming she was God. Me and Kook Jin Nim were the only ones telling her: “Mommy, please don’t say that. Mommy if you do that you’re going to be judged. Don’t do that, please.” When we spoke to her we spoke to her with honorifics. We actually spoke to her quite politely. People think we’re just bastards. They’re idiots. They don’t know anything about us and they condemned us to die even though we were the ones that were saying “No. Mom. Don’t go against Father. It’s not going to be good.” And what was so sad is that what we told the people everybody was shocked. Everybody condemned us to die—go jump in a hole and die.” This made us tougher by the way. It just made us more tough because we didn’t steal anything. We didn’t take anything. They’re the ones who stole Father’s foundation. We didn’t take one penny. We had a clean conscience. We’re not going to be bought out, to sell out our Father. Why? Because we actually believe in him. We’re not like these little prostitutes going along for money. We actually believe in Father. I’ve seen it. Father is the one who saved me. (12-25-2022)

She cast us away. Why? Because we wouldn’t go along with the crazy heresy—begging her saying no just lift the Father and you Mom you will be glorified if you just lift up Father. If you just praise him and you thank him the world will be yours. All the world for eternity will praise you. “No. I am God” she would say. We couldn’t believe it. It was like being in a nightmare movie. You cannot believe somebody’s actually saying that. You cannot believe it. We are sitting in her TV room, and she’s screaming at us, “I have absolute power!”. That’s the exact term she used. That’s not a term that normal people use because it means absolute power, like tyrannical power. She’s shouting that at top of her lungs. All the attendants are listening because it’s a

marble palace. All the attendants are hearing this. We're seeing our own Mom like the Exorcist movie with the head spinning. I mean her head wasn't really spinning but it might as well have been spinning because nobody speaks that way. You never assume you're ever going to see that in your lifetime other than a movie or some science fiction or medieval fiction novels. No, this is right in front of our face. We see this craziness. We are flabbergasted. We got our mouths hanging down on the ground. I looked at Kook Jin and said, "Did you just hear that?" Oh my gosh. This is insane! Insane! Insane! (6-19-2022)

Father Moon says these powerful words on how he is special:

I am fundamentally different from you. Only the God of night teaches me. 6/21/2011

I was born of a different seed from yours. Therefore, I have lived a different life and have come thus far 4/21/2012

The God of Night sleeps holding me in His chest. When His chest becomes warm holding me, He falls asleep. 7/9/2012

When you go to the spirit world, I will be governing everything. It will not be me, however, but God. I am God's body. (original Cheon Seong Gyeong p. 937)

"Today, at the time of the Second Coming, why has Father been denied and persecuted? One of the biggest reasons is that Christianity has been expecting the Lord of the Second Advent to come on the clouds of heaven. But Reverend Moon was born as a man of flesh. Therefore, Christianity totally departed from Father, repeating the mistake of the time of Jesus. That is why Father had to abandon Christianity as his base and build up his own new foundation, which is the Unification Church and movement throughout the world. We have seen such a drastic decline of the power of traditional Christianity after World War II. (4-25-93)

“You must have the faith and conviction that you are a lighthouse lighting a dark world. The lighthouse will shine forth even in the worst kind of weather because that is the time ships need the lighthouse most. When you are surrounded by the thickest fog you must shine forth all the more. The more adversity, the greater must be your light. (9-11-1977)

My goal is to establish the ideal model community [that will] transcend race, culture, nation and religion. ... Once we have this kind of ideal community established, people from all over the world will come to see it. ... It will become a tourist attraction. This model community can have a powerful influence all over the world, particularly as the secular world is declining fast. Only I am creating this formula. It will appear like a lighthouse in the darkness. The world now is in darkness and I am building this model community as a lighthouse in the midst of the darkness.

Also this is how Father will begin saving all these people who are dying of starvation all over the world.

We are now reaching the final stage of history. No advanced nation of the world is able to bring about this kind of unification. Only one person is able to bring this about, and that person is none other than Reverend Moon. The whole of humankind have lost their direction and Father is solving all the problems of mankind. That is the task which Father is implementing now. Father is planning to buy tens of thousands of acres of land where we will build the ideal community.

Father has formed a band of STRONG unification soldiers throughout the world. (Applause.) You are the heavenly army. We have to make a revolution. This is the final war. The fact is that Father has

already won the victory on the spiritual level worldwide and now he begins to tackle this physical level salvation to save all these thousands of people who are dying of starvation every year. The world should recognize this. The time has come. These dying people are our brothers and sisters too. (12-25-1994)

Let's build ideal communities and be those lighthouses.

### **DREAM OF WORLD PEACE**

In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* we read: "I have lived my life without ever letting go of hope and always kept alive the dream of peace. What I want is to wipe away completely the walls and fences that divide the world in myriad ways and to create a world of unity. I want to tear down the walls between religions and between races and fill in the gap between the rich and the poor. Once that is done, we can reestablish the world of peace that God created in the beginning. I am talking about a world where no one goes hungry and no one sheds tears."



**Sun Myung Moon and Hyun Shil Kang**

**True Father and True Mother**

**TRUE PARENTS OF MANKIND**

## APPENDICES

1. The New Future of Christianity – September 18, 1974
2. The Future of Christianity — October 28, 1973
3. How Mother Eliminated God’s Lineage and the Three Generation Kingships by Mrs. Hyun Shil Kang
4. The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk

## APPENDIX 1

The New Future of Christianity

Sun Myung Moon

September 18, 1974

Ladies and gentlemen, I am very happy to be here tonight. Thank you very much for coming. We are gathered together in this impressive setting of Madison Square Garden tonight in the name of God.

My topic tonight is “The New Future of Christianity.” But before I begin this evening’s message, I would like to make one personal plea. I did not come here to repeat what you already know. I have come to reveal something new. I want to share with you a revelation from God.

There is only one God, one Christ, one Bible. Today, however, in the Christian world alone there are more than 400 different denominations, all looking at the same Bible from very different points of view, with many different interpretations.

What we are interested in is not the human interpretation of the Bible, but how God interprets the Bible, and what God’s will really is. Therefore, no person by himself is capable of satisfying us. That information must come from God, in the form of revelation.

And I want to share that revelation with you tonight. Since this message came from God, and since it is from God's point of view, the content naturally may be different from human understanding. Therefore, it may be very new to you. But what we need is new ideas – God's ideas because man has exhausted all of his own ideas already. That is the reason for my coming to talk to you tonight.

So I ask each one of you to open your mind and open your heart, so that the spirit of God can speak to you directly.

For 2,000 years, Christians of the world have been looking forward to one great culminating day, as prophesied in the Bible – the day of the Second Coming of the Lord. Since this has been the promise of God, the Second Coming of Christ will definitely be fulfilled.

Why is the Lord coming a second time? He is coming to consummate the will of God. Then what is the will of God? Do we know clearly what God's will is?

God is eternal, unchanging, and absolute. And He has one will, which is also eternal, unchanging, and absolute. In the beginning, God had a definite purpose for creating the universe and this world. That purpose was the reason for creation. And God began the creation of the universe and man to fulfill that purpose.

According to the Bible, after the first man and woman were created – Adam and Eve – God gave them a commandment. That commandment 'Of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall die.' (Gen. 2:17)

God asked them to obey His commandment. God was implying that by Adam and Eve's obedience to the law, His purpose would be fulfilled. However, God made the consequence of disobedience very clear. He said, "The day that you eat of it you shall die." The fruit of disobedience was death.

However, Adam and Eve disobeyed God. The result was the fall of man. Spiritual death came to mankind, and the purpose of God was

not realized. The fall of man means their deviation from the original state that God intended. Adam and Eve departed from the fulfillment of the purpose of their creation. They made a wrong choice, creating the opposite of what God originally intended.

After their disobedience, God had no choice but to expel this man and woman from the Garden of Eden. The Garden of Eden is a symbolic expression of the Kingdom of God on earth. Adam and Eve no longer deserved citizenship in God's Kingdom, so they were cast out into the ungodly realms, the living hell – which was their own creation.

### ***Kingdom of Heaven on Earth***

If Adam and Eve had obeyed God, they would have brought the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. What would that kingdom be like? Adam and Eve were created sinless, with the potential for perfection. And they were to grow into perfection by obeying the law of God. While they were growing into fully perfected man and woman, their relationship was to be that of brother and sister. They were expected to set the true tradition of brotherhood and sisterhood.

What is perfection? Perfection is man's total union with God. A man is supposed to be the temple of God, in which the spirit of God dwells. Such a man is divine, as God is divine; that man is holy, as God is holy.

Jesus was the first such perfect man. This perfection is the state that Jesus was speaking of when he said,

‘Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father in me.’  
(John 14:11)

When you become one with God, His divine power is yours, and you shall be perfect as God is perfect. Therefore, Jesus set as man's goal to be perfect as God is perfect when he said,



‘You, therefore, must be perfect, as your Heavenly Father is perfect.’ (Matt. 5:48) God created one male and one female. Why? After their reaching the state of perfection, God wanted to bring them together into one heavenly couple, through the blessing of heavenly matrimony. God intended to begin His Kingdom with Adam and Eve as the first husband and wife.

If that had become a reality, then God’s blessing to be fruitful and multiply would have been fulfilled. He would have given them the power to multiply children of God. And those children would have been sinless and perfect. What else could they be? Sin would never have been introduced into the human race. By having children, Adam and Eve would have become the God-centered True Father and Mother – the True Parents of mankind.

If Adam and Eve had formed this first God-centered family, from them would have come a God-centered tribe, a God-centered nation, and a God-centered world ruled by God alone. Then perfection would have reigned from the beginning to eternity.

Where did God create Adam and Eve? Up in the air, out in space? No, right here on earth. Therefore, the prospering of Adam’s family should have brought the realization of God’s ideal here on earth, and God would have become the center of mankind. This would have been nothing other than the Kingdom of God on earth, in which God would have dwelt with men and women.

If that had been accomplished in the beginning, there would be no great divisions of races and languages. We would all belong to the one race of Adam under the one tradition of Adam. And Adam’s one language would be our universal tongue. And indeed, the whole world would be one nation under God.

So, in God’s plan, all men are supposed to be born into the Kingdom of God on earth. We are to enjoy the heavenly life on earth. And then when our physical earthly life is over, we are to be elevated into the Kingdom of God in the spiritual heaven, where we shall live for eternity. That was God’s original plan.

There could be no Satan, no evil, and no hell in that world. Indeed, God did not create hell for His own children. No good father would construct a prison for his newborn child. Why would God need a hell for His children? Only heaven was God's original will. Because of sin, however, people lost their original value and became human trash. Hell is like a trash can. But it was necessary only after the fall of man.

### ***Kingdom of Hell – Paradise Lost***

Then let us further examine the state of the fallen people and the fallen world. We read in John that Jesus says,

‘You are of your father the devil.’ (John 8:44)

By the fall, man was brought under the false fatherhood of Satan. Man changed fathers. We left our true father, God, and united with the false father, Satan. The first man and woman became the children of Satan. Under the false fatherhood of Satan, Adam and Eve united unlawfully as a couple without God's blessing or permission. And when they multiplied children, they all came under the same false father. They were all born as the children of sin, not the children of God. Therefore, the multiplication of sinful children from one generation to another has brought about this fallen, sinful world.

Because God is not at the center, this is a world of sin, a world of mistrust, a world of crime, a world of war. And we, the nations and societies of this world can destroy each other and feel no pain. This is the kingdom of hell on earth.

The master of this world, indeed, is not God, but Satan. This is why John 12:31 indicates that Satan is the ruler of this world. We know this universe was created by God. We know God created us. But God is no longer the master, because people changed masters. Man betrayed God and united with a false master, Satan. This Satan became the father of mankind.

The fall of man has brought great grief to the heart of our Heavenly Father. God lost everything when His people turned against Him. That is why we read in Genesis,

The Lord was sorry that he had made man on the earth,  
and it grieved him to his heart. (Gen. 6:6)

God was grieved because the exact opposite of His will had become the reality. If God's intention had been fulfilled, He would have been joyful. If the consequences of the fall were the result of God's own plan, why should God be grieved to His heart? Why would He have been sorry that He had made us?

### ***Salvation Is Restoration***

Almighty God is a God of love, a God of mercy. His heart is compassionate and He grieved at the living death of His children.

He knows no person is capable of breaking his chains and getting rid of sin by himself. He knows that only one power can bring people into salvation – God Himself. And God, in His mercy, is determined to save this world.

What is salvation? Salvation is simply restoration. What does a doctor do to save his patient? He restores the patient to normal health. That is a cure. What would you do to save a drowning person? You would save him by bringing him out of the water and restoring him to dry land. That is a rescue.

By the same token, God's salvation of man is simply to restore man from an abnormal, deviated state to the original state of goodness.

So, salvation is equivalent to restoration. God is going to restore the kingdom of hell to the Kingdom of Heaven.

God made His determination clear in the Bible:

‘I have spoken, and I will bring it to pass; I have purposed, and I will do it.’ (Isaiah 46:11)

God did not say He might do it. He said He will do it, showing His absolute determination to restore man and the world to the original design.

How? By the Messiah. To restore mankind, God sent His only son, Jesus Christ, into this world as the Savior – as the Messiah. Two thousand years ago, Jesus Christ came into our world as the author of life. He came to transform all sinful people into Christ-like people. He came to restore the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Therefore, Jesus Christ proclaimed as his first gospel,

‘Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.’ (Matt: 4:17)

With the coming of Jesus Christ, people were truly at the threshold of the Kingdom of Heaven.

### ***Preparation for the Messiah***

However, before God could send His Son to restore the world, He had to prepare the way step by step, starting with one individual and expanding to a nation, in order to establish a foundation of faith upon which the Messiah could come.

After all, this world had been Satan’s world. If the Messiah were to come to this earth without a prepared foundation, the satanic world would destroy him. So God worked diligently and carefully to establish one nation, one sovereignty over which He could have control. The nation of Israel was the result of that preparation for the Messiah.

God prepared the nation of Israel as the “landing site” for the Messiah. Upon Israel’s foundation of faith, God could send His ultimate champion, the Messiah.

Likewise, Christianity today is the parallel landing site of the Messiah for his Second Coming. And Christians are supposed to be forming a foundation of faith for the return of the Messiah in the final hour of fulfillment.

Today, as never before in our troubled world, the Messiah is our hope! The mission of the Messiah is restoration – to bring fallen, suffering humanity out of this world of evil and restore man into the original perfection and goodness of God. He is to destroy Satan’s evil sovereignty over this world and establish God’s sovereignty.

Jesus Christ came as the Messiah of 2,000 years ago for this purpose – to restore God’s Kingdom. Today we are waiting for the Second Coming of Christ. The purpose of that Second Coming is precisely the same – the restoration of God’s original Kingdom. That is the one purpose and one will of God.

We Christians are today’s chosen people of God. Christians are Christ’s co-workers. So we are in a position to prepare a foundation for the Lord, to welcome and accept him when he comes, and to participate in his mission to destroy Satan from the face of the earth, and bring all mankind to salvation.

But today, Christians are not sure about the will of God. We are more interested in our own personal salvation, our own heaven somewhere, and the guarantee of our own little niche up there. But that is not the way God intended Christians to be.

### ***Where are You, My David?***

God is looking for His champions among the Christians of the world today. And the work of God needs a sacrificial spirit. How many Christians are now saying, “Use me as a lamb on Your altar, and out of my sacrifice save this world”? God is seeking a self-denying spirit. God is searching for the bearers of the cross for the 20th century. And today’s Christians are deaf to that call.

Instead, Christians today are crying out for “my heaven,” “my salvation.” What about God? What about the rest of the world? Will

you be able to keep your small piece of heaven when the rest of the world is crumbling? No. If, on the other hand, the whole world were saved, would your own salvation not already be included?

Today, if the Christian churches persist in the same individual-centered way, the spirit of Christianity is bound to decline. Before we cry out for our salvation, let us cry out for the fulfillment of God's will. We must liberate God from His sorrow, His grief. When we have solved God's problem, man's problem will automatically be solved. Then Christian fire will truly burn for the sake of the broken heart of God, not for ourselves.

In their 2,000 years of history, Christians had great opportunity to bring the entire world to God. But Christians simply did not clearly know the will of God. They did not act when opportunity knocked.

That same opportunity is knocking once again. This time the opportunity has come to America. If today's American Christians recognize the will of God in the present day and act upon it, we can turn the world upside down and right side up, and bring heaven down on earth. The hour of the Second Coming of Christ is at hand, yet we are missing the signs of the times.

Instead of continuing to ask and pray, 'Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven,' (Matt. 6:10) we can act upon God's will now, and make that heaven a reality right here in New York, because we have already arrived at God's scheduled hour of fulfillment.

Each one of us is part of the body of Christ, so when Christ comes we are the extensions of his living body. If each one of us is willing and ready to nail his body to the cross in order to have our world live, then we shall indeed turn this world into the Kingdom of Heaven. To live and die for God and Christ – this is the privilege of being a Christian!

Remember, God's will is to save the whole world – not just Christians, not just churches. There is a universally known verse in the Bible, which we learned as children in Sunday school:

For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish but have eternal life. (John 3:16)

The emphasis there is on the word “world.” God so loved the world, not just the church, not just the Christians, not just one particular people, but the whole world. For that reason – to save this world – the Messiah is sent.

If you asked our Lord the question, “Are you the savior of only the Christians?” he would answer “No! I am the savior of all mankind.”

If you asked God, “Are You the God of the Christians?” God would say, “No! I am the God of the universe, the God of all creation, the God of all people.”

Two thousand years ago, people were awaiting the coming of the Messiah, but for very self-centered reasons. They thought that the Messiah was coming as a sort of military conqueror to avenge them and defeat the Roman Empire, and to reward Israel with great glory and power in an earthly sense. And they simply missed the whole point.

On the contrary, the Messiah was coming to Israel to lead the people as a sacrifice to reach out to the rest of the world, to bring the entire world into God’s salvation.

God determined to restore the entire world, and to bring all people into goodness and perfection. If God could not do that, He would be a defeated God. Defeated by whom? By Satan! Then God would not be God.

Imagine yourself in the position of God. When God looks upon the Christian world today, I do not think He is pleased. He foresees a great battle to be fought and won. God must have a confrontation with the formidable power of the enemy, the power of Satan, the power of sin.

For that, God needs a modern day David to confront this Goliath, Satan. Do you not hear God's cry, "Where is my David? Where are you, my David?" And God expects today's Christians to respond, "Yes, my Lord! I am Your David. Your will be done!"

But the Christians of this world seem to be in deep sleep. And the handful who are awake are busy fighting among themselves. The time of harvest has come in this cosmic autumn, but God has no workers to send out to the fields.

Ever since the fall of man, God has been waging a divine war against the power of Satan. That war has not ended. The final battle is yet to come. Christ is coming for the second time, as the commander in chief, to wage that final battle. And that hour has arrived. Yet, alas, no heavenly soldiers are ready. Christians are asleep.

So far, God has only been able to engage in "guerrilla warfare" against Satan, not total war. However, God has been preparing for one great day, a heavenly "D-Day" – like the D-Day of the Normandy landing – when God can launch an all-out offensive. That day is the day of the return of Christ. That D-Day of God is at hand! The Bible is the record of God's patient preparation leading mankind into that final battle. The fulfillment of the Bible is the coming of the Lord – the return of Christ for that D-Day.

### ***The Bible Is a Coded Message***

What is the Bible, more precisely? The Bible has been a book of mystery. However, the Bible contains God's message to you and me.

The Bible does not use plain language, but is written in symbols and parables. Do you know why God has presented the Bible in symbols and parables? Why did He not speak the truth clearly?

God has had to deal with the world of evil. Throughout the ages, God has hand-picked His workers, or champions, out of this evil world. Abraham was such a champion. Noah was such a champion.



And God's champions were always in the utter minority in the evil world. If God revealed His strategy too openly or plainly, the enemy would use that information against God's champions. Thus, the Bible was written as a coded message, so that only God's agents or champions could decipher it.

Let me make an analogy. To protect her security, America sends out many agents overseas to collect vital information concerning potential enemies. When the home headquarters is communicating with these agents overseas, particularly in enemy territory, would they communicate openly and plainly? No. No one would be that naive. They would communicate in coded messages – secret messages – so that the enemy could not decipher them.

Throughout history, righteous people have faced nothing but suffering on this earth, simply because they were in enemy territory, and Satan did not want to have God's agents prosper. Whenever Satan's forces discovered God's representatives, they tried to destroy them.

We must realize that God has had to give His instructions in coded messages. Thus the Bible is written in symbols and parables. In a sense, the Bible is intended to be mysterious. Then how can we know the true meaning of those symbols and parables?

It is simple, in a way. If you are an agent dispatched by your headquarters, and you want to decipher a coded message, then you must either have a code book, or communicate directly with your home headquarters.

By the same token, the meaning of the symbols and parables in the Bible can only be clear when we communicate with our "home headquarters" – God. This is truly the only sure way we can know the ultimate meaning of the Bible.

Two thousand years ago our Lord Jesus Christ brought the blueprint for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. However, he could not speak plainly about his plan even to his own disciples. Jesus spoke in figures and parables. Why?

Jesus knew the adverse circumstances in which he had to work. There was political pressure from the Roman Empire. There was the ruling monarchy, who opposed any change. And there was a strong religious system and tradition. These could all be directed against the building of the Kingdom of God.

Jesus came to kindle the fire of revolution in people, which would in due course change the structure and the life of the entire nation. But he could not speak plainly of any of this even to his own disciples. Instead, he had to speak in figures and parables, saying,

‘He who has ears to hear, let him hear.’ (Luke 14:35)

If you attempt to interpret the Bible literally, word for word, letter for letter, without understanding the nature of the coded message of the Bible, you are liable to make a big mistake.

Therefore, in this day, at this hour, what the Christian world needs is a revelation from God. God must reveal to us His plan; He must tell us His timetable, and give us instructions as to what to do at this time. God indeed promised that by saying, in Amos, ‘Surely the Lord God does nothing, without revealing his secret to his servants the prophets.’ (Amos 3:7)

Tonight I am standing here at Madison Square Garden not according to my own will, but in obedience to the divine will of God. God has called me as His instrument, to reveal His message for His present day dispensation, so that there may be a people prepared for the day of the Lord.

Tonight I am going to concentrate on the divine revelation concerning the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent – the vital issue of the Second Advent – the most important question of our time. And in order to understand this more clearly, we must first know the circumstances of the coming of Jesus Christ 2,000 years ago.

## ***Jesus Did Not Come to Die***

There is one historical puzzle that not been solved.

For 4,000 years before the coming of Jesus Christ, God had prepared the people for the Messiah, as I explained earlier. Through His prophets, God had forewarned the people to be ready for the Messiah. God was working to build up expectation, and there was indeed great messianic fervor in Israel. And at the appointed hour, God fulfilled His promise. The Son of God, Jesus Christ, came to his own people on time.

Then what happened? History is the witness We did not know him. We rejected him, rebelled against him, and finally crucified him on the cross. Why?

The Christian churches say, “Well, the answer to that question is, simply, God sent Jesus Christ to die on the cross. The crucifixion was the predestined will of God from the beginning.”

Then let me ask those Christians, “What will you do when Jesus Christ returns to you today?” All Christians undoubtedly will answer, “We will receive him! Welcome him! Unite with him! Follow him!” Let me further ask, “Will you crucify Christ when he appears?” Your answer must be, “No!”

If that is so, then what about the people of 2,000 years ago? If they had accepted Jesus – as you would today – would they still have had to crucify him? No! It was a mistake! It was in ignorance that we crucified Jesus Christ.

It was God’s will that His people accept the Messiah. But we crucified him instead. And then Christians “passed the buck” by saying that was the will of God. Ridiculous! This is not acceptable to our logic. Something must have gone terribly wrong. What was it?

## ***Ignorance Killed Jesus***

The people did not know who Jesus of Nazareth was. They did not know him as the Son of God. If they had clearly known Jesus was the Messiah the Son of God, they would not have crucified him.

He came to his own home, and his own people received him not. (John 1:11) None of the rulers of this age understood this; for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. (I Cor. 2:8)

If they had only known who he was, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. It was a mistake. It was ignorance and blindness that killed Jesus Christ!

Christians of the world have not realized the truth about what actually happened in Jesus' time. If God's only purpose in sending His Son was to have him nailed on the cross, then why would God spend the time to prepare the people in the first place? It would have been much easier for God to send His son among the disbelievers, or even among savages. They would have killed him more quickly, and salvation would have come faster.

## ***Slaves to the Letter of the Old Testament***

Then the question is, why did the people not know who Jesus was? Believe it or not, the first reason why God's people did not recognize Jesus as the Messiah was because of the Old Testament. This may be surprising to you. But the people interpreted the Old Testament literally. They did not realize that the Bible was in code. They did not look for a code book. Instead, they took the Bible literally, word for word, letter for letter. In other words, they became slaves to the letter of the Old Testament.

Let me give you the evidence. The book of Malachi in the Old Testament has a parallel purpose to that of the Book of Revelation in the New Testament. It clearly shows the timetable and the last minute description of how the Messiah would come. In Malachi, you will find these words:

‘I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of the Lord comes. And he will turn the hearts of fathers to their children and the hearts of children to their fathers’ (Mal. 4:5-6)

Who was Elijah? He was a great prophet of Israel who had lived approximately 900 years before Jesus Christ, and who had ascended into heaven in a chariot of fire in a whirlwind, according to the Old Testament. So people believed that Elijah would literally return from the blue sky in a chariot of fire and announce the Son of God: This is what people expected.

But did Elijah come? The problem was, Elijah did not return in the manner people expected. The people never heard anything about his returning miraculously. However, one day they did hear an extraordinary declaration. A young man from Nazareth, whose name was Jesus, was being proclaimed by his followers as the Messiah, the Son of God. That was indeed an incredible announcement.

And what was the people’s immediate reaction? “Impossible!” they said. “How could Jesus of Nazareth be the Son of God? We have not heard anything about Elijah.” No Elijah, no Messiah.

In order to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God, they would have had to disregard their 4,000 year old tradition and throw their Bible away. But no one was willing to do that.

People at that time truly misunderstood Jesus, the Son of God. They said to him,

‘It is not for a good work that we stone you but for blasphemy; because you, being a man, make yourself God’ (John 10:33)

And they picked up stones, ready to stone Jesus Christ, the Messiah.

Furthermore, when Jesus performed many mighty works and miracles, people did not honor Jesus. They said instead,

‘It is only by Beelzebub, the prince of demons, that this man casts out demons.’ (Matt. 12:24)

What a tragedy! Jesus Christ, the Son of God, the prince of peace, was belittled and relegated to the prince of demons!

Pontius Pilate, the governor from Rome, did not want to crucify Jesus, because he could not find any fault in him. However, Jesus’ own people were the ones who were shouting, “Let him be crucified! Let him be crucified!”

People whom God had prepared to receive him wanted Jesus to be killed, and to have the criminal Barabbas released instead of him. Was that the will of God? No! Jesus Christ was the victim of the ignorance and blindness of his own people. And they misread the prophecy – they misread the Old Testament.

Imagine that Elijah had come in a supernatural manner, in a chariot of fire from the sky, as people expected. It would have created a great sensation. And imagine Elijah appearing in front of the multitudes and proclaiming, “This man, Jesus of Nazareth, is indeed the Son of God.” Then I am sure everyone would have knelt down and worshipped him right there. Then who would have dared to crucify Jesus Christ?

However, that sort of miracle was not the meaning of the prophecy.

Malachi’s prophecy of the coming of Elijah was indeed an obstacle to Jesus’ successful ministry. When Jesus’ disciples went out all over Israel teaching the gospel and proclaiming Jesus as the Son of God, the people repudiated their words, saying, “If your master is the Son of God, where is Elijah? The book says Elijah must come first.”

## ***John the Baptist Was Elijah***

Jesus' disciples were not well prepared to answer this question. As a matter of fact, they were not learned in the Old Testament. After all, they were lowly fishermen of Galilee and tax collectors. So the embarrassed disciples one day decided to go to Jesus to ask for his help in this matter. An account appears in Matthew:

And the disciples asked him, 'Then why do the scribes say that first Elijah must come?' He replied, 'Elijah does come, and he is to restore all things; but I tell you that Elijah has already come.' ...Then the disciples understood that he was speaking to them of John the Baptist. (Matt. 17:10-13)

This was a real shock to the disciples. And then they understood, according to the Bible, that Jesus was speaking to them of John the Baptist.

Was John the Baptist Elijah? Yes, Jesus said so. But the people were never convinced. They said, "Outrageous!"

Let us imagine we can transpose these events to our time. John the Baptist of 2,000 years ago was a person of tremendous influence, enjoying great prestige all over Israel as a great man of God – just like Billy Graham of today, a great Christian leader.

Let us say some unknown young man suddenly appeared and began proclaiming himself to the world as the Son of God. As a student of the scriptures, you would ask him, "If you are the Son of God, where is the promised Elijah?" If this man said, "Do you not know that Billy Graham is Elijah?" what would be your reaction? You would undoubtedly say, "Impossible! How could Billy Graham be Elijah? He did not come out of the blue sky. We all know he came from North Carolina!"

You could not accept that, could you? Precisely this same kind of unbelief confronted our Lord Jesus Christ. People could not accept John the Baptist as Elijah, simply because he did not come from the

sky. The people of 2,000 years ago were stubborn in their belief that the prophecy of Elijah's return must be fulfilled literally, that he must come from the sky. They were the victims of the letter of the Old Testament.

### ***John the Baptist, Man of Failure***

Yet Jesus Christ continued to preach with power and authority in spite of scornful public opinion. The people could not dismiss such a man lightly. They wanted to be sure of themselves. So they decided to go to ask John the Baptist himself and settle their questions once and for all. They asked John,

Who are you?' He confessed, he did not deny, but confessed, 'I am not the Christ' And they asked him, 'What then, are you Elijah?' He said, 'I am not.' 'Are you the prophet?' And he answered, 'No.' (John 1:19-21)

John the Baptist denied everything. He said, "I am not Elijah." He even denied the title of prophet. Everyone knew and recognized him as a prophet of God, but he said, "I'm no prophet." Why? He evaluated the situation and knew that Jesus Christ was treated by his own society as an outcast. Jesus seemed to be a loser, and John decided not to side with Jesus. He thought it would be much better to deny everything.

By doing so, John the Baptist pushed Jesus into a corner, making him seem a great impostor without defense. After John's denial, Jesus had no further recourse on this point.

Then why was Jesus crucified? First, he became the victim of literal interpretation of the Old Testament. Second, Jesus was rejected and finally crucified because of the failure of the mission of John the Baptist. We can read in Matthew that John the Baptist, waiting in prison to be beheaded, sent two of his own disciples to Jesus to ask the following question:



‘Are you he who is to come, or shall we look for another?’ (Matt. 11:3)

Is this the question of a man who has faith in Jesus as the Son of God? John the Baptist had earlier testified to Jesus at the Jordan River:

‘I have seen and have born witness that this is the Son of God’ (John 1:34)

Yet this very same person, with the very same tongue, was now confronting Jesus by asking, “Are you really the Messiah, or shall we go and look for somebody else?” How disheartening that question must have been to Jesus! What a man of little faith John was!

The mission of John the Baptist was very important to the fulfillment of the mission of the Messiah. God sent John specifically, ... to make ready for the Lord a people prepared. (Luke 1:17)

That was John’s responsibility as the forerunner of Christ.

Jesus relied very much upon the success of the mission of John the Baptist. When this very John the Baptist sent his disciples to Jesus to ask him, “Are you really the Messiah?” it was more painful for Jesus than if he had stabbed him with a knife. Anger overwhelmed him. Jesus refused to answer yes or no to that impossible question. Instead Jesus said,

‘Blessed is he who takes no offense at me.’ (Matt. 11:6)

This was Jesus’ consolation to John when he saw that John was failing. Jesus was really saying, “Poor John, man of failure. You no longer have faith in me. You are taking offense at the Son of God. I am sorry for you, John.”

And then Jesus spoke to the crowd about John in indignation, saying,

‘What did you go out into the wilderness to behold? A reed shaken by the wind? Why then did you go out? To see a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, those who wear soft raiment are in kings’ houses. Why then did you go out? To see a prophet? Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet’ (Matt. 11:7-9)

John was more than a prophet, because he came to bear witness directly to Jesus Christ, the Son of God. He was born for this extraordinary mission. God entrusted that glorious responsibility to John. What an honor for a man to be called “more than a prophet” by Jesus! Yet John failed to live up to this honor. Therefore, Jesus said in Matthew,

‘Truly, I say to you, among those born of women there has risen no one greater than John the Baptist; yet he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.’  
(Matt. 11:11)

John had fallen to the point where even the least in the Kingdom of Heaven was greater than he. The meaning of Jesus’ statement has remained mysterious. Christians have not understood its true significance because they have not realized that John the Baptist was a man who failed his mission. Tonight we know the true meaning.

John the Baptist was the greatest among those born of women because of his mission, which was to testify to the Son of God. All the prophets in the past had the same mission. But the prophets who came before John had borne witness to the Messiah with a distance of time between them and the Lord.

John was born as a contemporary of Jesus Christ, so he had the privilege to bear witness to the living Christ when he appeared in person. So far as his mission was concerned, John the Baptist had

the greatest, most glorious mission of all. Thus Jesus said he was the greatest among those born of women.

However, in carrying out his mission, John was the very least; he was the most miserable failure of all. All the prophets who had lived before him were watching from the spirit world. They knew who Jesus Christ was. But John did not. He doubted. He became skeptical and finally blind to Jesus' identity. In the end, he failed to maintain his own testimony to the Son of God. He became a man of failure and therefore the least of all in the Kingdom of Heaven.

I will give you another indisputable proof of the failure of the mission of John the Baptist. The people said to John,

‘Rabbi, he... [Jesus] who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you bore witness, here he is, baptizing, and all are going to him.’ (John 3:26)

Then John answered,

‘He must increase but I must decrease’ (John 3:30)

Christians have interpreted this to mean that John was truly a humble man and a great prophet. They believe that he felt in all humility that Jesus must increase, while he himself had to decrease.

On the contrary, this is proof of the arrogance of John the Baptist. If John had taken Jesus Christ seriously as the Son of God, he would have no choice but to become one with Jesus and follow him wholeheartedly, rain or shine. He would have risen or fallen together with Jesus, bound by the same destiny. This passage shows that John did not in fact follow Jesus. He took an independent course and deserted Jesus. He did not, indeed, take Jesus seriously.

John the Baptist was finally beheaded. He could have been a glorious martyr had he been beheaded for performing his ordained mission: witnessing and proclaiming to the world that Jesus Christ was the Son of God! But he was beheaded merely for becoming

involved in the love scandal of King Herod's family. That affair was none of John's business. Attending the Son of God was his sole responsibility. But John deserted this divine mission and suffered a meaningless, even shameful death. This truth must be told, however painful.

Therefore, Jesus said of John,

'From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven has suffered violence, and men of violence take it by force.' (Matt. 11:12)

This means that because of the failure of the mission of John the Baptist, the kingdom heralded by Jesus Christ suffered and was left open for competition. When a champion of God fails in his mission, someone else must take up that mission and put forth great effort to accomplish it. Thus, men of violent faith – like Peter – took John's position by force of their own merit.

However, had John the Baptist been a man of great faith, what would have resulted? He would have indeed become the chief disciple of the Son of God, Jesus Christ. If Jesus had been king, John the Baptist would have been prime minister. That was the position that God ordained for John.

In that case, then, the 12 apostles, the 70 disciples, and the 120 people chosen by Jesus all would have come from the ranks of John's own followers. John would have served as a mediator to bring unity and harmony between the chosen people of Israel and the Son of God. Who would have dared to crucify Jesus under those circumstances? No one! The crucifixion would never have occurred.

I am sure that many people who read the Bible must have wondered about John, "If he was such a great man, why did he not become the chief disciple of the Son of God?" Jesus himself indicated the mission that John the Baptist came to fulfill:

‘For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John; and if you are willing to accept it, he is Elijah who is to come’ (Matt. 11:13)

John the Baptist represented the consummation of the Old Testament, the law and the prophets. He was the prince of the old age. Jesus Christ came as the prince of the new age. Had he been supported by John the Baptist, he could have stood upon the firm foundation of the Old Testament Age. Then the new age could have blossomed in the fertile soil of the accomplishments of the old age. The Son of God could have established his glorious kingdom at once. And John the Baptist would have been the cornerstone of that kingdom.

Had John the Baptist followed Jesus, the distinguished leaders of that society would have been the first to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Then who would have crucified the Lord of glory?

When God sent His only Son to this world to establish His kingdom on earth, don't you think He wanted to be followed by the most able people of his age? Do you think that God wanted only the outcasts of society to follow Jesus? Not at all! The simple failure of John the Baptist broke the link between the Son of God and the people. And as a result, only fishermen, tax collectors, harlots and lepers followed Jesus Christ. This brought great grief to the heart of God.

If the Lord is returning to the world today, is it not most logical that all the leadership of Christianity – the bishops, the cardinals, the pope, and all the evangelists and great ministers of the world – should become the first group to welcome the Christ? If they followed the Lord and became his first disciples, the establishment of his kingdom would be infinitely easier.

You may say, “Reverend Moon, by what authority are you speaking? What makes you so sure?” I do have the authority to say these things. God showed me the truth. I met Jesus. Jesus himself showed me these truths. And I met John the Baptist, too, in the spirit world. He himself bore witness to the truth of this testimony. After these extraordinary spiritual experiences, when I returned to the

reality of this world, the same Bible I had been reading took on a whole new meaning.

Even if you cannot accept these things as the truth now, you must at least suspend judgment. One day we will all know the truth. Eventually we are all going to die. Every one of us will end up in the spiritual world, where truth is like the sunlight. No one can escape it there. On that day we shall all see the whole truth.

However, blessed is he who can be humble enough to accept the truth while he has the opportunity here on earth. Your knowledge of the truth and of God here on earth will determine your eternal life.

### ***Jesus Expected on the Clouds of Heaven***

There a third vital reason why Jesus was not accepted as the Messiah. Two thousand years ago the people expected the Son of God to come on the clouds of heaven, according to the prophecy of Daniel:

‘I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man’ (Dan. 7:13)

But Jesus Christ did not appear miraculously on the clouds of heaven. He was born of a woman Mary, the wife of Joseph. The people said, “Well, how could this Jesus be the Son of God? He is a mere man, Just like you and me.” This was another overwhelming reason why the people rejected Jesus.

Some might object that Daniel’s prophecy was not intended for the first coming of Jesus Christ, but rather for the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent. But I say this is not the case, because Jesus testified that all the prophecies and the law given prior to John the Baptist were intended to be fulfilled in the time of Jesus Christ (Matt. 11:13).

So the prophecy of the coming of the Son of Man on the clouds of heaven was intended for the coming of Jesus Christ 2,000 years ago. In those days there was no New Testament, and the thought of the Second Coming of the Lord was not even in the mind of God.

This prophecy of Daniel posed much difficulty for the ministry of Jesus. For instance, we can see the apostle John warns in the New Testament,

For many deceivers have gone out into the world, men who will not acknowledge the coming of the Jesus Christ in the flesh; such a one is the deceiver and the antichrist.  
(II John 7)

This is what John was saying 2,000 years ago about those who disbelieved in Jesus Christ, rejecting him simply because he was a man in the flesh. They did not accept Jesus, but continued waiting for a supernatural appearance on the clouds. John condemned these people in the worst terms, saying, “such a one is the antichrist.”

These historical truths have remained hidden from the Christian world. Today, for the first time, all these circumstances of Jesus’ ministry are being brought to light.

Yes, our Lord Jesus Christ came to fulfill the mission of bringing God’s kingdom to earth. But we did not understand him. We committed the great tragedy. Then later we claimed that was the will of God. How ironic!

The conviction that Jesus came to die on the cross has become the very foundation of Christianity. But this mistaken belief has been piercing the heart of God again and again for the last 2,000 years. God’s heart was broken when Adam rebelled against Him, and again when His Son was nailed to the cross on the Mount of Calvary. We have sadly misunderstood both God and Christ.

Why, then, has this truth been revealed at this particular time? Because the time of the Second Coming of Christ is near. And God

does not want Christians to commit the same mistake made at Jesus' time.

Only with the revelation of the clear truth from the Heavenly Father can all the Christian churches become one. Yes, truth makes us one. If we know the truth, that truth will liberate us from our mistaken beliefs and disunity. And the plain truth of God has now been revealed.

Crucifixion – Secondary Mission of Jesus The crucifixion was not at all the original mission of the Son of God, but represented an alteration of his intended course. It was a secondary mission. It was decided on the Mount of Transfiguration. An account of this appears in Luke.

And behold, two men talked with him, Moses and Elijah, who appeared in glory and spoke of his departure [his crucifixion], which he was to accomplish at Jerusalem. (Luke 9:30-31)

When Peter, Jesus' chief disciple, was informed by Jesus that he would suffer in Jerusalem and was to be crucified, Peter violently protested, as we read in Matthew:

'God forbid, Lord! This shall never happen to you' (Matt. 16:22)

Then Jesus lashed out at him saying,

'Get behind me, Satan! You are a hindrance to me; for you are not on the side of God, but of men.' (Matt. 16:23)

Christians often quote this particular passage as proof that Jesus came to die on the cross. Many explain, "Look what Jesus said. He said he came to die. So that is why he rebuked Peter and called him Satan, because Peter opposed Jesus' going to the cross."



But that interpretation misses one vital point. Jesus rebuked Peter after he knew that God had changed His plan and altered Jesus' mission. Since the people rejected Jesus, God knew that Jesus could not carry out his primary mission, the establishment of the kingdom on earth, which required the cooperation of the people.

At that late point in his ministry, God then asked Jesus to fulfill only the limited goal of spiritual salvation. Jesus therefore began preparing for this secondary goal. And poor Peter knew nothing about this change in the mission of Jesus Christ.

Jesus called Peter "Satan" because Peter's seemingly comforting words had no relevance to the will of God at that point. Peter spoke from ignorance and blindness. But Jesus could not risk losing this secondary mission – for then his coming would have been completely in vain.

### ***Accepting Jesus Would Have Brought God's Kingdom***

Let us consider what actually would have happened had Jesus been accepted by the people of Israel. Indeed, he would have become the king of Israel; he would have united his disciples with all of the descendants of Abraham, 12 tribes of Jacob, and all the Arab tribes as well. All of them would have become one family of the Son of God.

Jesus Christ would have set up a heavenly sovereignty centered upon the nation of Israel. The constitution of the Kingdom of God would have been promulgated in his time. An invincible nation would have been established, with the sovereignty of God spearheaded by the last Adam – Jesus Christ – as king. Even the Roman Empire would have been humbled before God's kingdom. This is the prediction of Isaiah:

Of the increase of his government and of peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David, and over his kingdom, to establish it, and to uphold it with justice and with righteousness from this time forth and for evermore. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will do this. (Is. 9:7)

After Jesus' death, his disciples marched toward Rome barehanded, suffering and shedding their blood. And within 400 years, the Roman Empire collapsed before this weaponless army. Had Jesus Christ not been crucified, but personally commanded this holy army, the entire Roman Empire would have come under the sovereignty of God during Jesus' own lifetime.

In those days, the great Roman Empire was the hub of the world. God's plan of salvation was to restore the whole world. Thus, God prepared Rome in a central role so that once the kingdom came to Rome, it could be spread easily to the whole world. Had Jesus been able to establish his kingdom in the Roman Empire, then through Rome's power and influence, people in every corner of the globe would have heard his gospel while he lived on earth.

Thus, in his lifetime Jesus would have established the Kingdom of Heaven on earth as a reality. The nation of Israel would have been the glorious center of his kingdom. Then there would be no divided Christianity as we have today – no Roman Catholicism, no Presbyterianism, no Methodism, no Church of Christ. None of these would be necessary. You no longer need a vehicle when you have reached your destination.

You and I would already be citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. There would have been no bloody history of Christianity – no martyrs. And there would be no reason for the Second Coming. A doctor is unnecessary if there are no patients to cure.

The sad reality, however, is that Jesus Christ was met with rebellion. Without the obedience of Adam and Eve, God could not fulfill his ideal in the Garden of Eden. And without people's cooperation, Jesus Christ could not establish his kingdom on earth.

### ***Crucifixion Brought Only Spiritual Salvation***

So Jesus focused on his secondary mission, spiritual salvation. Due to the sin and blindness of the people, God permitted His son to be a sacrifice. That was the significance of the crucifixion. God allowed Jesus to die on the cross as a ransom paid to Satan. In

exchange, upon Jesus' resurrection, God could claim the people's souls, though redemption of the body was not possible.

Therefore God's victory was not in the cross but in the resurrection. The resurrection brought the salvation Christianity offers.

At Jesus' crucifixion, Christianity was crucified as well. At the hour of the Lord's tribulation, no one remained faithful. Everyone betrayed Jesus. Even Peter denied Christ.

But with the resurrection, Christianity revived as well. Then for 40 days, Jesus rejoined and cemented the shattered fragments of Christianity. That was the beginning of the Christianity of today.

Yes, our salvation does come from Jesus' victorious resurrection. This is the victory of Christ, and Satan's power can never influence it. But the body of Jesus Christ was given up as a sacrifice and a ransom. In giving up his body, Jesus also gave up the body of mankind. Our salvation is limited to spiritual redemption, because the redemption of the body remained unfulfilled 2,000 years ago. And our world still suffers under Satan's power. Sin rages and dominates this world through our bodies.

Therefore, Paul shouted out in anguish,

Wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, I of myself serve the law of God with my mind, but with my flesh I serve the law of sin. (Rom. 7:24-25)

Paul was living in the grace of the Lord. Still he confessed that he could serve God only with his mind, and his flesh served the law of sin. His body yearned to be redeemed; he still anguished over sin.

And so it is for us. By accepting Christ, we receive spiritual salvation. But our bodies serve the law of sin under Satan's domain – until Christ returns and liberates us from the bondage of sin. The

Lord of the Second Advent alone can give total salvation: spiritual salvation and redemption of our bodies as well.

Christianity's power is limited to spiritual salvation. Unlike the nation of Israel, Christianity has no physical base, so God's dominion in Christianity is over only a spiritual kingdom.

Therefore, our great hope is the Second Coming of the Messiah. This is the hope of America, the hope of the world. America – this unique Christian nation – must awaken now and ready herself for the day of his coming.

American Christianity stands in the spiritual position of Israel 2,000 years ago. America is destined to serve as the Messiah's landing site for the 20th century. God wants to reach out to all people and has chosen to reach out first to America and through her to the world.

America's role parallels that of the Roman Empire 2,000 years ago. As Rome was the hub of the world then, America is the hub of the world in modern times. Jesus set his eyes on Rome. And when Christ returns, he will set his eyes on America.

### ***Prayer In the Garden of Gethsemane***

In our ignorance, we Christians have missed the true spirit of Jesus' prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane. There he told his disciples:

'My soul is very sorrowful, even to death; remain here and watch with me' And going a little farther he fell on his face and prayed, 'My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will but as thou wilt.' (Matt. 26:28-39)

He prayed this way not once, but three times. He was sorrowful even to death. Many in the Christian world suppose Jesus prayed this way out of human weakness, shrinking from his mission of dying on the cross. Nothing can be further from the truth!

Under Roman tyrants hundreds of thousands of Christians were martyred. They never said, "Please let this cup pass from me."

Simon Peter, when he himself was about to be crucified, told his persecutors, "I am not worthy to die in the same manner as my Lord. Do me a favor! Crucify me upside down." Even he did not say, "Please let this cup pass from me."

When Stephen, the first Christian martyr, was being stoned to death, he did not say, "Let this cup pass from me." Rather, he died peacefully, praying for his tormentors.

Such bravery is not limited to the Bible, Nathan Hale, a young officer captured in the American Revolutionary War, said as he was about to be hanged, "I only regret that I have but one life to give for my country." He did not say, "Please let this cup pass from me."

Do you suppose that the Messiah, the Son of God, was weaker than all these people – especially if you think he came for the sole purpose of dying on the cross for world salvation? No! Were that the case, he would be unqualified as a Messiah. We have not understood the Lord Jesus.

The prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane was not uttered out of any selfish concern or fear of death. Jesus Christ, our Lord, was ready to die a thousand times over if that were the only way to bring about the salvation of humanity.

Jesus' concern was for his mission. He grieved at the suffering of his Heavenly Father. He was in turmoil because he could foresee the terrible consequences of his crucifixion. Jesus knew well that his crucifixion was not God's ultimate will. He knew his death would postpone the realization of the Kingdom of Heaven another 2,000 years, and that in the meantime humanity would suffer terribly.

He knew that millions of future followers would have to suffer, shedding their blood and being martyred as he had been. He knew Israel would be forsaken and desolate. And most of all, he had longed to bring victory and glorious fulfillment to his Father's

throne in heaven, not to return alone through the crucifixion. He had hoped for a triumphant homecoming.

So in the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus made his final desperate plea to God: “Even at this late hour, is there any possible way that I can remain on earth to fulfill my mission?” If we are to become true followers of Christ, we must fathom the grief and anguish that Jesus Christ suffered.

Furthermore, had the crucifixion been the full will of God, then Judas – Jesus’ betrayer – should be regarded as a hero and awarded a heavenly medal, because somebody had to hand the Son of God to the enemy to be crucified. Yet, Jesus said of Judas,

‘Woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed!  
It would have been better for that man if he had not been  
born.’ (Matt. 26:24)

And why should Jesus shout on the cross,

‘My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?’ (Matt.  
27:46)

If his crucifixion had been the will of God, Jesus should have been overjoyed. He would have shouted, “God, I am honored! Rejoice, Father, I am victorious!”

Christianity today has maintained the traditional view that Jesus came simply to die on the cross. This is how Christians have rationalized the murder of the Son of God!

### ***How the Second Coming Will Be Fulfilled***

Today, people cannot believe anything unless it is logical. God is truth, and truth is logical. There can be no perfection in ignorance.

Christian prayer alone could not lift Neil Armstrong to the moon. Scientific truth was necessary. I myself was once a student of

science, and I know that God is also the God of science. God's message has to be scientific, logical, and convincing to men of the 20th century.

Let me come now to the apex of this evening's talk by discussing how the Second Coming of Christ will be fulfilled.

We read in the Gospels,

'They will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.' (Matt. 24:30)

And in Revelation we read:

Behold, he is coming with the clouds. (Rev. 1:7)

But on the other hand, Paul wrote,

"The day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night."  
(I Thess. 5:2)

One prophecy envisions the Lord appearing with the clouds of heaven, and the other sneaking in like a thief in the night. These two prophecies are somewhat in conflict. If he comes as a thief, he cannot at the same time appear in the clouds. Shall we just choose one prophecy and throw the other out?

The people of 2,000 years ago did not know the message of God was in symbols. In interpreting it literally, they made a grave mistake. And when we Christians read the New Testament, we must not make the same mistake. We must read the Bible in the spirit of God, and discover the true meaning of its symbols and parables.

Two thousand years ago everyone expected Elijah to appear from the blue sky, but he did not come that way. Likewise, they expected the Messiah to come with the clouds of heaven, but he did not come that way either. Today, Christians await the Lord of the Second

Advent's arrival on the clouds. But do you have any guarantee that such expectations will not be disappointed this time?

Let us be humble and open minded enough to accept both possibilities – his coming on the clouds of heaven, and his coming as a thief at night. If you fix your mind only on the Lord's coming on the clouds, and it turns out that he comes as the Son of Man in the flesh, you will most likely commit the same crime as the people 2,000 years ago.

However, if you are humble and capable of accepting the Lord as the Son of Man in the flesh – which is the only way he could come as a thief – you win either way. You will be assured of meeting the Lord whichever way he comes.

If you could miss the Lord at all, it would be only if he came as a thief. If he comes on the clouds, you have no worry. Every eye would see him then. The television networks would make sure of that!

But I must advise you that God will not send His Son literally with the clouds of heaven. If you are gazing up in the sky and waiting for the Second Coming of the Lord, you will be disappointed. He will come, once again, as a man in the flesh.

This is God's revelation. Let me testify to it by reading the significant prophecies of the Bible. In Luke we read,

Being asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was coming, he [Jesus] answered them, 'The kingdom of God is not coming with signs to be observed.' (Luke 17:20)

Everyone would see the clouds of heaven. But Jesus said we would not observe the kingdom's coming. Did the people see the coming of the Messiah 2,000 years ago? No, they did not, because he came as the Son of Man in the flesh. Next let us examine a most extraordinary statement of Jesus Christ.



Most people ask, “Does the Bible really say that?” Look in Luke, where Jesus said,

‘But first he [the Lord of the Second Advent] must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation.’ (Luke 17:25)

If the Lord is coming with the clouds of heaven, in power and great glory, with the trumpets of angels, who could dare reject him or cause him suffering? Would you? These are Jesus’ words: He will suffer and be rejected, because he is coming as the Son of Man in the flesh. At first, people will have a difficult time recognizing him as the Christ.

Christian churches and devout Christians are expecting the coming of the Lord in the clouds of heaven. They are all looking up, waiting for his appearance. But if that expectation does not come true, and the Lord appears unexpectedly as the Son of man in the flesh – as Jesus came to this world the first time – then what will happen?

At first people will reject him and cause him suffering. There will be no faith on earth. There will be no initial acceptance of Christ. Many Christians will pick up stones to throw at him. Many Christians will call him a blasphemer, a heretic, a man possessed by demons. Those were the very charges brought against Jesus 2,000 years ago.

In Luke we read,

As it was in the time of Noah, so will it be in the days of the days of the Son of man. They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day when Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and destroyed them all. (Luke 17:26-27)

This is the description of the days of the Son of Man. And this will happen when the Lord comes as the Son of Man in the flesh.

The coming of Jesus as a man will herald the Kingdom of Heaven. But nobody will heed him. In fact, people will laugh at him, ridicule him, and persecute him, and do all kinds of evil against him.

And in the meantime, the world will continue in its usual way, in carnal business—eating, drinking, marrying—until the day the Lord is lifted up to the throne of judgment. When the world recognizes him as the Lord of Judgment, it will be too late! The ark will be closed. The judgment will already be at hand.

Now, I want you to consider another passage:

‘I tell you, he will vindicate them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man comes, will he find faith on earth?’  
(Luke 18:8)

Jesus questioned whether there would be faith on earth when Christ returned. Why?

History may repeat itself. Two thousand years ago tremendous faith existed. People prayed in the synagogues morning, noon, and night. They constantly read the Scriptures, writing them on their lapels, reciting them every day. They kept the Ten Commandments and all the laws. They brought their tithes to the temple. They fasted and fasted.

However, when the Son of God appeared, they failed to recognize him and condemned him to the cross. Did Jesus find any faith? In the sight of Jesus Christ, there was absolutely no faith on earth.

So when he returns as the Son of Man in the flesh, there also may be no faith on earth. Millions of Christians and thousands of churches may never see the Son of Man coming, because it will be in the flesh.

Now, finally, let us read Matthew,

‘On that day many will say to me, “Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and cast our demons in your name, and do many mighty works in your name?” And then will I declare to them, “I never knew you; depart from me, you evildoers.” (Matt. 7:22)

What does this mean? Why should these devout Christians, who are calling on the name of the Lord, be condemned as evildoers? What wrong will they have done?

Throughout history many crimes and sins have been committed in the name of the Lord, in the name of God.

There is no better example of this than what happened in Jesus’ time. The people who plotted to kill Jesus Christ – and finally succeeded in crucifying him on the cross – were the very people who had faithfully followed the word of God day and night. But when the Son of God came to them, they committed the worst crime in history. They killed God’s only Son, and they did it in the name of the Lord!

By the same token, when Christ comes to us once again as a man in the flesh, how can we be sure that the Christians of today will not be the first ones to cast stones at the returned Christ? Today we have the same responsibility as the people of 2,000 years ago. No matter how great our works or our prayers, when God sends His Son, if we do not recognize him and unite with him, he will say to us, “Depart from me, you evildoers.”

If it is ever true that history repeats itself, then the Christians of today could become the worst enemies of the returned Christ. They may attempt to crucify him once again in the name of the Lord.

However, even though the initial rejection and persecution may be very severe, Christ is not returning to be crucified again. The Lord of the Second Advent will be victorious and will finally be elevated to the throne of judgment and shall judge the world as the Lord of Judgment.

When he is lifted up to the throne, then every eye shall see him. It will be unmistakably clear to everyone who he is. And those who have previously accused and rejected him will wail and mourn because of the evil they have done to him. But it will be too late. The Lord will say to them, “I never knew you. Depart from me, you evildoers.”

The Lord is coming. And he is coming as a man. Yet, he is also coming with the power and glory of God. And he will judge the world. Only the meek will be blessed. The arrogant will see the unquenchable fire.

### ***Meaning of the Clouds of Heaven***

Then what is the true meaning of the “clouds of heaven”? Let us note once again that the Bible is written in symbols. Jesus said, “I am the vine, you are the branches.” This is, of course, a symbolic expression.

By the same token, the “clouds of heaven” has a spiritual meaning, not a physical one. For instance, we read in Revelation,

The waters that you saw, where the harlot is seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. (Rev. 17:15)

The Bible indicates that water is a symbol for the multitudes of fallen mankind.

What are clouds? They are vaporized water. Water is often impure, dirty, with many foreign elements in it, but when such water is evaporated into clouds, it leaves its impurities behind. Thus, those people who are vaporized and purified from among the waters of mankind are symbolically in the position of the clouds of heaven.

Jesus is coming among those prepared people, God’s people. He is coming among the consecrated, reborn Christians – those who are purified, elevated, cleansed from sin. They will form the foundation

of the Kingdom of God when Jesus returns to earth. This is the true meaning of the clouds of heaven.

### ***God's Purpose Fulfilled***

First Adam and Eve: God actually intended His Kingdom on earth to begin with the first Adam and Eve. If they had been truly obedient to God and achieved perfection, God would have united them in heavenly matrimony and established the first family on earth according to His will. This family would have become the cornerstone of the Kingdom of God on earth, with Adam and Eve as the True Father and True Mother of all people. The Garden of Eden is the symbolic expression for that kingdom. And this world would have been the world of joy for God.

Second Adam and Eve: Although the first Adam and Eve failed, God's ideal remained the same. God determined to realize that original kingdom and fulfill the world of joy. And 4,000 years later in biblical history, God intended to restore that Kingdom of God on earth through another perfected Adam. Jesus Christ was that perfected Adam.

Paul called Jesus the "last Adam," or the second Adam (I Col 15:45). He came as the perfected Adam 2,000 years ago in place of the first Adam, who had failed.

The restoration of Adam alone could not bring a kingdom. There had to be a bride, a mother – another Eve. So God intended for this perfected Adam – Jesus Christ – to restore his bride, the perfected Eve. This would have been the restoration of the first family, lost since the Garden of Eden.

Third Adam and Eve: Because of the rebellion of the chosen people of Israel, however, this never happened. Nevertheless, God is determined to fulfill His will. Thus, He has promised the return of Christ.

Approximately 2,000 years have passed since Jesus Christ's death. And now, God is once again ready to send His son – in the capacity

of the Third Adam. Throughout history, God has always fulfilled His goal at His third attempt. It is true that the number three is the number of perfection. This time, God will definitely fulfill His age old ideal by blessing the perfected Adam and Eve in heavenly matrimony, thus laying the foundation of the Kingdom of God on earth.

This ultimate condition is prophesied in the Book of Revelation as the marriage supper of the Lamb. And the Lord of the Second Advent is that Lamb, that perfect Adam. The Lord is coming as perfected Adam, and he will restore perfected Eve. Then they will be lifted up as the first True Parents of mankind. At last, God's joy will be complete.

Shortly before his crucifixion, Jesus said to Peter,

‘I will give you the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, and whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.’  
(Matt. 16:19).

The error was made here on earth. Sin was committed here on earth. So the error must be remedied and sin eradicated here on earth. Jesus asked us to pray, “Thy Kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven.” Earth is the problem. That is why Christ must come back to this earth.

Many Christians believe that at the end of the world, God will destroy everything. The sun will be darkened, the stars will fall, and the earth will be burned up. A mere handful of Christians will be lifted up in the air, to spend the millennium with Christ.

If God did that, then He would become a God of failure, His original will forever unfulfilled. He would be relinquishing this earth to Satan. Then Satan would actually become the victor, and God the loser. This will never happen! God is almighty. He will not give up on this earth. It was meant to be, and it shall be, His kingdom. This New York shall be His kingdom, too.

You can be the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven if you meet the coming Messiah. He is your hope, my hope, and the only hope of America and this world.

If we fail to see him, however, then Christianity will have no hope. Christianity will decline. Its spiritual fire will be extinguished. The churches will become the tombs of the old legacy. Our world then will be doomed.

Ladies and gentlemen, I have come here to Madison Square Garden tonight in obedience to God's command. The Bible says,

And in the last days it shall be, God declares, that I will pour out my spirit on all flesh, and your sons and daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams.' (Acts 2:17)

We are living in such an extraordinary time, at the birth of a new age! Heaven is quite near. And if you earnestly call upon God, He will answer you.

You must urgently ask Him, "How can I know if Reverend Moon is telling the truth?" Do not let me or anyone else answer that question for you. Let God answer you directly.

So go in peace, and please ask God earnestly, sincerely. Confront God in prayer. God will reveal the answer to you.

The new hope for mankind is the Messiah. And that "great and terrible day of the Lord" is at hand. It is up to you whether that day will be great or terrible. If you meet the Messiah, for you that day will be great. But if you fail to meet him, then for you that day will indeed be terrible.

God bless you. Thank you for your attentive listening.

Kamsa hamnida! Thank you, and good evening.

## APPENDIX 2

**The Future of Christianity**  
*Sun Myung Moon*  
*October 28, 1973*  
*New Orleans, Louisiana*

Christians, and Christianity itself, have a final hill to cross. Biblical prophecy states that Christians must pass through the end of the world and face the judgment of fire at the great and terrible day of the Lord. The Bible says we are going to see many extraordinary phenomena, in heaven and on earth, as the end comes near.

When Jesus promised his Second Coming, he conveyed a feeling of great imminence. From the day Jesus Christ ascended into heaven, Christians have been watching for his return to earth. For the last 2,000 years of history, it has been the hope of every Christian to see the returning Christ. But this extraordinary event has never occurred. Many people tired of waiting. Some finally decided this Second Coming would not happen literally. They came to think, "This is just one of God's methods to keep us alert."

Tonight we must clarify the meaning of the end of the world as the Bible prophesies it. We must also know how the Lord will reappear when he comes in the fullness of time.

We should first of all understand that God did not create the world to end. He always intended the world of goodness to last forever. The God who does not create for eternity cannot be an almighty God. The present world must end, however, because the fall of man initiated a history of evil. The end of the world is necessary because we have not achieved God's intended world of goodness. Instead of becoming children of goodness, we have in reality become creatures of evil.



## ***The Wrong Direction of History***

Adam and Eve fell in the Garden of Eden. They were not at that time in a position to have a clear understanding of the will of God. They entered into a state of confusion and made the wrong choice. They were confronted with either obedience to God, which would have brought about the good world, or obedience to Satan, which did in fact bring about their fall. Between two clear choices, Adam and Eve made the wrong one. They brought evil into the world. God's original intention was to create His ideal world—a good and prosperous world He determined to last for eternity. But man fell, the good world of God ended abruptly, and human history started in the wrong direction.

The history of mankind is therefore a history of evil. God sowed good seed, and He intended to harvest a good crop. But Satan stole His crop before it was ripened and reaped a harvest of evil. Human history is a crop of weeds.

Then what does the end of the world mean? Just what is going to end? Evil is going to end. God will put an end to all evil. Out of God's new beginning will come a new opportunity for man. And the goodness God intended in His original ideal can be made real.

In the Garden of Eden man fell into evil instead of developing his goodness. Man was subjugated by Satan and became the child of sin. Therefore the Bible says:

“You are of your father the devil...” (John 8:44)

If the fall of man had not occurred, then the true ruler would be God. But He is not today the king of this universe, because Satan is sitting upon God's throne. God has to remove all results of the fall of man before He can truly reign over the world.

Now I will give you clearly the definition of the end of the world. The end of the world is the moment in history when God ends evil and begins His new age. It is the time of the cross junction between the old history of evil and the new history of good.

In light of this definition, why does the Bible predict extraordinary heavenly phenomena as signs of the end of the world? Will the things predicted really occur? The Bible says:

‘Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken’ (Matt. 24:29)

What does this mean? What are we to expect?

First of all, please rest assured that these things will not happen literally. God will not destroy anything in the universe. God often expresses His truth in symbols and parables, and these biblical sayings will be accomplished symbolically. Secondly, God has no reason to destroy the universe. It is not the universe, but man who has committed sin. Only man deviated from the original plan of God’s creation. Why should God destroy the animals, or the plants, or anything in creation which fulfilled His purpose as He intended? God would not destroy those innocent things.

The Bible there says,

‘A generation goes, and a generation comes, but the earth remains forever’ (Eccl. 1:4)

But in Revelation we read:

‘Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away...’ (Rev. 21:1)

That new heaven and new earth refers to the coming of a new history of God, a time of new dominion. After you buy a house,

won't you move in your family and possessions? Then you will say that you have a new home, and you are the new master of the house. In the same way, when men of God occupy this universe, it will become a new heaven and a new earth.

We know that when winter ends, spring begins. But can we say at precisely what point spring starts? Who can pinpoint the exact instant of transition? You cannot know because the passage from one season to another takes place imperceptibly, quietly. The end of winter is similar to the beginning of spring, so there is no discernible moment of transition.

At what moment does the old day end and a new day begin? Although the change occurs in darkness, there is no doubt that we do go from one day to the next. The change is unnoticeable at first, but it is also inevitable and irrevocable. Although three billion people live on earth, not one among them can point to the exact moment when the old day passes and the new day begins. So we understand that from the human point of view we cannot always know the precise moment things happen. But God knows when winter passes into spring, and God knows when night opens into day. And God can point to the transition into new history.

Our step into new history is like a glorious dawn emerging out of the blackest night. The crossing point between good and evil is not obvious. You will not notice it when it happens, but it will definitely take place, just as surely as the sun will rise tomorrow.

### *God's Servants and Prophets*

Then how can we know when the end is approaching? God will not hide this moment from man; He does not suddenly bring judgment on the world without warning. God will announce the coming of the great and terrible day through his prophets. Amos 3:7 says,

‘Surely the Lord God does nothing, without revealing his secret to his servants the prophets.’

God chooses His instrument and through him God announces His plans. This has been the case throughout Bible history.

The person to be chosen as God's prophet must be one of the people living in our evil world. But he must be a man of faith who can demonstrate that he is worthy to be used by God. He must show absolute faith. To do this he must give up all worldly success and completely separate himself from this evil world. He must purify himself by cutting off all evil attachments. He will not be popular in the evil world. God is absolute good and therefore the exact opposite of evil. That is why evil always persecutes a man of God.

Noah was such a man chosen by God and scorned by the evil world. God instructed Noah to build a ship. He sent Noah to the heights of a mountain instead of down by the riverside or to the seashore. God's command was so ridiculous in the eyes of the evil world that many people laughed at Noah. He was ridiculed, not because people thought him a particularly funny man, but because he followed God's instructions so faithfully. The eyes of the world could not understand the way of God. In this manner, with such implausible instructions, God could test the faith of the man he had chosen as His champion. This is what happened in Noah's day.

And at the time of Abraham it was no different. God called Abraham, the son of an idol-maker, and commanded him, "Leave your home at once!" God does not allow for any compromise. God takes a position where evil can be totally denied. In no other way can good begin.

God has said He will start a new history, in which no element of evil will remain. God demands complete response from man. Those who follow God's direction must begin from absolute denial of the evil world. That is why Jesus Christ taught:

'He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for my sake will find it.' (Matt. 10:39)

He also said, ‘... a man’s foes will be those of his own household.’  
(Matt. 10:36)

You may ask, what kind of message is this? This is God’s way, to choose His own people and put them in a position where they will be rejected by evil. Otherwise His champion can do no good for God. From the point of view of God’s standard, then, modern Christians have been having a very easy time. This is very strange, because there is no easy way indicated in Christian teaching. I wonder how many Christians are really serious about following the path of God? God’s demand is absolute. It allows for no middle ground.

Then how can we know clearly the path of God? Let us examine the history of God’s providence. Today we are anticipating the end of the world. God has made previous attempts to end the world. For example, the time of Noah; that was a crossroads in history, when God wanted to bring an end to evil and begin the world of goodness. Noah was the central figure chosen in God’s dispensation. To better understand Noah’s mission and the meaning of the end of the world, we want to know more fully how the evil history began.

In the Garden of Eden, God gave Adam and Eve a commandment. That commandment was the word of God. Then Satan approached and enticed them with a lie. And that lie was the word of evil. Adam and Eve were in a position to choose between the two words: The truth was on one side, and a lie was on the other. They chose the lie.

Because this was the process of the fall of man, at the end of the world God will give mankind truth. The words of God will come through His prophet. When man accepts the words of God he will then pass from death to life, because truth brings life. Man has died in a lie, and in truth he will be reborn.

### ***The Judgment of Words***

Therefore judgment comes by words. These words of God’s judgment will be revealed by His chosen prophets. This is the process of the ending of the world. Those who obey and listen to

the new word of truth shall have life. Those who deny the word will continue to live in death.

God chose Noah to declare the word. Noah's announcement was, "The flood is coming. The salvation is the ark." The people could have saved themselves by listening to Noah's words. However, the people treated Noah as if he were a crazy man, and they perished—because they opposed the word of God. According to the Bible, only the eight people of Noah's immediate family became passengers on the ark. Only these eight believed, and only these eight were saved.

God had said to Noah,

'I have determined to make an end of all flesh; for the earth is filled with violence through them; behold, I will destroy them with the earth.' (Gen. 6:13)

Did this actually happen? We know the evil people perished, but was the physical world demolished in the process? No. This passage was not literally fulfilled, and God did not destroy the earth. God did eradicate the people and destroy evil the sovereignty, leaving only the good people of Noah's family. This was God's way to begin to restore the original world of goodness through Noah.

If God had fully consummated His restoration at that time, then we would have heard no more about the end of the world. Once the perfect world of goodness is realized, another end of the world is not necessary. Nothing could then interfere with the eternal reign of God's perfect kingdom.

But the very fact that we anticipate the end of the world today is proof that God did not succeed at the time of Noah. What happened to Noah after the flood should be fully explained, but I cannot spend too much time on that subject tonight. To make a long story short, once again, sin crept into Noah's family through his son, Ham. God's flood judgment was thereby nullified, and evil human history continued until the time of Jesus Christ.

With the coming of Christ, God again attempted to end the world. Jesus came to start the new Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Thus, the first words Jesus spoke were, “Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.” Indeed, the time of Jesus Christ’s ministry was the end of the world. That great and terrible day was prophesied by Malachi, about 400 years before the birth of Jesus:

For behold, the day comes, burning like an oven, when all the arrogant and all evil-doers will be stubble; the day that comes shall burn them up, says the Lord of hosts, so that it will leave them neither root nor branch! (Mal. 4:1)

Was the judgment of Jesus Christ done by literal fire? Did the day come at the time of Jesus when everything literally turned to ashes? No, we know it did not. Since these things prophesied did not literally happen at that time, some people say that such prophecy must have been meant for the time of the Second Advent. But this cannot be the case.

John the Baptist came to the world as the last prophet; Jesus said:

‘... all the prophets and the law prophesied until John... ‘  
(Matt. 11:13)

The coming of John the Baptist should have put an end to prophecy and the Mosaic Law. This is what Jesus said would happen. The purpose of all prophecy before Jesus was to prepare for his coming, and to indicate what was to be fulfilled up to the time of his coming. These prophecies are not for the time of the Lord of the Second Advent. God sent His son Jesus into the world, intending full and perfect salvation to be accomplished. The Second Coming was made necessary only by lack of fulfillment at the time of the first coming.

Why then was the time of Jesus the end of the world? We already know the answer. It is because Jesus came to end the evil sovereignty and bring forth God’s sovereignty upon the earth. This was the end of the Old Testament age and the beginning of the age of the New Testament. Jesus brought the words of new truth.

How did the people receive the gospel which he brought? The Jewish leaders accused Jesus and had him crucified. They were prisoners to the letter of the Old Testament and could not perceive the presence of the spirit of God in the new truth. It is ironic that Jesus fell victim to the very prophecies that were to testify to him as the Son of God. By the letter of the Mosaic Law he was judged a criminal. Blindly the people nailed him to the cross.

At the time of Jesus many learned people, many leaders of churches, and many people prominent in society who were well versed in the Law and the prophets were waiting for a Messiah. How happy they would have been to have their Messiah recite the Old Testament exactly, syllable by syllable and word by word! But Jesus Christ did not come to repeat the Mosaic Law. He came to pronounce a new law of God. People missed the whole point. And Jesus was accused. The people of Israel said to him,

‘We stone you for no good work, but for blasphemy; because you, being a man, make yourself God.’ (John 10:33)

The Bible states: “And they reviled him (one of Jesus’ disciples), saying,

‘You are his disciple, but we are disciples of Moses. We know that God has spoken to Moses, but as for this man, we do not know where he comes from.’ (John 9:28-29)

This was the way they looked at Jesus. Those people who diligently obeyed the letter of the Mosaic Law disobeyed Jesus Christ. The most devout of the Jewish faithful were the first ones to be judged by Jesus.

Now at this time I would like to clarify the meaning of “judgment by fire.”



We read in the New Testament:

... the heavens will be kindled and dissolved, and the elements will melt with fire! (II Peter 3:12)

How can this fantastic prophecy come true? Will it happen literally? No. The statement has symbolic meaning. God would not destroy His earth, His stars, and all creation without realizing His ideal on earth. If He did so, then God would become the God of defeat. And who would be His conqueror? It would be Satan. This can never happen to God. Even on our human level, once we determine to do something, we see it through to its completion. How much more so will God almighty accomplish His will. When God speaks of judgment by fire in the Bible, He does not mean He will bring judgment by flames. The significant meaning is a symbolic one.

Let us now consider another biblical passage which speaks of fire. Jesus proclaimed,

‘I came to cast a fire upon the earth; and would that it were already kindled!’ (Luke 12:49)

Did Jesus throw literal, blazing fire about? Of course not.

The fire in the Bible is symbolic. It stands for the word of God. This is why James 3:6 states, “... the tongue is a fire...”

The tongue speaks the word, and the word is from God. Jesus himself said,

‘He who rejects me and does not receive my sayings has a judge; the word that I have spoken will be his judge on the last day.’ (John 12:48)

In contemporary society, the word of the court executes judgment. The word is the law. In this universe, God is in the position of judge. Jesus came as the attorney with authority to oppose Satan, the prosecutor of man. Satan accuses man with his words, but these are

false charges. Jesus champions the cause of believers, and his standard is the word of truth. God pronounces the sentence: His love is the standard, and love is His word. There is no difference between the earthly court and the heavenly court, in that both conduct their trials by words, not by fire.

So the world will not be burned up by fire when it is judged. The Bible says "... the Lord Jesus will slay him [the evil one] with the breath of his mouth..." (II Thess. 2:8)

The word of God is the breath of his mouth. Jesus came to slay the wicked by the word of God, and "... he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips he shall slay the wicked." (Is. 11:4)

What then is the "rod of his mouth?" We take this symbol to mean his tongue—through which he speaks the word of God.

Let's resolve this point completely. Look to where Jesus was instructing the people: "Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears my word and believes Him who sent me, has eternal life; he does not come into judgment, but has passed from death to life." John 5:24) Men pass from death to life by words of truth. God will not send you the Messiah to burn you up. He will not send you the Messiah to set your houses afire or destroy your society. But if we reject the word of God spoken by the Lord, we leave no choice open except to be condemned by judgment. Here is the reason why.

In the beginning God created man and the universe by His word-*logos*. Man denied the word of God and fell. Spiritual death has reigned ever since. Through His salvation work, God has been recreating man. Man fell by disobedience to God's word, and man shall be recreated by obedience to the same word of God. The word of God is given by the Lord. Accepting the word brings life out of death. Such death is the hell in which we live. Thus the word of God is the judge, and it will bring upon you a far more profound effect than the hottest flames.

## *If Israel Had Accepted Jesus*

Now at this time we can examine another important point. What would have happened if the people of Israel had wholeheartedly accepted Jesus Christ? Imagine the nation of Israel united with Jesus. What would that have meant? First of all, Jesus would not have been killed. People would have glorified Jesus as the living Lord. They would have then marched to Rome with the living Christ as their commander-in-chief, and Rome would have surrendered to the Son of God in his own lifetime. But in the sad reality of history, it took four centuries for a band of Jesus' disciples to conquer Rome. Jesus never won the chosen people of Israel, and he never gained the support he needed from them. He came to erect the Kingdom of God on earth, but instead he had to caution his disciples even to keep his identity a secret because people did not accept his legitimacy as the Messiah, and he therefore lacked the power to be the king of kings.

Today we have much to learn, and we must not believe blindly. We must know the hidden truth behind the Bible. Jesus was crucified, not by his own will, but by the will of others. Rejection by the chosen people of Israel killed Jesus Christ.

Right now I am making a bold declaration. Jesus did not come to die. Jesus Christ was murdered. Let me repeat: Jesus Christ was murdered, and his own people had him killed. Even the Roman governor Pilate wanted to release Jesus. He did not find any fault with Jesus. But Christ's own people rejected him and forced Pilate to release Barabbas instead. What a pity! What a tragedy!

This may be shocking and astounding news to you, but if you are only surprised, then you have missed my purpose. I am revealing these things because of my duty to bear witness to the truth.

It was the chosen people of Israel, the chief priests, the elders, the scribes, and the faithful, who shouted at Pilate's court. "Crucify him!" Saint Paul said, "None of the rulers of this age understood this; for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory" (I Cor. 2:8)

The people living at the time of Jesus Christ made a terrible mistake. But do you think they were so much more ignorant and less aware than we are today? No, not at all. They learned the Old Testament word by word and memorized the Mosaic Law. Based on their understanding, Jesus did not meet the qualifications to be the Messiah.

The Jewish people were in a very difficult position. If they wanted to believe the Law and the prophets, they had to abandon the Law of Moses as they understood it. Four thousand years of tradition had been based on the Old Testament. It was very, very difficult for people to just wake up one morning, turn away from the Law, and totally accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Because people had their eyes riveted to the letter of the Law, the spirit of the Law simply passed them by.

Let us look into the Old Testament and examine the prophecy of Malachi:

‘... I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of the Lord comes. And he will turn the hearts of fathers to their children and the hearts of children to their fathers...’ (Mal. 4:5-6)

The people of Israel knew God’s promise clearly. They knew it by heart. And they expected the coming of Elijah before the Messiah appeared. When the Messiah did come, naturally they asked, “Where is Elijah?”

Elijah had been a prophet who performed miraculous works about 900 years before Christ. And it was written he ascended into heaven in a chariot of fire. Since Elijah ascended upward into heaven, he was expected to return from heaven. Did such a miracle happen before the coming of Jesus? Did the people hear any news about the arrival of Elijah? No, they did not. But what they did hear one day was the voice of Jesus Christ declaring, “I am the Son of God, the only begotten Son of God.” And Jesus spoke not timidly, but with authority and power. Such a man could not be ignored.

## ***The Question of Elijah***

This presented a great dilemma for the people of Israel. They immediately asked, “If this Jesus is the Messiah, then where is Elijah?” They earnestly expected the Messiah at that time, so they were also waiting for Elijah. They believed he would come straight down from heaven, right out of the sky, and the Messiah would come soon after, in a similar manner.

So when Jesus proclaimed himself as the Son of God, the Jewish people became puzzled. If there had come no Elijah, then there could be no Messiah. And no one had told them that Elijah had come. The disciples of Jesus were also confused. When they went out to preach the gospel, people persistently denied that Jesus could be the Son of God because the disciples were unable to prove that Elijah had come. They confronted this problem everywhere they went.

The disciples of Jesus were not educated in the Old Testament. Many learned people rebuked them when they went out to preach, asking, “Do you not know the Old Testament? Do you not know the Mosaic Law?” The disciples were embarrassed when they were attacked through the verses of the Law and the prophets. One day they came back to Jesus and put the question to him:

‘... why do the scribes say that first Elijah must come?’  
He replied, ‘Elijah does come, and he is to restore all things; but I tell you that Elijah has already come, and they did not know him, but did to him whatever they pleased. So also the Son of man will suffer at their hands.’ Then the disciples understood that he was speaking to them of John the Baptist.’ (Matt. 17:10-13)

## ***According to Jesus, John the Baptist was Elijah***

This was the truth. We have determined the truth according to the words of Jesus Christ. But the disciples of Jesus could not convince the elders and chief priests and scribes of this fact. To those men, the idea was simply ridiculous. The only authority that supported

such a notion was the word of Jesus of Nazareth. That is why the testimony of John the Baptist was so crucial. But alas, John himself denied that he was Elijah when he was asked! His denial made Jesus seem to be a liar.

Read the Bible: ‘And this is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, ‘Who are you?’... And they asked him, ‘What then? Are you Elijah?’

He said, ‘I am not.’ Are you the prophet?’ And he answered, ‘No’. (John 1:19-21)

John himself said, “I am not Elijah.” But Jesus had said, “He is Elijah.”

John made it almost impossible for the people to know that Elijah had come. But Jesus declared the truth anyway. He said,

‘... if you are willing to accept it, he [John the Baptist] is Elijah who is to come’ (Matt. 11:14)

Jesus knew that most people could not accept the truth. Instead they questioned the motivation of Jesus. In order for Jesus to seem like the Messiah, Elijah had to come first, so the people thought he was lying for the purpose of his own self-aggrandizement. The Son of God became more and more misunderstood by the people. This was such a grave situation. In those days, the influence of John the Baptist was felt in every corner of Israel. But Jesus Christ was an obscure and ambiguous figure in his society. Nobody was in a position to take Jesus’ words as the truth. This failure of John was the major cause of the crucifixion of Jesus.

John the Baptist had already seen the Spirit of God descending upon the head of Jesus Christ at the Jordan. At that time he testified:

‘I saw the Spirit descend as a dove from heaven, and it remained on him. I myself did not know him; but he who sent me to baptize with water said to me, ‘He on whom

you see the Spirit descend and remain, this is he who baptizes with the Holy Spirit' And I have seen and have borne witness that this is the Son of God.' (John 1:32-34)

### ***Rumors About Jesus***

Yes, John the Baptist bore witness, and he did the job that God intended for him to do at that time. But later on, doubts came to him, and he finally succumbed to the many rumors circulating about Jesus. One such rumor called Jesus fatherless, an illegitimate child. John the Baptist certainly heard that rumor, and he wondered how such a person could be the Son of God. Even though he had witnessed to Jesus, John later became suspicious and betrayed him. If John the Baptist had truly united with Jesus Christ, he could have moved his people to accept Jesus as the Messiah, for the power and influence of John was very great in those days.

I am telling you many unusual things, and you may ask by what authority I am speaking. It is the authority of the Bible, and with the authority of revelation. Let us read the Bible together, and see word by word how John the Baptist acted.

'Now when John heard in prison about the deeds of the Christ, he sent word by his disciples and said to him, "Are you he who is to come, or shall we look for another?"' (Matt. 11:2-3)

This was long after he had testified to Jesus as the Son of God. How could he even ask, "Are you he who is to come as the Son of God?" after the testimony of the Spirit to him? Jesus was truly sorrowful. He felt anger. Jesus refused to answer John the Baptist with a straight yes or no. He replied instead,

'Blessed is he who takes no offense at me.' (Matt. 11:6)

Let me paraphrase what Jesus meant: "John, I am sorry that you took offense at me. At one time you recognized me, but now you doubt me. I am sorry your faith has proved to be so weak."

After this incident, Jesus spoke to the crowds concerning John. He put a rhetorical question to them:

‘What did you go out into the wilderness to behold? A reed shaken by the wind? Why then did you go out? To see a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, those who wear soft raiment are in kings’ houses. Why then did you go out? To see a prophet? Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet. This is he of whom it is written, “Behold I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee.”’ (Matt. 11:7-10)

What Jesus was saying here was this: “John, you went out to the wilderness to see the person more than a prophet—the Messiah, the Son of God. You have seen everything but missed the vital point, the core of your mission. You indeed failed to recognize me and failed to live up to God’s expectation. It is God who expects of you ‘to make ready for the Lord a people prepared.’ You have failed.”

Jesus concluded:

‘Truly, I say to you, among those born of women there has risen no one greater than John the Baptist; yet he who is the least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he’ (Matt. 11:11)

Conventional Christian interpretations have never fully explained the meaning of this controversial verse.

The missions of prophets through the ages were to prepare for or testify to the Messiah. Prophets always testified from a distance of time. John the Baptist was the greatest among prophets because only he was the prophet contemporary with the Messiah, the prophet who could bear witness, in person, to the living Christ. But John failed to recognize the Messiah. Even the least of the prophets then living in the spiritual world knew Jesus was the Son of God. That is why John, who was given the greatest mission, and failed, became less than the least.



Jesus said,

‘From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven has suffered violence, and men of violence take it by force.’ (Matt. 11:12)

John the Baptist was the chosen instrument of God, destined to be the chief disciple of Jesus. He failed in his responsibility, and Simon Peter, by the strength and force of his faith, earned that central position for himself on his own merit. Other men stronger and more violent in faith than John the Baptist fought relentlessly with Jesus for the realization of God’s kingdom on earth. The devout men who righteously followed John the Baptist could not become the 12 apostles and 70 Disciples of Christ, as they were to have been. If John the Baptist had become the chief disciple of Jesus, those two together would have united all of Israel. But the truth is that John the Baptist did not follow the Son of God.

One day John’s followers came to him and asked,

‘Rabbi, he who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you bore witness, here he is baptizing, and all are going to him’ (John 3:26)

They carried concern in their question: “Look at all the people going to Jesus. What about you?” John the Baptist replied,

‘He must increase, but I must decrease.’ (John 3:30)

Usually Christians interpret this passage as proof of John’s humble personality. This is an incorrect understanding of the meaning of his words. If Jesus and John had been united, their destiny would be to rise or fall together. Then Jesus could not increase his reputation while John’s own prestige diminished! The lessening of his own role was what John feared.

John once stated the Messiah was the one ‘... whose sandals I am not worthy to carry...’ (Matt. 3:11)

Yet he failed to follow Jesus even after he knew that Jesus was the Son of God. John the Baptist was a man without excuse. He should have followed

### *Responsible for the Crucifixion*

God sent John as a forerunner to the Messiah. His mission was clearly defined,

‘...to make ready for the Lord a people prepared’ (Luke 1:17)

But because of John’s betrayal, Jesus Christ had no ground upon which to start his ministry. The people had not been prepared to receive Jesus. Therefore, he had to go out from his home and work all by himself, trying to create a foundation on which the people could believe in him. There can be no doubt that John the Baptist was a man of failure. He was directly responsible for the crucifixion of Jesus Christ.

You may again want to ask me, “With what authority do you say these things?” I spoke with Jesus Christ in the spirit world. And I spoke also with John the Baptist. This is my authority. If you cannot at this time determine that my words are the truth, you will surely discover that they are in the course of time. These are hidden truths presented to you as new revelations. You have heard me speak from the Bible. If you believe the Bible you must believe what I am saying.

We must therefore come to this solemn conclusion: The crucifixion of Jesus was a result of the rejection by the Jewish people. The major cause of their rejection was the betrayal of John. Thus we have learned that Jesus did not come to die on the cross. If Jesus had come to die, then he would not have offered that tragic and anguished prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane. Jesus said to his disciples:

‘My soul is very sorrowful, even to death; remain here and watch with me’ And going a little farther he fell on

his face and prayed, 'My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.' (Matt. 26: 38-39)

Jesus prayed this way not just once, but three times. If death on the cross had been the fulfillment of God's will, Jesus would certainly have prayed instead, "Father, I am honored to die on the cross for Your will."

But Jesus prayed asking that this cup pass from him. If his prayer came out of his fear of death, such weakness would disqualify him as the Son of God. We have witnessed the courageous death of many martyrs throughout Christian history and even elsewhere people who not only overcame their fear of death but made their final sacrifice a great victory. Out of so many martyrs, how could Jesus alone be the one to show his fear and weakness, particularly if his crucifixion was the glorious moment of his fulfillment of the will of God? Jesus did not pray this way from weakness. To believe such a thing is an outrage to Jesus Christ.

The prayer of Jesus at the Garden of Gethsemane did not come from his fear of death or suffering. Jesus would have been willing and ready to die a thousand times over if that could have achieved the will of God. He agonized right up to the moment of death, and he made one final plea to God, because he knew his death would only cause the prolongation of God's dispensation.

### ***A Tragic Misunderstanding***

Jesus wanted to live and fulfill his mission. It is a tragic misunderstanding to believe that Jesus prayed for a little more earthly life out of the frailness of his human soul. Young Nathan Hale, in the American struggle for independence, was able to say at the time of his execution, "I regret that I have but one life to give for my country!" Do you think Jesus Christ was a lesser soul than Nathan Hale? No! Nathan Hale was a great patriot. But Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

Think this over. If Jesus came to die on the cross, would he not need a man to deliver him up? You know that Judas Iscariot is the disciple who betrayed Jesus. If Jesus fulfilled God's will with his death on the cross, then Judas should be glorified as the man who made the crucifixion possible. Judas would have been aiding God's dispensation. But Jesus said of Judas,

‘The Son of man goes as it is written of him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! It would have been better for that man if he had not been born.’  
(Matt. 26:24)

Judas killed himself.

Furthermore, if God had wanted His son to be crucified, He did not need 4,000 years to prepare the chosen people. He would have done better to send Jesus to a tribe of barbarians, where he could have been killed even faster, and the will of God would have been realized more rapidly.

I must tell you again, it was the will of God to have Jesus Christ accepted by his people. That is why God labored in hope and anguish to prepare fertile soil for the heavenly seed of the Messiah. That is why God established His chosen people of Israel. That is why God sent prophet after prophet to awaken the people of Israel to ready themselves for the Lord.

God warned them and chastised them; He persuaded them and scolded them, pushed them and punished them because He wanted His people to accept His Son. One day the disciples asked Jesus,

“What must we do, to be doing the works of God?”  
Jesus answered them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent” (John 6:28-29)

The chosen people of Israel did the very thing God had labored to prevent. They rejected the one He had sent.

Jesus had one purpose throughout the three years of his public ministry: acceptance. He could not fulfill his mission otherwise. From the very first day, he preached the gospel without equivocation, so that the people could hear the truth and accept him as the Son of God. The word of God should have led them to accept him. However, when Jesus saw that the people were not likely to receive him by the words of God alone, he began to perform mighty works. He hoped that people could recognize him through his miracles.

‘Now Jesus did many other signs in the presence of the disciples, which are not written in this book; but these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing you may have life in his name.’ (John 20:30-31)

Jesus gave sight to the blind and made the lepers clean. He healed the lame and blessed the deaf with hearing. Jesus raised the dead. He did these things only because he wanted to be accepted. Yet the people said of him,

‘It is only by Beelzebub, the prince of demons, that this man casts out demons.’ (Matt. 12:24)

What a heartbreaking situation! Jesus soon saw the hopelessness of gaining the acceptance of the people. In anger and desperation he chastised them: ‘You brood of vipers!...’ (Matt. 12:34)

He did not hide his wrath, but exploded in anger.

‘Woe to you, Chorazin! woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the mighty works done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.’ (Matt. 11:21)

And he wept when he drew near the city of Jerusalem.

‘O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning those who are sent to you! How often would I have gathered your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not!’ (Matt. 23:37)

### ***No Hope of Avoiding Death***

Who has ever understood the broken heart of Jesus? He said, ‘Would that even today you knew the things that make for peace! But now they are hid from your eyes.’ (Luke 19:42)

By that time Jesus knew there was absolutely no hope of avoiding death. Yet he pleaded with God in Gethsemane, and he pleaded with God on the cross:

‘My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?’ (Matt. 27:46)

Thus Jesus died on the cross, not of his own will, not of the will of God, but by the will of men. Christ was destined to return from that moment on. He will return to consummate his mission on earth. Mankind must await his Second Coming for the complete salvation of the world.

Many people may now ask, “What about the prophecies in the Old Testament concerning the death of Jesus on the cross?” I am aware of those prophecies, such as Isaiah, Chapter 53. We must know that there are dual lines of prophecy in the Bible. One group prophesies Jesus’ rejection and death; the others, such as Isaiah, Chapters 9, 11 and 60, prophesy the glorious ministry of Jesus when the people accepted him as the Son of God, as the king of kings. For example:

For to us a child is born, to us a son is given; and the government will be upon his shoulder, and his name will be called ‘Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.’ Of the increase of his government and of peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David, and over his kingdom, to establish

it, and to uphold it with justice and with righteousness from this time forth and forevermore... (Is. 9:6-7)

This is the prophecy of the Lord of glory, Jesus as the king of kings, and prince of peace. On the other hand, we can read:

‘Surely he has borne our grief and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed him stricken, smitten by God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; upon him was the chastisement that made us whole, and with his stripes we are healed.’ (Is. 53 4-5)

This is the prophecy of the suffering Christ. It is indeed the prophecy of the crucifixion.

Then, once again, why did God prophesy in two contradictory ways in the Bible?

It is because God has to deal with men—fallen men—in His dispensation. And fallen man is wicked and untrustworthy and possesses the capacity of betrayal.

### ***Man Stands Between God and Satan***

In a way God fears man, and Satan fears man also because of man’s ability to betray. God is absolute good, and He never changes His position; Satan is absolute evil and he never changes his position either. In this respect God and Satan are similar. However, man is a mixture of good and evil. Man stands between God and Satan and has the ability to change. Therefore, man is unpredictable. One day a man may profess his untiring faith in God and desire to serve Him; and the next day the same man may curse God, unite with Satan and become his slave.

Since God did not know how man would respond to His providence for the Messiah, He had no choice but to predict two contradictory results dual prophecies, each possible depending on man’s actions.

Thus the faith of man was the factor determining which one of the two prophecies would be fulfilled.

In the case of Jesus, if the chosen people of Israel demonstrated faith and united with him, then he would be accepted. The full realization of the prophecy of the Lord of glory would result. On the other hand, if the people rejected the Messiah when he came, inevitably the second prophecy, that of the suffering Christ, would be fulfilled. And history shows that the chosen people took the second way. Therefore, the prophecy of the suffering Lord became reality instead of the prophecy of the Lord of glory. Thus the crucifixion and the story of the suffering Christ became the course of history.

Since the prophecy of the suffering Christ became fact in the time of Jesus, the prophecy of the Lord of glory has been left unfulfilled. And this is the prophecy which will be fulfilled at the time of the Lord of the Second Advent.

I would like to also observe that the Bible does not provide much record of the life of Jesus prior to his public ministry, except for the story of his birth and a few accounts of his childhood. Haven't you ever wondered why?

For 30 years Jesus lived in great rejection and humiliation. There were many events and circumstances which grieved and agonized Jesus. He was a truly misunderstood person—in his own society and even among his own family. Nobody, absolutely nobody, treated him as the Son of God. He was not even accorded the common respect due to any man. His society ridiculed him. God's heart was very deeply grieved by Jesus' life. If I revealed just a glimpse of some of the situations of heartbreak and sorrow in the life of Jesus, that obscure figure, the man of Nazareth, you would not only be shocked and stunned, but you would burst into tears of sorrow.

God did not wish mankind to know the tragedy, the heart breaking reality of the humiliation of Jesus Christ. The death of Jesus was neither his will nor his fault. The death of Jesus was murder, and his body was taken by Satan. Our salvation in Christianity comes not from the cross but from the resurrection. Without the resurrection,



Christianity has no power. The crucifixion itself was a criminal act of faithlessness. However, the resurrected Jesus brought new hope, new forgiveness, and a new power of salvation. Therefore, when we place our faith in Jesus Christ of resurrection and unite with him, our salvation comes.

Please ask seriously in your prayers for a final answer on these matters. Ask either Jesus Christ or God Himself. If Jesus had lived and fulfilled his primary mission of bringing the Kingdom of God on earth, Christianity would never have been what it is today. The purpose of Jesus' coming was for the salvation of the world. The Jewish people were to be God's instruments. However, salvation was not intended only for God's chosen people. For every soul upon the face of the earth, Jesus is the savior. He is the savior of all mankind. Since Jesus left his mission uncompleted, he also left us the promise of his Second Coming.

Then let us examine when the end of the world will come. This is very important to us. The gospel says that in the last days God will separate the sheep from the goats. What is the difference between these two kinds of animals? Sheep recognize their master, the shepherd, while goats do not follow a shepherd. Today you know that our world is divided into two opposing camps. One is the democratic world, the other is the communist world. Our free world says, "There is a God." We accept our shepherd. The communist world says, "God does not exist.?" They deny their master. Thus the free world may be symbolized by sheep, and the communist world by goats. At the time of the formation of these two conflicting ideological worlds we can know we have come to the end of the world.

How will the Lord of the Second Advent come? Our position as Christians exactly parallels the position of the elders, scribes, and priests at the time of Jesus. In those days, the people were waiting for Elijah and the Messiah to arrive in the clouds of heaven. Why did the people think this way? Why did they hold this kind of belief?

They were simply following the Bible prophecy written down in Daniel 7:13:

‘I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man, and he came to the Ancient of Days and was presented before him.’

Because of the great prophet Daniel, the people of Israel had every reason to expect the arrival of the Messiah with the clouds of heaven. Christians are expecting the arrival of the Lord of the Second Advent in the same way today, from the clouds of heaven.

John said, ‘... many deceivers have gone out into the world, men who will not acknowledge the coming of Jesus Christ in the flesh; such a one is the deceiver and the antichrist.’ (II John 7)

The Bible says that many people were denying the appearance of Jesus Christ in the flesh. And John condemned those people as the antichrist. But let us not forget the Old Testament prophecy of the coming of the Son of God in the clouds of heaven. Unless we know the whole truth, we, like the people of Jesus’ time, become victims of the words of the Bible.

Then, may I ask, what would you do if the Lord returned to earth not in the clouds but as a man in the flesh? What would you do? I am telling you, the Lord of the Second Advent will in fact appear as a Son of Man with flesh and bones. The first thing you may want to say is, “Reverend Moon, you are a heretic.”

### ***How God Looks at the World***

It is important to know on which side God will be and how God fulfills His plan. It is not important whether a man or his views are considered heretical or not. It does not matter how I look at the world or how you look at the world. It only matters how God looks at the world. And in God’s view, we once again find in the Bible a dual prophecy concerning the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent. Revelation 1:7 definitely prophesies the arrival of the Lord of the Second Advent with the clouds. However, I Thess. 5:2 states:

‘For you yourselves know well that the day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night.’

There are then two opposing prophecies. What shall we do? Would you simply choose the prophecy which is most convenient for you?

Perhaps the Lord will appear with a loud noise in the clouds of heaven, because the prophecy says so. But on the other hand, the Lord might appear like a thief in the night. If he comes in the clouds, he surely cannot slip into the world unseen like a thief. Tremendous attention would surround the spectacle of his coming in the clouds. I cannot imagine how such a thing could be hidden from your eyes.

Then just what is the truth? We have a crucial question before us. What is the truth? When you see the signs of the Last Days, the Bible urges you to go into a dark room and pray. Who can tell you the time of the Last Days? The angels do not know that day. Jesus said not even the Son of Man knew when that day would arrive. Only God knows the time of the Last Days. That is why we have our answer from God. I am not saying you must believe me not at all. I am just revealing what I know to be the truth, but you must verify this truth with God.

In the Last Days, the Bible says, do not believe just anybody. Do not believe me, and do not believe your church elders. Do not believe your ministers, and do not believe famous evangelists. Heaven is so near, and you can be lifted up by the spirit so high, that you can speak with God and receive the answer directly from Him if you are earnest enough.

There are many ministers in New Orleans, many clergymen, and many church elders. How many of them are really listening for the voice of God? These ears of ours do not mean much, nor these eyes serve any useful purpose, unless we have spiritual ears and spiritual eyes. Jesus said, 'He who has ears to hear, let him hear' (Matt. 11:15)

And he said to his disciples, 'But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear' (Matt. 13:16)

He was not referring to physical sense organs.

When you use your spiritual senses and listen for the word of God, you will find His direction and guidance. But it is not easy to become a citizen of the kingdom of heaven. It is very difficult for a foreigner to become a citizen of the United States. How much more difficult it is to remove ourselves from our earthly life and transfer ourselves into the Kingdom of Heaven. But we can achieve this very thing.

We know that even after Adam and Eve fell in the Garden of Eden, they were still able to communicate directly with God. Do you think that after the days of the Old and New Testaments, God has for some reason become deaf and dumb? No, God is very much alive, and today we can talk directly to Him. God can speak to you, and you can have a direct confrontation with Him.

The book of Acts of the Apostles says that in the Last Days, ‘... your sons and your daughters shall prophesy and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams...’ (Acts 2:17)

We must know the truth. We have to know how to apply for citizenship into the Kingdom of God. We have to know when the Lord will come, and how he will arrive.

Even with clear guidance in our lives, there is still the chance of failure to reach the goal. But today people have no guidance, and no direction people feel confident to follow.

Let us look to our Bible and clarify how the Lord of the Second Advent will appear. In Luke 17:20-21, Jesus was asked by the Pharisees how the Kingdom of God was coming. He answered,

‘The kingdom of God is not coming with signs to be observed;... the kingdom of God is in the midst of you.’

Jesus then told his disciples, ‘The days are coming when you will desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and you will not see it’

But if the Lord comes in the clouds of heaven, how could we not see it? Revelation 1:7 says, ‘... every eye will see him, everyone who pierced him...’

What can this mean? Why would we not see him? The only way we might miss that day is if we look for the Lord to come from one direction, and he appears from another direction in an entirely unexpected manner, just as Elijah did at the time of Jesus. This is the reason you may not see the Lord at the time of his Second Coming.

### ***Who Would Dare Deny Him?***

Another mysterious prediction was given by Jesus Christ himself. He declared about the Lord at the Second Coming: ‘But first he must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation.’ (Luke 17:25)

If Christ at his Second Coming appears in the glory of the clouds of heaven, who would dare deny him? Nobody would cause him suffering and pain.

The only way this prophecy can be fulfilled is if people expect his return from the clouds and he suddenly appears as a humble man in the flesh. Do you not think that Christian leaders of today would make the same mistake that the priests and scribes and elders committed at the time of Jesus? Yes! They may very well deny him and reject him, because the manner of his coming would be very difficult for Christian leaders to accept. However, in this way the Bible will be fulfilled. He will first suffer and be rejected by this generation.

Jesus once asked a most important question: ‘When the Son of man comes, will he find faith on earth?’ (Luke 18:8)

How does this question concern us today, when Christian faith covers the face of the earth? It is because although we do have faith today, it may be mistaken faith—a belief which expects the Lord must come on the clouds of heaven. There are few men on earth with the kind of faith ready to accept the Son of Man even appearing

in the flesh. If this were not the situation, the Bible would not be fulfilled. Please note that Jesus did not say there would be no believers, but he said there would be no faith.

Jesus also said, ‘Not everyone who says to me, “Lord, Lord,” shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. On that day many will say to me, “Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and cast out demons in your name, and do many mighty works in your name?” And then will I declare to them, “I never knew you; depart from me, you evildoers.”’ (Matt. 7:21-23)

This prophecy cannot be realized if his Second Coming is on the clouds of heaven.

At the time of the Second Advent, people will again be crying out, “Lord, Lord.” At the same time they may be in the process of trying to crucify the Lord of the Second Advent himself if he appears in a manner different from their own expectations. They will then be the worst evildoers.

This is the Bible. Those who truly have eyes will see. Those who truly have ears will hear. Throughout history, God has sent His prophets before the time of fulfillment. He warns the people of His plan. No matter how devout Christian faith is today, no matter how many millions of people are in the Christian churches, they and their churches and their world will be doomed to decline once they fail to accept the Lord, however he may appear. This was the tragic fate of the people of Israel when they denied Jesus Christ, regardless of their righteousness otherwise.

We must therefore also be open to a new message. Jesus Christ did not come to repeat the Mosaic Law. Just as Jesus revealed himself with the new truth, the Lord of the Second Advent will reveal himself with God’s new truth for our time. That truth will not be simply a repetition of the New Testament.

The Lord will not appear miraculously in the clouds of heaven. Why? Because God is sending His Son to restore the things that

once were lost. The first ancestors lost the Kingdom of God on earth. Satan invaded the world and took Eve to his side, and then Eve took Adam away, leaving God alone and separated from people. All people have therefore suffered under the bondage of evil. God must send a new ancestor for humanity, to begin a new history.

### ***Adam Must Restore a New Eve***

The work of God is restoration, always in the opposite direction from His original loss. This means that God first needs to find His perfected Adam, and Adam who instead of betraying God will become one with God. And then Adam must restore his bride in the position of Eve. Perfected Adam and perfected Eve, united together, will be able to overcome Satan and expel him from the world. In this way, the first righteous ancestors of mankind will begin a new history.

God's first beginning was alpha. This was invaded by evil, so He will restore the world in omega. Jesus is referred to as the last Adam in I Col 15:45. God wanted to bless Adam and Eve in marriage when they were perfected. As a heavenly couple, they could bear children of God. This life was not realized in the Garden of Eden. That is why Jesus came in the position of Adam. God intended to find the true bride and have Jesus marry. The True Parents of mankind would have begun in the time of Jesus, and they could have overcome and changed the evil history of the world. Since that hope was not fulfilled by Jesus, after 2,000 years he is returning to earth as a man to complete in full the mission he only partially accomplished. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth will be established at that time.

The new history of goodness will thus begin. With the truth of God and True Parents for mankind, a new alpha in God's history will begin and continue for eternity. The ideal of God is to restore the first God-centered family on earth. With this one model as a center, all the rest of mankind can be adopted into this family. We will become like them, and the first heavenly family will be expanded,

multiplying into the tribal, national, and worldwide kingdom of God on earth.

The Kingdom of Heaven is to be literal and tangible. Jesus gave Peter the keys to the kingdom of heaven and said, ‘... whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.’ (Matt. 16:19)

So accomplishment on earth must precede fulfillment in heaven; the Kingdom of Heaven will be first achieved on earth.

At this time only an intermediate place in the spirit world is open. That is called Paradise. Jesus and his disciples dwell in Paradise, and even they cannot actually enter the Kingdom of Heaven until it is established on earth. One reason for this is because the Kingdom of Heaven is prepared not for individuals, but for the family of God for the father, the mother, and God’s true children.

Ladies and gentlemen, I believe my message is absolutely clear and simple. God intended to begin the history of goodness in Adam. But Adam fell. God worked to restore history and begin anew in Jesus Christ. But the people of his time lacked faith in him and did not give him a chance. Therefore, the promise of the Lord of the Second Advent will be fulfilled. He is destined to come to earth as the Son of Man in the flesh. He comes as the third Adam. He will take a bride and thereby bring about the most joyful day of heavenly matrimony, referred to as “the marriage supper of the Lamb” in the book of Revelation. He will fulfill the role of True Parents. True ancestry from God will be established and heaven on earth can then be literally achieved.

We cannot doubt that Christianity today is in a definite crisis. This is a crisis parallel to the time of Jesus, when the established religious institutions failed the Son of God. We recognize this crisis of our time; but we can also see through the haze to the brightly shining day of new hope.

The end of the world is at hand, not only for Christians but for all people throughout the world. The new history of God will begin



with the arrival of the Lord. Blessed are those who see him and accept him. It is the hope of Christianity to recognize, receive, and accept the Lord of the Second Advent. The chance has arrived for all of us. The greatest opportunity in any man's lifetime is now knocking at our door. Please be humble and open yourself to great new hope!

This is the time for unprecedented spiritual awakening. I want you to open your eyes and ears to perceive the truth. This is my hope, that by sharing this message with you, we might unite to prepare for the glorious day of the arrival of the Lord. Let us see the God of history, let us understand the God of providence, and let us embrace the living God in our own lives.

Today is my last day in this city. I hope you will investigate these matters thoroughly. There is an opportunity in New Orleans to come to our church and study or attend our workshops and explore the truth of the Divine Principle. I would not have come here if I did not bring with me new things to tell you. I am revealing new truth. This alone should be a compelling reason for you to look into the depths of this message.

I hope that, as I said in the beginning of our evening together, you will consider these ideas seriously, and pray to God. He will answer you. Thank you very much.

## APPENDIX 3

### **How Mother Eliminated God's Lineage and the Three Generation Kingships**

by Mrs. Hyun Shil Kang

May 5, 2017

Good morning, everyone.

Today, I would like to tell you how Mother eliminated God's lineage and the three generation Kingships.

What is the core of God's providence of re-creation? That core is to bring the settlement of God's lineage on the earth. The most important aspect of the returning Lord coming to the earth, is to bring God's lineage to the Earth, so that, that lineage can settle on the Earth.

In the Garden of Eden, Eve received the lineage of the archangel. She sullied, she dirtied the pure lineage of God. She gave birth to children as a result of that and has caused all humanity to be in that archangelic dirty lineage.

We know that many women have had to go the way of restoration through indemnity in order to restore God's lineage back to this earth. This was a path of tears for heaven. It was a path of indemnity that had to be traveled by many, many women because Eve deceived God, she deceived her husband, and she deceived her children. So, women have had to go this way even being prostitutes because of the course of indemnity.

There are four women that are particularly recognized in this respect: Bathsheba, Rehab, Tamar and Ruth. These four women were at the center of the course to restore

God's lineage. It is on the foundation of the indemnity paid by these four women and others – but especially these four women – that Jesus was able to come to the earth with a blood lineage that was pure.

Jesus gave the bread and the wine to his disciples saying, "This is my flesh and this is my blood." This was Jesus' urgent and desperate cry – his desperate desire to have his disciples and others inherit the pure blood lineage of God.

As we have learned through the Divine Principle, Jesus was not able to marry – he was not able to have a Holy Blessing. That was actually necessary for him in order to be able to give the physical blood lineage to the fallen people of this earth. But he was not able to do that before he was killed on the cross. Jesus' ultimate purpose on this earth was to restore God's lineage which had been lost in the Garden of Eden. But because of the unfaithfulness of the Jewish people, he was not able to do that and he had to depart from this earth leaving a promise behind that he would return again someday.

An incredible amount of blood has been shed over the past 2,000 years, so that Jesus would be able to return. It was on the foundation of this indemnity and sacrifice that True Father was able to come. All humanity should have welcomed Father's coming. If this had happened, then all humanity would have been able to be reborn through him into God's sons and daughters.

But what happened though was similar to what happened 2,000 years ago. The people who had been prepared by God to receive Father did not receive him – rejected him – and he had to finally go the way of suffering through prison.

Satan knows the Divine Principle better than anyone other than God, and so because he knows that, he was

willing to forfeit all of humanity if only he could kill the Messiah. Satan's ultimate goal was to eliminate God's lineage from this earth – in order to do that he wanted most of all to kill the Messiah.

Just as he did 2,000 years ago – Satan entered into the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace in Cheong Pyeong – and Satan conspired there to kill the Messiah. He made it so that the same thing would happen in Cheon Jeong Gung, as happened in the Garden of Eden – where God would be deceived, the husband would be deceived, and the sons would be deceived. He arranged so that God would be deceived in the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace, True Father as the husband would be deceived, and even the son who was Father's representative body and inheritor would be deceived. The Cheon Jeong Gung Palace was the place more than any other where there should be noontime sun, where there should be no shadow. But Satan however made it so that this kind of deception would take place there.

Think of what the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace is. This was where True Father, Hyung Jin Nim and Shin Jun were living – three generations of kings were living there – in that place. It was in the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace that Father said that everything had been accomplished. This was the place where the four position foundation would be established.

But now, today, in the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace: the first generation king is not there; the second generation king is not there; the third generation king is not there. There's no king in the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace today. There is only a woman there, sitting, wearing a crown. She is a woman without a seed. But she is saying that even without a seed, she will save all humanity. She kicked out the second King and the third King. She kicked out the three generation Kingships. She usurped the Kingship for herself and is now pretending to be God.

Not only that but she is doing everything she can to destroy Father's legacy and work. She has changed Father's constitution, saying that it is not necessary for the successor to be in Father's lineage – that this would be ruled by law rather than ruled by blood lineage. She says that Father's successor will be chosen by elections. She has now even denied Father's lineage.

She is saying ridiculous things, such as that Father was born with original sin, and it is only because he was married with Mother who had no original sin, that he was able to begin performing the Blessings. She says that just as God created Adam and also Eve in the Garden of Eden – so also she had to be created as the Only Begotten Daughter – so that sinless children should be born.

She says that just as Mary gave birth to a sinless son Jesus, so also it is because she had no original sin that she was able to give birth to Father as the Messiah. She says that as the Only Begotten Daughter, she now stands in the center of the providence. But she is eliminating God's lineage and tradition. She is doing something that the Catholic Church has been doing, i.e. the Catholic Church has been saying that Mary was on this earth as God's substantial being and so she gave birth to the son of God. She is going exactly that same path as the Catholic Church.

We see that the Catholic Church refers to Mary as the Holy Mother Mary, and considers her to be God's substantial body on the earth. Also, the Catholic Church determines the popes by election – the same way; that is the rule of law – not the rule of lineage.

The Family Federation is becoming just like that, an organization that will continue on, not by lineage, but by law. They say that there is no need for the Messiah to come and establish God's lineage on earth – that it is only the law, that will govern.

She is putting forward her daughters who also have no seed, and is pretending to carry on the providence. Unfortunately, ignorant, innocent members are receiving the holy wine which is devoid of any seed, and are fooled into thinking that they have been given rebirth through that “holy” wine. She has turned the members into false faithful who recite the destroyed family pledge. They think they are faithful, but they are not.

The Cheon Jeong Gung Palace, in the absence of the three generation Kingships, is no longer the palace of God. The true palace is the place where the three generations of Kings are present. So where are the three generations of Kings? They are in the Unification Sanctuary, and now they have entered into the Cheon Il Goong Palace. Through the Cheon Il Goong Palace, they have restored the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace. Hyung Jin Nim declared at an early stage that the Unification Sanctuary is where you find God’s seed, God’s lineage, and it is where you find God’s Kingship. This is also the place where you find the restored Cain and Abel. The restored Cain, Kook Jin Nim, bowed down before his brother Hyung Jin Nim as the Abel. This was a wonderful sight to see – this restoration!

This is also a clear demonstration to us that Father’s Holy Spirit is with the three generation Kings. Also, they made Trump become the president of the United States. True Father’s Holy Spirit has now begun to give judgment to this world.

God has been shedding tears of sorrow for 6,000 years, but today He is shedding tears of joy. Even though True Father was kicked out of the Cheon Jeong Gung Palace, he has now entered into the Cheon Il Goong Palace. Can you see God’s tears of joy? For so long God’s heart was broken and He was shedding tears of terrible sorrow, but now He is dancing with joy, and He is shedding tears – only of joy.

So, shouldn't we also establish the three generation Kingships as the axis in our lives, the center of our lives and also join God in shedding tears of joy and tears of gratitude?

Og Mansei to the three generation Kingships! Og Mansei to the three generation Kingships! Og Mansei to the three generation Kingships! And may this Kingship last forever and ever!

Thank you very much.

## APPENDIX 4

Hyung Jin Sean Moon wrote a Constitution. This is the description given at an online bookstore:

The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk is the culmination of God's providence to restore humanity back to its original status as His sovereign children. Building upon the Christian spirit of America's founding, Cheon Il Guk (the Kingdom of God/Heaven) is based on the teachings of the Lord of the Second Advent, Sun Myung Moon, who came like a thief in the night. Fostering local and community involvement, the Constitution places even more restrictions on the federal government. It creates a scalable model of federalism that includes recognizing the rights of the unborn, respect for property rights, a Swiss-style militia system, and no method to redefine natural law. In short, government will forever remain servant to the people. Humanity groans in travail now more than ever, yearning for freedom and responsibility. Leading the charge to fulfill Christ's will, Hyung Jin Moon embraces the sacrificial role of leading His people into the millennial reign.

### **The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk**

#### **Preamble**

Cheon Il Guk, The Kingdom of God (and/or Heaven), a sovereign and actual nation does not yet exist in this world, but is the long awaited culmination of the End of Time as prophesied in the Biblical Scripture. The Divine Principle and the Eight Great Textbook Curriculum revealed by True Father, Christ at His second Coming, is the spiritual foundation of this Constitution. It is upon this foundation of these eternal truths that the future nation of Cheon Il Guk will be politically and legally established. This Constitution is not an ecclesiastical Constitution of a church or religious body,



but is a Constitution for a real and sovereign, future nation, being the literal fruit of God's Providence. All history longs and awaits this future Kingdom of God.

It is upon this future anticipation that I, Hyung Jin Moon, the Crowned Successor and Representative Body of the Cosmic True Parents of Heaven and Earth and full Inheritor of the Kingship of God, with all the authority endowed in me by my Father, Sun Myung Moon—The True Father, the Messiah, Lord at the Second Advent and King of Kings, hereby declare that all peoples of the Kingdom of Heaven, Cheon Il Guk, are the sovereign children of All-Mighty God, of Christ who became flesh and gave us Immeasurable Grace by engrafting us to God's Life, God's Love and God's Lineage. This endows all human beings of the Kingdom of God, with immutable and inalienable rights, that originate from their Creator, God Himself, through the physical Kingship of Christ established at His second Coming as the True Father, Sun Myung Moon.

This Establishment of the Kingship of God, marks the end of Satan's Kingships of past tyranny and domination over the peoples of this world throughout time. By the Complete Victory of the True Father, Sun Myung Moon—King of Kings and Lord of Lords, the conditions were met to establish God's Physical Kingdom on this Earth. However, due to the failure of Han Mother at the final hour, the world moves through a period of judgment instead of blessing and the providence has been extended over three generations to the Three Kingships of God.

In the beginning of human history in the Garden of Eden, God's original world of freedom, liberty, conscience, and relationship with God was to be established. It was to be a world where the powerful archangels were to be the servants of the children of God. However, due to the Fall, Eve committed adultery with the Archangel and tempted Adam into sinning against God. Thus, the world of Satan's domination over mankind was established and history has shown centralized powers, either governmental, religious or financial use artificial structures and power to rule over mankind sometimes taking freedoms gradually and sometimes eliminating them by brute force. God's Kingdom on Earth must be established where the

artificial structures of power, representing Satan, shall never again rule over mankind and humanity. The Role of the Kingships of God, must be to preserve and protect this covenant between God and the peoples of this world.

It is the absolute responsibility of the future Kingships of the Direct Blood Lineage of God, to renew this pledge and covenant with each passing generation. Future Kings of God's Kingdom, Cheon Il Guk, who desecrate this most sacred covenant between God and His people, represented as the "United States of Cheon Il Guk," shall heap upon themselves every manner of every curse and will be ruthlessly judged by the spirit world and All-Mighty God. Let this be a fearful warning to the future Kings of Cheon Il Guk.

In the Coronation Ceremony of God's Kingship Jan. 13, 2001, True Father, the Messiah, Lord of the Second Advent and King of Kings declared that, "Article I of the Constitution of the Kingdom of Heaven is that you will not stain the blood lineage...The second point is not to violate human rights, and the third point is not to steal public money (nak chwi), using public property for yourself."

Now as I, Hyung Jin Moon, take my rightful place as King of the Second Kingship of the Kingdom of God, Cheon Il Guk, as the Crowned Successor and Representative Body of the Cosmic True Parents of Heaven and Earth and full Inheritor of the Kingship of God, with all the authority endowed in me by my Father, Sun Myung Moon—The True Father, Messiah, Lord at the Second Advent and King of Kings, hereby declare the following Immutable and Unchangeable, "Constitution of Cheon Il Guk," that shall NEVER be abridged or added-to, in their enumerations:

### **The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk**

We the People of the United States of Cheon Il Guk (CIG), in order to form a more perfect Union, establish Justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish in Heavenly Father's name this Constitution for the United States of CIG.

### ***Principle I: Maintain the Pure Lineage of God***

The division of the sexes being ordained by God where man is the subject partner and woman is the object partner, congress shall pass no law that contradicts this divine edict.

Faithful marriage between a man and a woman being the ideal of God's creation, the government of CIG will pass no law which interferes with or contradicts this Divine Law. The fruit of faithful marriage being the conception of children, congress shall pass no law which permits the injury to all persons born or unborn. Sexual abstinence before marriage being the ideal condition for newlyweds, congress shall pass no law supporting or giving aid to alternative life styles.

### **Principle II: Do not Harm Human Rights**

All genetically unmodified biological living persons, being the apex of God's creation, are endowed by the Creator with inalienable Human Rights:

#### ***Right I***

Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.

#### ***Right II***

A well-regulated Militia, being necessary to the security of a Free State, the right of the people (individuals) to keep and bear Arms, shall not be infringed.

### ***Right III***

No Soldier (person) shall, in time of peace be quartered in any house, without the consent of the Owner, nor in time of war, but in a manner to be prescribed by law.

### ***Right IV***

The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects, against unreasonable searches and seizures, shall not be violated, and no Warrants shall issue, but upon probable cause, supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched, and the persons or things to be seized.

### ***Right V***

No person shall be held to answer for a capital, or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a grand jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval forces, or in the militia, when in actual service in time of war or public danger; nor shall any person be subject for the same offence to be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb; nor shall be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor shall private property be taken for public use, without just compensation.

### ***Right VI***

In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall enjoy the right to a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury of the state and district wherein the crime shall have been committed, which district shall have been previously ascertained by law, and to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation; to be confronted with the witnesses against him; to have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favor, and to have the assistance of counsel for his defense.

### ***Right VII***

In suits at common law, where the value in controversy shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of trial by jury shall be preserved, and no fact tried by a jury, shall be otherwise reexamined in any court of the United States of CIG, than according to the rules of the common law.

### ***Right VIII***

Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted.

### ***Right IX***

The enumeration in the Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people.

### ***Right X***

The powers not delegated to the United States of CIG by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the states respectively, or to the people.

## **Principle III: Do not Abuse Public Funds**

### ***Article I***

#### ***Authority of the King:***

1. The King of CIG is the head of state of the United States of CIG. The Kingship is bequeathed from the Lord of the Second Advent Moon Sun Myung to his son Moon Hyung Jin as second King and then to Moon Shin Joon as third King. The Kingship will be bequeathed henceforth to a son of the presiding King. If the King has no son then the Kingship will be bequeathed to a male heir within the direct lineage of Moon Hyung Jin. The King will decide who his inheritor is and will establish the order of succession.

2. The King of CIG has the Power to grant reprieves and pardons for offences against the United States of CIG.
3. The King shall appoint, judges of the Supreme Court with the consent of the Senate. The King may appoint judges to lower courts with the consent of the Senate or may delegate that authority to the President.
4. The King may receive appeals to rulings made by the Supreme Court.
5. The King shall receive periodic reports on the state of the nation from the President of the United States of CIG.
6. Congress must apportion funds to maintain the Kings household and to fund the function of the office of King. The King's retainers and body guards will be considered members of his household serving purely at the King's discretion.
7. Under the authority of the king, the office of Inspector General is formed. This office shall have unrestricted access to all documents (data) in the governments of CIG and will carry out the function of investigating and bringing prosecutions against any individual working in the governments of CIG including bringing impeachment proceedings against the President or prosecutions of individuals being contracted by the governments of CIG. This office is given to Moon Kook Jin and to his heirs. The inheritance will be from father to son or closest male next of kin if there is no son. The inheritance of this office will be made with the consent of the King.
8. In times of national emergency where the president is under impeachment proceeding or has been impeached the King may issue decrees.
9. The King on his discretion may rule any treaty with a foreign power invalid.

10. The King on his sole discretion may declassify any document in the government of CIG.

11. The King shall appoint the head of the presidential guard and all of its members.

## ***Article II***

### **Section 1**

The judicial power of the United States of CIG shall be vested in one Supreme Court and in such inferior Courts as the Congress may from time to time ordain and establish. The judges, both of the supreme and inferior courts, shall hold their Offices for a term of 12 years, and shall, at stated times, receive for their services, a compensation, which shall not be diminished during their continuance in office. The Supreme Court will be comprised of 12 Judges. The Judges will be divided into 6 classes and so that every two years two Justices will be appointed.

### **Section 2**

1: The judicial power shall extend to all cases, in law and equity, arising under this Constitution, the Laws of the United States of CIG, and treaties made, or which shall be made, under their authority;—to all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls;—to all cases of admiralty and maritime Jurisdiction;—to controversies to which the United States of CIG shall be a party;—to controversies between two or more States;—between a state and citizens of another State; —between citizens of different states, —between citizens of the same state claiming lands under grants of different states, and between a state, or the citizens thereof, and foreign states, citizens or subjects.

2: In all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, and those in which a State shall be Party, the Supreme Court shall have original jurisdiction. In all the other cases before mentioned, the Supreme Court shall have appellate jurisdiction,

both as to law and fact, with such exceptions, and under such regulations as the Congress shall make.

3: The trial of all crimes, except in cases of impeachment, shall be by Jury; and such trial shall be held in the state where the said crimes shall have been committed; but when not committed within any State, the trial shall be at such place or places as the congress may by Law have directed.

4: The court recognizes the right of juries to nullify unjust and unconstitutional laws.

5: Familiarity with the circumstance of the case shall not be grounds for dismissal of a Juror.

### **Section 3**

1: Treason against the United States of CIG, shall consist only in levying war against them, or in adhering to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort. No person shall be convicted of treason unless on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or on confession in open Court.

2: The Congress shall have power to declare the punishment of treason, but no attainder of treason shall work corruption of blood, or forfeiture except during the life of the person attainted.

## ***Article III***

### **Section 1**

All legislative powers herein granted shall be vested in a Congress of the United States of CIG, which shall consist of a Senate and House of Representatives.



## **Section 2**

1: The House of Representatives shall be composed of members chosen every second year by the people of the several states, and the electors in each state shall have the qualifications requisite for electors of the most numerous branch of the state legislature. Each member will be limited to 6 terms of service.

2: No person shall be a Representative who shall not have attained to the age of twenty five years, and been seven years a citizen of the United States of CIG, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that State in which he shall be chosen.

3: Representatives and direct taxes shall be apportioned among the several states which may be included within this Union, according to their respective numbers. The actual enumeration shall be made within three years after the first meeting of the Congress of the United States of CIG, and within every subsequent term of ten years, in such manner as they shall by law direct. The number of Representatives shall be one for every two thousand one hundred, but each state shall have at Least one Representative.

4: When vacancies happen in the representation from any state, the executive authority thereof shall issue writs of election to fill such vacancies.

5: The House of Representatives shall choose their speaker and other officers; and shall have the power of impeachment.

6: The government will not pay for any house member staff.

## **Section 3**

1: The Senate of the United States of CIG shall be composed of two Senators from each State, chosen by the Legislature thereof, for six years; and each Senator shall have one vote. Each Senator will be limited to two terms of service.

2: Immediately after they shall be assembled in consequence of the first election, they shall be divided as equally as may be into three classes. The seats of the Senators of the first class shall be vacated at the expiration of the second Year, of the second class at the expiration of the fourth Year, and of the third class at the expiration of the sixth Year, so that one third may be chosen every second year; and if vacancies happen by resignation, or otherwise, during the recess of the legislature of any state, the executive thereof may make temporary appointments until the next meeting of the legislature, which shall then fill such vacancies.

3: No person shall be a Senator who shall not have attained to the age of thirty Years, and been nine years a citizen of the United States of CIG, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that state for which he shall be chosen.

4: The Vice President of the United States of CIG shall be President of the Senate, but shall have no vote, unless they are equally divided.

5: The Senate shall choose their other officers, and also a President pro tempore, in the absence of the Vice President, or when he shall exercise the office of President of the United States of CIG.

6: The Senate shall have the sole power to try all Impeachments. When sitting for that purpose, they shall be on oath or affirmation. When the President of the United States of CIG is tried, the Chief Justice shall preside: And no Person shall be convicted without the concurrence of two thirds of the members present.

7: Judgment in cases of impeachment shall not extend further than to removal from office, and disqualification to hold and enjoy any office of honor, trust or profit under the United States of CIG: but the party convicted shall nevertheless be liable and subject to indictment, trial, judgment and punishment, according to law.

## **Section 4**

1: The times, places and manner of holding elections for Senators and Representatives, shall be prescribed in each state by the legislature thereof; but the Congress may at any time by law make or alter such regulations, except as to the places of choosing Senators.

2: The Congress shall assemble at least once in every year, and such meeting shall be on the first Monday in December, unless they shall by law appoint a different day.

## **Section 5**

1: Each house shall be the judge of the elections, returns and qualifications of its own members, and a majority of each shall constitute a quorum to do business; but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day, and may be authorized to compel the attendance of absent members, in such manner, and under such penalties as each house may provide.

2: Each house may determine the rules of its proceedings, punish its members for disorderly behavior, and, with the concurrence of two thirds, expel a member.

3: Each house shall keep a journal of its proceedings, and from time to time publish the same, excepting such parts as may in their Judgment require secrecy; and the yeas and nays of the members of either house on any question shall, at the desire of one fifth of those present, be entered on the journal.

4: Neither house, during the session of congress, shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other place than that in which the two houses shall be sitting.

## **Section 6**

1: The Senators and Representatives shall receive a compensation for their services, to be ascertained by law, and paid out of the Treasury of the United States of CIG. They shall in all cases, except treason, felony and breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during their attendance at the session of their respective houses, and in going to and returning from the same; and for any speech or debate in either house; they shall not be questioned in any other place.

2: No Senator or Representative shall, during the time for which he was elected, be appointed to any civil office under the authority of the United States of CIG, which shall have been created, or the emoluments whereof shall have been increased during such time; and no person holding any office under the United States of CIG, shall be a member of either house during his continuance in office.

## **Section 7**

1: All bills for raising revenue shall originate in the House of Representatives; but the Senate may propose or concur with amendments as on other bills.

2: Every bill which shall have passed the House of Representatives and the Senate, shall, before it become a Law, be presented to the President of the United States of CIG; If he approve he shall sign it, but if not he shall return it, with his objections to that house in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the objections at large on their journal, and proceed to reconsider it. If after such reconsideration two thirds of that house shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other house, by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and if approved by two thirds of that house, it shall become a Law. But in all such cases the votes of both houses shall be determined by yeas and nays, and the names of the persons voting for and against the bill shall be entered on the Journal of each house respectively. If any bill shall not be returned by the President within ten days (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law, in like

manner as if he had signed it, unless the Congress by their adjournment prevent its return, in which case it shall not be a law.

3: Every order, resolution, or vote to which the concurrence of the Senate and House of Representatives may be necessary (except on a question of adjournment) shall be presented to the President of the United States of CIG; and before the same shall take Effect, shall be approved by him, or being disapproved by him, shall be repassed by two thirds of the Senate and House of Representatives, according to the rules and limitations prescribed in the case of a bill.

## **Section 8**

1: The Congress shall have power to lay and collect Sales Taxes, duties, imposts and excises, to pay the debts and provide for the common defense of the United States of CIG; but all duties, imposts and excises shall be uniform throughout the United States of CIG; Congress is prohibited from imposing taxes on value added, property, and income. Congress is prohibited from levying taxes, duties, user fees and any other type of proceeds that accrue to the government that exceed 10% of GDP of the United States of CIG, except in time of war or national emergency. In times of national emergency VAT may be temporally be instituted but income taxes will not be imposed.

2: To borrow money on the credit of the United States of CIG in times of emergency and war. In times of peace, congress is prohibited from borrowing money to pay for the general operations of government. In the event spending exceeds revenue there will be an automatic sequester of spending across-the-board.

3: To regulate Commerce with foreign nations, and among the several States.

4: To establish a uniform rule of naturalization, and uniform Laws on the subject of bankruptcies throughout the United States of CIG.

5: To coin money, regulate the value thereof, and of foreign coin, and fix the standard of weights and measures.

6: To provide for the punishment of counterfeiting the securities and current coin of the United States of CIG.

7: To promote the progress of science and useful arts, by securing for limited times to authors and inventors the exclusive right to their respective writings and discoveries.

8: To constitute tribunals inferior to the Supreme Court.

9: To define and punish piracies and felonies committed on the high seas, and offences against the law of nations.

10: To declare war, grant letters of marque and reprisal, and make rules concerning captures on land and water.

11: To raise and support armies, but no appropriation of money to that use shall be for a longer term than two years.

12: To provide and maintain a navy, air force, and space agency.

13: To make rules for the government and regulation of the land, air, space, and naval forces.

14: To provide for calling forth the militia to execute the laws of the union, suppress insurrections and repel invasions.

15: To provide for organizing, arming, and disciplining, the militia, and for governing such part of them as may be employed in the service of the United States of CIG, reserving to the states respectively, the appointment of the officers, and the authority of training the militia according to the discipline prescribed by Congress.

16: The militia being the primary form of national defense; paid standing armies shall not be permitted or maintained. The army may maintain military equipment for use by the militia.

17: To make all laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into execution the foregoing powers, and all other powers vested by this Constitution in the government of CIG, or in any department or officer thereof.

18: Congress shall make law limiting or prohibiting market concentration and or the formation of monopolies.

19: Congress shall make law prohibiting commercial banking and investment banking being conducted in a single company.

20: Congress shall make laws limiting any one bank to a maximum of 1% of the overall banking industry.

21: Congress shall make law against usury.

22: Congress shall make law prohibiting holding companies and conglomerate ownership of distinct industries.

23: Congress shall make laws requiring that all news companies or news businesses be owned by individual citizens (living genetically unmodified biological persons) of CIG.

24: Congress shall make law requiring the freedom of information to all CIG citizens.

25: Congress shall pass law protecting citizens of CIG from being harassed or abused by government bureaucracies. Congress shall provide for the recovery of treble damages and full recovery of legal fees and related expenses for wrongful bureaucratic action.

26: Congress shall pass law making the government liable for damages if the government passed any laws restricting the right of the individual to defend his or her person.

27: All laws passed by congress will expire 10 years from the date it takes effect. Laws will be divided into 10 classes so that only one tenth of the laws expire each year.

## **Section 9**

1: The privilege of the writ of habeas corpus shall not be suspended, unless when in cases of rebellion or invasion the public safety may require it.

2: No bill of attainder or ex post facto Law shall be passed.

3: No capitation, or other direct, tax shall be laid, unless in proportion to the census or enumeration herein before directed to be taken.

4: No tax or duty shall be laid on articles exported from any state.

5: No preference shall be given by any regulation of commerce or revenue to the ports of one state over those of another: nor shall vessels bound to, or from, one state, be obliged to enter, clear, or pay duties in another.

6: No money shall be drawn from the treasury, but in consequence of appropriations made by law; and a regular statement and account of the receipts and expenditures of all public money shall be published from time to time.

7: No person holding any office of profit or trust under the United States of Cheon Il Guk, shall, without the consent of the Congress, accept of any present, emolument, office, or title, of any kind whatever, from any king, prince, or foreign state.

8: Congress is prohibited from declaring war on terror, drugs, poverty or other non-state actors.

9: Congress is prohibited from creating or funding health care, education, social welfare, and social security programs.

10: Congress is prohibited from legislating away its power to the executive branch and its bureaucracies.



11: Congress is prohibited from establishing a national police force or investigative agency of the people.

12: Congress is prohibited from classifying documents which do not have a substantive impact on national security.

13: Congress is prohibited from forming or authorizing a central bank.

14: Congress is prohibited from forming an Environmental Protection Agency or laws.

15: Congress is prohibited from regulating the internet.

16: The government agrees with and acknowledges the principle of the sovereign citizen and recognizes that private property is an extension of that sovereign citizen. Congress is prohibited from passing any law which damages or compromises the value of private property without just compensation.

17: Congress is prohibited from passing laws requiring licensing by the government for any occupation.

18: Congress may regulate but is prohibited from outlawing intoxicating substances.

## **Section 10**

1: No state shall enter into any treaty, alliance, or confederation; grant letters of marque and reprisal; coin money; emit bills of credit; make anything but gold and silver coin a tender in payment of debts; pass any bill of attainder, ex post facto law, or law impairing the obligation of contracts.

2: No state shall, without the consent of the congress, lay any imposts or duties on imports or exports, except what may be absolutely necessary for executing it's inspection laws: and the net produce of all duties and imposts, laid by any state on imports or

exports, shall be for the use of the treasury of the United States of CIG; and all such laws shall be subject to the revision and control of the congress.

3: No state shall, without the consent of congress, lay any duty of tonnage, keep troops, or ships of war in time of peace, enter into any agreement or compact with another state, or with a foreign power, or engage in war, unless actually invaded, or in such imminent danger as will not admit of delay.

## *Article IV*

### **Section 1**

1: The executive power shall be vested in a President of the United States of CIG. He shall hold his office during the term of four years, and, together with the Vice President, chosen for the same term, be elected, as follows.

2: Each elected member of the House of Representatives will have one vote in the election of the president.

3: Any person with 10 votes among the elected members of the House of Representatives will be considered as a presidential candidate.

4: Once the candidates are selected the entire House of Representatives will vote for the President. If no candidate receives more than 50% or more of the votes of the House of Representatives then a second round of voting will take place. In the second round seven candidates with the most votes will be allowed to run for president. If no candidate receives 50% or more of the votes of the House of Representatives then a third round of voting will take place. In the third round of votes, the candidate with the least votes in the second round will be eliminated as a presidential candidate and the remaining six will be the candidates in the third round. If no candidate receives 50% or more of the votes then additional rounds of voting will occur with the candidate with the least votes being dropped for the subsequent rounds of voting. The candidate who

receives 50% or more of the vote will be the president of the United States of CIG.

5: The Congress may determine the time of the election, but the election must continue in a continuous manner until the president is elected.

6: No person except a natural born citizen, or a citizen of the United States of CIG, at the time of the adoption of this constitution, shall be eligible to the office of President; neither shall any person be eligible to that office who shall not have attained to the age of thirty five Years, and been fourteen Years a resident within the United States of CIG.

7: In case of the removal of the President from office, or of his death, resignation, or inability to discharge the powers and duties of the said office, the same shall devolve on the Vice-President, and the Congress may by Law provide for the case of removal, death, resignation or inability, both of the President and Vice President, declaring what officer shall then act as president, and such officer shall act accordingly, until the disability be removed, or a President shall be elected. The president shall be limited to two terms in office.

8: The President shall, at stated times, receive for his services, a compensation, which shall neither be increased nor diminished during the period for which he shall have been elected, and he shall not receive within that period any other emolument from the United States of CIG, or any of them.

9: Before he enter on the execution of his office, he shall take the following oath or affirmation:—"I do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the office of President of the United States of CIG, and will to the best of my ability, preserve, protect and defend the Constitution of the United States of CIG."

## **Section 2**

1: The President shall be Commander in Chief of the armed forces of the United States of CIG, and of the militia of the several States, when called into the actual service of the United States of CIG; he may require the opinion, in writing, of the principal officer in each of the executive departments, upon any subject relating to the duties of their respective offices.

2: He shall have power, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, to make treaties, provided two thirds of the Senators present concur; and he shall nominate, and by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, shall appoint ambassadors, other public ministers and all other officers of the United States of CIG, whose appointments are not herein otherwise provided for, and which shall be established by Law: but the Congress may by law vest the appointment of such inferior officers, as they think proper, in the President alone, or in the heads of departments.

3: The President shall have power to fill up all vacancies that may happen during the recess of the Senate, by granting commissions which shall expire at the end of their next session.

4: The President is prohibited from classifying documents which do not have a substantive impact on national security.

5: The President and the executive branch are prohibited from carrying out clandestine acts of terror against the citizens of the United States of CIG with the intent of molding public opinion (false flag operations). Any suspicions of “false flags” will be investigated by the Inspector General. “False flags” will be considered to be an act of levying war against the people of CIG.

## **Section 3**

He shall from time to time give to the Congress information of the state of the union, and recommend to their consideration such measures as he shall judge necessary and expedient; he may, on extraordinary occasions, convene both Houses, or either of them,

and in case of disagreement between them, with respect to the time of adjournment, he may adjourn them to such time as he shall think proper; he shall receive ambassadors and other public ministers; he shall take care that the laws be faithfully executed, and shall commission all the officers of the United States of CIG.

#### **Section 4**

The President, Vice President and all civil officers of the United States of CIG, shall be removed from office on impeachment for, and conviction of, treason, bribery, or other high crimes and misdemeanors.

#### ***Article V***

##### **Section 1**

Full faith and credit shall be given in each state to the public acts, records, and judicial proceedings of every other state. And the Congress may by general Laws prescribe the manner in which such acts, records and proceedings shall be proved, and the effect thereof.

##### **Section 2**

1: The citizens of each state shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of citizens in the several states.

2: A person charged in any state with treason, felony, or other crime, who shall flee from justice, and be found in another state, shall on demand of the executive authority of the state from which he fled and upon agreement of the demand by the executive authority of the state to which he fled, be delivered up, to be removed to the State having Jurisdiction of the Crime.

3: No person held to service or labor in one state, under the laws thereof, escaping into another, shall, in consequence of any law or regulation therein, be discharged from such service or Labor.

### **Section 3**

1: New states may be admitted by the Congress into this Union. The process for admitting new states shall follow the procedure for approving treaties with foreign states. The King of CIG has final authority of approving the admittance of a new state.

2: The Congress shall have power to dispose of and make all needful rules and regulations respecting the territory or other property belonging to the United States of CIG; and nothing in this Constitution shall be so construed as to prejudice any claims of the United States of CIG, or of any particular state.

### **Section 4**

The United States of CIG shall guarantee to every state in this union either a republican form of government or a republican monarchy, and shall protect each of them against Invasion; and on application of the legislature, or of the executive (when the legislature cannot be convened) against domestic violence.

### **Article VI**

1: The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the members of the several state legislatures, and all executive, judicial officers, and Kings both of the United States of CIG and of the several states, shall be bound by oath or affirmation, to support this Constitution.

The above text of “The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk” including its Preamble, as work and as a document, is made available under the “WPUS Public Domain Dedication and Usage License, Version 1.1.” Publication date of “The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk” with below ‘technical corrections’ included in the text and the “Technical Corrections 1 through 8 Explained” section as text: July 24, 2017. Original publication date: October 11, 2015.

## WPUS Public Domain Dedication and Usage License, Version 1.1

The person who associated a work with this deed has dedicated the work to the public domain by waiving all of his or her rights to the work worldwide under copyright law, including all related and neighboring rights, to the extent allowed by law. The license granted herein does not allow for any modification to the words or written content of the document and the document is required to be published in its entirety or in unmodified excerpts. Any quotations/excerpts/reprints in any form (written, visual, electronic or audio), or any commentary or reference work produced, even for commercial purposes, do not need to be approved by asking permission or receiving permission from WPUS. You can copy and distribute the work, even for commercial purposes, all without asking permission. Attribution is requested as follows: “Source: World Peace and Unification Sanctuary, Inc.” and “Includes the ‘technical corrections’ of July 24, 2017 publication.”